





THE PACIFIC

THE PACIFIC

THE PACIFIC

THE PACIFIC

By
H. Moll Geographer.



G R E A T

Tropic of Cancer

S	O	U	T	H	S	E	A
---	---	---	---	---	---	---	---



[Oldmixon (John)]
The British Empire
IN
AMERICA,
Containing
The HISTORY of the Discovery, Settlement, Progress and present State of all the
British Colonies,
ON THE
Continent and Islands of *America.*

In Two VOLUMES.

Being an Account of the Country, Soil, Climate, Product and Trade of them, *Viz.*

Vol. I.	<i>Carolina,</i>	<i>Montserrat,</i>
<i>Newfoundland,</i>	and	<i>Nevis,</i>
<i>New-Scotland,</i>	<i>Hudson's-Bay.</i>	<i>St. Christophers,</i>
<i>New-England;</i>	Vol. II.	<i>Barbuda,</i>
<i>New-York,</i>	<i>Barbados,</i>	<i>Anguilla,</i>
<i>New-Jersey;</i>	<i>St. Lucia,</i>	<i>Jamaica,</i>
<i>Pensylvania,</i>	<i>St. Vincents,</i>	<i>The Barbados,</i>
<i>Maryland,</i>	<i>Dominico,</i>	and
<i>Virginia,</i>	<i>Antego,</i>	<i>Bermudas</i>

Islands.

With curious Maps of the several Places, done from the newest Surveys. By *Herman Moll*, Geographer.

LONDON, Printed for *John Nicholson* at the King's Arms in Little Britain, *Benjamin Tooke* at the Middle-Temple-Gate, Fleetstreet, and *Richard Parker* and *Ralph Smith* under the Piazza of the Royal Exchange. 1708.

The British Empire

AMERICA

The first of the great nations of the world

and the most powerful

of the continent

of North America

and the most fertile

of the continent

of the continent

of the continent

of the continent

of the continent

of the continent

of the continent

...and concerning to the right Reader
in this hand and then your Address will be
...to be read in a public manner

...I must offer Thanks for that to you, who from
your own Knowledge could easily bear them;
and that in the Proposition will be found in
that Conclusion a Work which can be form

TO
JOHN BROMLEY,

OF
HORSETHALL

IN
Cambridgeshire, Esq;

...light of our
Among the several which the Reader of
the Propositions may wish to throw upon them,
one is the vulgar Tradition of the Inhabitant,
which is as ridiculous as it is false; for it is not
Prudence and Industry they have, which
Forbearance and mildness they have.

Nothing had been more preposterous,
than to have address'd the History
of the *British West-Indies* to a Gentle-
man who has no Interest there. Such
a one would have look'd upon this Design with
that Contempt or Neglect which is ever the
Effect of Ignorance and Prejudice.

But you, Sir, who are so considerable a Pro-
prietor, both in *England* and *Barbados*, are
the best Judge how far this Treatise may be
use-

The DEDICATION.

useful and entertaining to the *English* Reader in this Island and that. Your Authority will be sufficient to protect it, as well in *America* as in *Europe*. For none in *England* will imagine I durst offer Falsities for Fact to you, who from your own Knowledge could easily detect them; and none in the Plantations will be severe in their Censures upon a Work which comes forth under the Patronage of one of their greatest Names. Whatever Hardships our *American* Colonies, especially the Islands, have met with at home, nothing has ever been able to shake their Loyalty to the Crown of *England*, or their Affection for the People. They have ever been zealous for the Service of the Prince, and as hearty for that of the Publick.

'Tis these Principles that procur'd you the general Voice of the County where you reside, to represent them in the Parliament of *Great-Britain*. 'Tis these Principles that will always render you useful to the Common-wealth, the Glory of your Native Country, and the Delight of ours.

Among the Scandal which the Enemies of the Plantations maliciously throw upon them, one is, The vulgar Descent of the Inhabitants, which is as ridiculous as unjust; for if by their Prudence and Industry they have rais'd Fortunes, that might ennoble them, if they have Sense to acquire Estates, and Souls to enjoy them; is not that really true Nobility, and that which is deriv'd from a long Roll of *Ancestry*, and enjoy'd without any other Reason and Merit, false and chimerical? I say this with the more Freedom to you, Sir, for that with the Advantages of Fortune you have the Happiness to be descended from one of the most ancient and honourable Families in *England*, which has furnish'd the Law with so many

The DEDICATION.

V

many Ornaments, the Courts with so many Judges, the Chancery with a Lord-Keeper, which lately represented two Counties in Parliament; and was always full of Heroes, and Patriots. It cannot therefore be thought, that I have vindicated the Characters of the Gentlemen of the *West-Indies*, to make my Court to you; but to do Justice to that Worth, which is always noble in the Eyes of Men of Reason and Modesty: And tho there is no Herald-Office, no Court of Arms in *Barbados*, it may be said, without Flattery or Vanity, there is no Trading County in *England* of that Extent, where there are so many Gentlemen of so good Estates, and so good Families.

What other Prejudices have been rais'd by the Enemies of the Plantations against their Interest and Reputation, will 'tis hop'd, in the Opinion of the Impartial, be remov'd by the *Introduction*; but the Historian would not here trouble you with such an unreasonable Controversy, which rather deserves your Contempt than Consideration.

S I R,

The Parliament, of which you were a Member, have lately done several things for their Ease and Advantage; and if there were more Gentlemen, concern'd to promote their Welfare, who would, with the same publick Spirit, maintain it in that Assembly; there's no doubt, but so just a Body would soon redress all their Grievances, and they would again flourish as before they were oppress'd by the late Impositions, which have reduc'd them to their present low Estate.

Addreses of this Nature have so long lain under the Reproach of Insincerity and Adulation,

A 3

tion, that the Character of a Man of Worth and Honour suffers by appearing in this Manner; but there are certain Qualities so conspicuous in themselves, so universally known and admir'd, and yet so rarely to be met with, that when they are found, 'tis an Injustice to Mankind to pass 'em by in Silence: For if the selfish Spirit that prevails in Court, City, and Country, were without Exception, the Race of Men would be the most sordid and worthless of the Creation. The rare and amiable Qualities we are speaking of, are such as your Love for your Country, your Affection for your Friends, and your Humanity to all; your free use of the Goods of Fortune, which is worthy of the Generous Stock from whence you sprung; and whatever might be added to such a Character as this, would meet with Credit for the sake of such Goodness; but tho there may be much said of Yours without offending the Truth of History, yet I forbear, knowing it might be suspected in this Place. I therefore conclude with desiring your Protection for the following History, and Permission to subscribe my self with all due Respect,

SIR,

*Your most Humble, and
most Obedient Servant,*

J. OLDMIXON.

THE PREFACE.

THE Author is apprehensive that this Undertaking will meet with many Censures, rais'd by the Prejudice of some Readers, and the Ignorance of others: The Candid and Impartial will, 'tis hop'd, find sufficient Memoirs to entertain them with Pleasure; and such Faults as may have been committed through Mistake or Misinformation, they will excuse, when they consider what a difficult Task the History of the British West-Indies must be to an Historian, that never was in America.

Whatever particular Account has been, or might be given of any one of our Colonies, 'tis impossible, unless Men of Interest and Capacity would write it on the Spot, for an exact History of all the British Empire in the West-Indies to be fram'd by one Man in America or Europe, but he must inevitably be guilty of Errors, which will find Matter enough for the Criticks to exercise their ill Nature upon. It will therefore be said, such a Design as this should be undertaken in the Plantations; and since it is so reasonable and so useful, why has it not been done? There's none can tell better than the Writer of this History, who must in Justice to himself own, that tho he believes all who look over his Work, and know any thing of the Subject of it, will rather wonder they meet with so much, than so little in it; yet he has found his Industry to inform himself fully of all

A 4

Facts.

Facts relating to the Colonies more unsuccessful than be expected: People were shy, and either did not think what they knew was worth telling, or would not be at the Trouble to tell it. Enough will take this Charge to themselves, who will presently remember how much they were solicited by the Author for Memoirs, and how negligent they were in furnishing him, not to give their Negligence a harder Name, which it wou'd very well bear.

In collecting these Materials, when he sometimes met with Persons of a communicative Temper, he durst not depend entirely on their Sincerity, for Interest always prevails over it. Every Province was the best, the most advantageous, the most inviting; and if he did not give that Account of it, the History would be worth nothing. All these Persons seem'd to take no Notice of the Historical Events; those they ran over as slightly, as if they had been of less Moment than they are. Some would have had them quite left out, and a Political Account only given of our Plantations. Others, who were for keeping in a few, still enlarg'd on the Advantages of their respective Settlements to England, the Fruitfulness and Charms of the Country they liv'd in, the Riches to be gotten there, and the Preference that ought to be given to each over the other; and this the Author declares he met with in almost all his Informations. What then had he to do? Could it be expected that he should please every one? Would not the impartial Reader have been surpriz'd to have found Hudson's Bay prefer'd to Carolina, and Providence to Barbados? For the Comparisons are alike unequal. 'Tis true, when the Climate and the Soil would not bear a Parallel, they turn'd the Advantage on the side of Commerce, and always took Care to make their own the most profitable. One who had known nothing of the West-India Trade, would have been impos'd on by such Partiality; but tho' the Writer of this History never was out of Britain, yet there's no part of
that

that Trade, with which he has not been acquainted above twenty Years ; and he by that means knew if any thing was represented to him too favourably ; and when he was ever so little in the dark, he took all the Care he could to be enlightened.

Some Gentlemen he had the Happiness to know, who were free and impartial ; and if they had had any Expectation of such an History, would have made Provisions for it when they were in America. The Historian must beg the Liberty of paying his publick Acknowledgments to some of them, that the World may see he does not publish any thing which is not warranted by good Authority.

To begin therefore with the History of Newfoundland. All the Account of its Trade and present State, was communicated to him by Mr. Newman, lately a Servant to his Grace the Duke of Somerset, who dwelt there as a Merchant several Years.

New-Scotland has so little to be said of it, that he was not at much Trouble about it : There has happen'd nothing memorable concerning it, which is not related here ; and the History of New-England, publish'd by Mr. Cot. Mather, furnish'd him with what Events he has mention'd relating to that Colony.

That Author being an Inhabitant of New-England, very particular and voluminous, one would have thought his History might have supply'd another with Memoirs for as many Sheets, as all this Work contains ; yet there's no considerable Action concerning the Governours or Government, which is in Mr. Mather's, but this Historian has included in his History, leaving his Puns, Anagrams, Acrosticks, Miracles, Prodigies, Witches, Speeches, Epistles, and other Incumbrances, to the Original Author, and his Admirers ; among whom, as an Historian, this Writer is not so happy as to be vauk'd.

When he wrote of New-York, he corrected the Mistakes which others had led him into, by better
In.

THE PREFACE.

Information from Capt. Congreve, who has had a Command in the Regular Forces there several Years.

Mr. Dockwra and Dr. Cox were both so kind as to inform him fully of the Jerseys, and Mr. Pen did him the same Favour for Pennsylvania; those three Gentlemen doing him the Honour to admit him into their Friendship.

It will be seen in the History of Maryland, that he had not the same Helps for that Province; but his Authorities are good, as far as they go.

The History of Virginia is written with a great deal of Spirit and Judgment by a Gentleman of the Province, to whom this Historian confesses he is very much indebted; but in some Places he was forc'd to leave him, to follow other Guides; and whoever compares the one History with the other, will see enough Difference to give that which is now publish'd the Title of New. Several old Writers and modern Papers fell into this Author's Hands, which that Gentleman never saw: However he had seen and knew so much, that by his Assistance, the Account of Virginia is one of the most perfect of these Histories of our Plantations.

For Carolina, Mr. Archdale and Mr. Boone, of whom Mention is made in the History of that Colony, oblig'd him so far, as to communicate several important Facts to him, and let him into the Rise and Causes of the Differences among the People of that Province: They have also printed some Tracts on the same Subject, which were very useful to him.

The History of Hudson's Bay may be depended upon, for the Author took it from Original Papers, he having in his Possession the Journal of a Secretary of the Factory, the Commissions and Instructions of some of the Governours, and other Memoirs, out of all which he could gather no more, and does not believe that even by the Company's Books much more is to be gather'd. The Reader will perceive he is not about looking into a spurious Performance, nor that he

The PREFACE.

xi

he will venture much in giving Credit to what he reads, since there is no Dispute to be made of the Goodness of such Information; from which the Historian has deviated as seldom as was consistent with Duty.

Thus with much Pain and Care he went over the British Empire on the Continent, which is 14 or 1500 Miles in Length, from the Northern Bounds of New-Scotland, to the Southern of Carolina, besides the Tract known by the Name of Hudson's Bay, and another bordering on the River Mississippi, to which the Kings of England pretend, but there is no Notice taken of it in this Work, because there never was any Settlement there, tho it has been attempted.

This Country lies in Florida, Southward of Carolina, and was granted by King Charles I. to the E. of Arundel, which Grant some Years ago was assign'd to Dr. Daniel Cox, and he is the Proprietary. He gave it the Name of Carolana; and in King William's Reign sent two Ships thither, with 200 People, to make a Settlement, intending to prosecute that Enterprize, by dispatching away more Ships with more People, over whom Sir William Waller was to have been Governour; but the French disturbing the first Adventurers, hinder'd their settling there, and this Part of the English Territories in America is neglected; tho by the Situation it must be very pleasant, and by the Description that the Author had given of it, 'tis one of the most amiable Places in the World.

This Account was too little to be incerted particularly in the History, and besides the Writer heard of it too late; as he did also of the Governments of Connecticut and Rhode Island, the latter of which it seems is still separate from that of New-England.

About the Year 1630. King Charles I. made a Grant to Robert Earl of Warwick, of that Part of New-England, which lies and extends it self from

THE PREFACE

from a River there, call'd *Narraganset*, for the space of 40 Leagues, upon a strait Line near the Sea-shore, towards the South-West, and by South or West, as the Coast lies towards *Virginia*, accounting three *English* Miles to the League; and also all and singular the Lands and Hereditaments lying and being within the Lands aforesaid, North and South, in Latitude and Breadth, and in Length and Longitude of, and within all the Breadth aforesaid, throughout the Main Lands there, from the Western Ocean to the South-sea, and all Lands, &c. Which Grant the Earl of Warwick made over to William Viscount Say and Seale, Robert Lord Brooks, Robert Lord Rich, Charles Fiennes, Esq; Sir Nathaniel Rich, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Richard Knightly, Esq; John Pym, Esq; John Hampden, Esq; John Humphry, Esq; and Herbert Pelham, Esq; As appears by a Copy of the Patent, bearing Date, Anno 1631, which was shewn the Historian since this History of New-England was printed; and he desires the Reader to add it to that of Connecticut Colony in particular. He mentions it here the rather, because it confirms what has been reported by several Historians, that Mr. Pym, Mr. Hampden, Mr. Pelham, and other great Men in the long Parliament, were about to remove to New-England before the Alterations that happen'd at home kept them here. This Colony of Connecticut surrender'd their Charter in 1688. and have holden no Courts since.

That of Rhode Island, where stands the Town of Warwick, is a Proprietary or separate Government to this Day. To the History of New-England may be further added, that Mr. Bradstreet mention'd in the following Pages, claim'd the Country of Narraganset, call'd the King's Province. But William Scoughton, Esq; and Peter Bulkley, Esq; Agents for Massachusetts, disclaim'd it. The Sachem

The PREFACE.

xiii

them of that Country formally surrender'd it in 1644. and afterwards in 1664. to King Charles II. which entail'd the Crown of England to the Propriety. Major Atherston is said to have purchas'd it, but that Purchase was declar'd void. The Magistrates of Rhode Island were Justices of the Peace in Narraganset, and there was a Settlement belonging to it, call'd Providence Plantation. For a Letter was shewn the Historian from K. Charles, directed, To the Governour of Rhode Island and Providence Plantation.

Mount Hope, which is often mention'd in the Article of New-England, was begg'd by Mr. John Crown, who is famous for two excellent Comedies written by him, call'd Sir Courtly Nice and the City Politicks. When his Petition was presented to King Charles II. his Majesty knew nothing of the Country's being taken from the Sachem, Philip, as he declares in the Letter, and wonders he should have no better Information. This Mr. Crown's Father was a Proprietary of Part of New-Scotland, and he begg'd Mount Hope as a Satisfaction for his Loss there, but he had never any Recompence for it, and indeed 'tis no hard Matter to calculate what a Country should be valu'd at that was never thought worth keeping or planting.

This Digression is to render the Account of those Northern Parts of our American Continent as complete as could be, and if the Gentlemen of the several Provinces will be so just to themselves and this Design, as to communicate any farther Memoirs to the Author, they shall be insert'd in their due Place, if this Treatise is printed again, and all the Errors the Historian has committed, be corrected. He hopes there will not be many material Ones, and recommends to the American Readers, not to condemn him presently, if they meet with things out of their Knowledge, but to suspect their own Judgment and Information, as well as his; for he treats of the Plantations historically,

and

The PREFACE.

and was therefore to relate Things past as well as present, and 'twill be unjust for any one to conclude, they never were, because they never heard of them, as too many will incline to do.

His Author for that part of the History which may be call'd the Antiquities, was Mr. Delaer, whose Character for Judgment and Care is allow'd by the Learned and Experienc'd. 'Tis true, the Assistance he had from him was not very considerable; nor was what he found in Hackluit's Purchase, & other Collections of Voyages, much more to the Purpose. Smith of Virginia and New-England gives a better Account of that Part of the Continent than any older Writer; and those of foreign Countries knew so little of our Colonies, that there are not historical Events in them relating to those Parts of America sufficient to fill a Sheet, unless he enter'd into the Indian Stories, among which is much Fable and much Impertinence.

There are several Pamphlets in our Tongue in the Temple Library which he look'd over; as also others which he procur'd elsewhere, and several Accounts transmitted to the Royal Society, that furnish'd him with better Materials than any of the Voyagers have publish'd; for in Hackluit's Time little was known of our Provinces. What is in his Collection is in this, and the whole has been perfected by Inquiries of Persons who have been on the Spot. Some of them have been nam'd, and the rest, tho they were not Persons of the same Note, were of as good Credit.

The Author declares once for all, that there is no part of this History which has not been shewn to Persons who have liv'd in those Parts of the World, and been approv'd of by them, yet he is not so vain as to imagine there are not several Faults, for it was impossible to perform such a Work without it: All he hopes, is, there are fewer than will be expected, together with much more Matter.

As

mak
tant
own
Tear
stand
spea
Ade
he b
Sir
and
have
dispr
gon
Acco
prese
Suga
scem
dos
ving
Plan
the I
thing
he w
nal
ly di
this
al of
haps
who
done
of w
Nun
whic
All
seve
cur
has
sity,

The PREFACE.

xv

As to our Islands: Barbados, the chief of them, makes the chief Part of his History, and the Inhabitants of that fruitful and pleasant Island may take his own Word in most Cases, he having been for above 10 Years conversant with their Affairs, and kept a constant Correspondence with them. They will see that he speaks things of his own Knowledge: And as to the *Ademoirs* of Events which happen'd before his Time, he had recourse to the Papers of an eminent Merchant, Sir John Bawdon, his Uncle, with whom he liv'd, and might have made it much larger, if it would not have run out the History of Barbados to a Size very disproportionable to that of the other Histories. Ligon is old, and his Geographical, and even Natural Account of the Island, differs very much from the present. His Description of Ingenio's, of working Sugar, of clothing Negroes, and several other Things, seems strange to an Inhabitant of the present Barbados; neither does his Account of their way of Living, of the Product of the Island, as the Trees, Plants, &c. agree better with the modern ones. All the Fact in his History will be found in this, and every thing which remains in the same State as it was when he wrote. All the rest is new, and taken from Original Manuscripts. The Historian has been particularly diligent in his Collections and Inquiries concerning this Island, for he takes it to be the most beneficial of any of our Colonies to England, Jamaica perhaps not excepted. He has consulted several Persons who have liv'd there, and communicated what he has done to them, that the Gentlemen of Barbados, some of whom have done him the Favour to place him in the Number of their Friends, may meet with nothing here which may in any wise injure his Reputation with them. All may not be pleas'd; but if he has always been a severe Observer of Truth, let his free speaking be excus'd; for sometimes he could not be so without it. He has not designedly run into an Error, nor told a Falstiy, to gain the good Will of any Man. Such a

View

The PREFACE.

Flattery would have been as vain as it was base; for where there are so many to be displeas'd for the pleasing of one, the Man must have but a small Portion of Sense, as well as Integrity, that would sacrifice the Character of a faithful Historian to that of a wretched Flatterer. He had many Opportunities to have shewn a vicious Complacency to other Mens Interests, as has been already hinted, if he could have been guilty of so much Baseness; an Instance of which he will relate, to give the World an Idea of Mens Dispositions in this Affair. When he was once in Conversation with a Gentleman, a Proprietary in America, on the Subject of his Country there, he summ'd up all he had to tell him in this Rapture: Our Seas flow with Ambergrease; our Rivers are almost choak'd with Gold; and the worst Mineral we have, which we do not think worth taking up, is Copper; for 'tis so near the Surface, that we may almost stoop and have it. This he introduc'd with a most romantick Account of the Situation of his Country, the Groves of Oranges, Forrests of Cedar, the Fields of Spices, the spacious Plains, noble Harbours, and so many other Advantages, that one could hardly believe he spoke true, when the Writer ask'd him, how many Inhabitants there were, and he answer'd, None? Some Gentlemen have not only recommended the Praise of their Province, but even of their part of it, which was generally done with so much Warmth, that they were immediately suspected, and nothing of that Nature reported, which was not confirm'd by Persons of Ingenuity and Disinterest.

As for the Leward Islands and Jamaica, the Historian is not altogether unacquainted with their Concerns, and has had several Manuscript Papers to refer to. Bermudas he has said little of; but as much of Providence as the Subject would bear, having been very much assisted in it by Col. Trot, who was once Governor there.

The PREFACE.

xvii

To these Authorities he may add, *Pere du Tertre's History of the Charibbee-Islands*, *Davis's of Kidwelly*, &c. but there was little to his Purpose, except their Description of the Animals.

The Maps are newly engrav'd; and tho some of the Surveys are older than the Description given by the Historian, yet there has been due Care taken in that Performance, and the newest Surveys that could be procur'd were made use of. Some Counties and Parishes may have been added in several Places, which are not mention'd in the Maps, though they are in the Book, which was occasion'd by the Niceness of the Engraver, not to add any thing by a verbal Description, for which he had not a regular Survey to authorize his Corrections. 'Twas for this Reason the Six New Counties in Virginia are omitted; for though 'tis known where about they lye, yet unless they were survey'd, to have incerted them, would have made the rest of the Map imperfect. As the Historian desires the Gentlemen of the West-Indies to do for the Memoirs, the Geographer does the same for the Maps; and if they will transmit any Observations, Amendments, or Additions to be made to them, and will let him understand how he may safely do it, he will be careful to give them Satisfaction.

The Author having thus far given the Reader a View of his Work, recommends it to his Candour, and desires him to weigh well the Difficulties of this Undertaking, before he gives his Judgment. There is no History of any Part of the West-Indies in any Language so full and so particular; and there's no Mistake, which he knows to be such, and has not already provided against it, either in the Body of the Book, or the Preface.

Before

THE PREFACE

Before he enters upon the History, he thinks himself oblig'd to remove some general Objections to our Colonies; for while they are left of any Weight in the Minds of Men, the Author cannot expect that this Work will be receiv'd with the Favour he might hope for, after the Pains he has taken to inform and please his Readers.

THE

an
cia
for
the
cu
rie
Pla
far
on
ver
rio
hav

THE INTRODUCTION.

The common Arguments against our Plantations in America, answer'd; and the Advantages of them to England, asserted.

THE main Objection made by the Enemies of our Colonies against them, is, That by draining England of her People, they weaken us at Home, and consequently are more hurtful than beneficial to the Kingdom. On this Argument are founded all their Reasons to excuse the ill Usage the Plantations have met with; of which particular Mention is made in the particular Histories of the Provinces; we shall therefore in this Place keep to the General Interest, and see how far the Objection will hold good.

'Tis said, People are the Wealth of a Nation, and to take away their People is to impoverish them; those that say it, mean only laborious and industrious People, and not such as have no Employ, or, which is worse, are employ'd

ploy'd only in disturbing and robbing such as have any. If this is granted, as it always has been in this Controversy, those who improve their Talents to most Advantage, are of most Value to a Nation. A Man, whose Skill amounts to no more than to earn 3 d. a Day by his continual Labour, cannot add to the Wealth of such a Kingdom as *England*, because it will not supply his necessary Consumption: However even such a one is less a Burthen to it, than one totally idle. He who earns 6 d. a Day, and consumes just so much, is neither burthensome nor advantageous: But he who by his Industry and Labour, not only maintains himself and Family, but enriches them, is, to the Proportion of his Wealth, so much Addition to the National Stock of the Kingdom. On the contrary, he who labours not at all, or so much as not to encrease the National Stock of his Country, is, to use an eminent Merchant's own

sir Dalby Words, just good for nothing: He adds, To Thomas's leave this Truth plain beyond Dispute, I beg Hist. Acc. the Doubter but to consider, that if all the laborious of the Rise People of the Kingdom left working, and were to live & Growth of the W. on the Natural Produce of it, to be distributed by India Co- them in equal Proportions, by way of Charity, as lonics. Parish-Poor and Beggars are now supported, how long it would be before the Nation became necessitous, naked and starving, and consequently the Land and Houses worth nothing.

Many Reasons may be urg'd to prove, that the Increase of People, wilfully or accidentally idle, is so far from being National Riches, that it is the surest and speediest way to inevitable Poverty, and must decay the Value of the Real and Imaginary Wealth of a Nation, proportionably to the Decay of Industry: But this will be so readily consented to, it would be impertinent

INTRODUCTION.

xxi

pertinent to enlarge upon it here. Who then will deny, That those Men who add most, by their Labour, to the intrinsic Wealth of the Nation, either Real or Imaginary, and consume least, are best employ'd? On the contrary, that those who consume most, and add least, are the worst employ'd? 'Tis true, all who are not mischievously employ'd, or totally idle, are of some Benefit to the Common Wealth, and should find due Encouragement; and those ought to be most protected, and least discourag'd by the Laws, who are most usefully busy'd for the increasing the Value of the Real and Imaginary Wealth of the Nation. By Real Wealth is generally understood Money, Lands, Houses, &c. by Imaginary, the Art and Labour of the People.

Now as we in *England* are Inhabitants of an Island, we have no ways of conveying our Product and Manufactures abroad, but by Navigation, the best and easiest of all ways; we have no ways of making our selves considerable in the World, but by our Fleets; and of supporting them, but by our Trade, which breeds Seamen, and brings in Wealth to maintain them; such Hands therefore as are employ'd for any of these useful Ends, whether it be the Merchant, the Mariner or the Planter, are most to be encourag'd; for on them depends our Strength, and on that our Safety. If we had none, or but little foreign Traffick, could we long equip those mighty Fleets, that render the *English* Name formidable to the utmost Bounds of the Earth? Would one Man's consuming what another rais'd, and handing Commodities from one to t' other, do our Business, without the Addition of foreign Wealth? No Commodity is truly an Increase of the National Stock,

but that which is exported, and all other Trades receive their Vigour and Life from the Merchant, Commodities rising in Esteem or Value as they are rightly distributed from Place to Place. By him the Mariner is subsisted, the Planter supply'd, and they all mutually assist each other, in promoting the Advantage of all other Tradesmen in particular, and of Trade in general. By Planter in the *West-Indies*, we mean the Country Gentleman, who minds wholly the cultivating the Growths of the Place, and exporting them to *England*; from whence he yearly draws so many Manufactures, as maintain several Families in that Kingdom. 'Tis not easy to decide how much more such a Man is useful than an *English* meer Country Gentleman; when a Labourer in our *American* Colonies is by the before-cited Author said to be of more Advantage to *England*, *tho out of it, than any 120 of the like kind can be in it*. His Explanation of this Assertion refers in the first Place to the *Sugar* Plantations; and the Reader shall have it abstracted from him, to judge of it as he thinks fit.

“ 1. The greatest Consumption of Sugar
 “ is made by the rich and opulent People of
 “ the Nation. 2. The Quantity yearly produc'd is not less than 45000 Tuns. 3. The
 “ Moiety of this is consum'd in *England*, and
 “ amounts to about 800000 *l.* in Value. The
 “ other Moiety is exported, and after it has employ'd Seamen, is sold for as much, and consequently brings back to the Nation in Money, or useful Goods, 800000 *l.* Add to this, That before Sugars were produc'd in our Colonies, it bore four times the Price it does now; and by the same Consumption
 “ at

" at the same Price, except we made it our
 " selves, we should be forc'd to give in Money
 " or Mony's worth, as *Native Commodities*
 " and Labour, 2400000 *l.* for the Sugar we
 " spend.

" 'Tis certain we bought as much Sugar of *Portugal* as amounted to 400000 *l.* yearly, which is sav'd by our making it. To continue Sir *Dalby's* Explanation :

" We must consider too the Spirits arising from
 " *Melasses*, which is sent from the *Sugar Colonies*
 " to the other Colonies, and to *England*; which if
 " all were sold in *England*, and turn'd into Spirits,
 " it would amount annually to above 500000 *l.*
 " at half the Price the like Quantity of Brandy
 " from *France* would cost. The *Indigo* coming
 " from thence amounts to 50000 *l.* yearly.
 " *Logwood*, for which we formerly paid the
 " *Spaniards* 100 *l.* a Tun, now comes un-
 " der 15 *l.* and amounts to 1000 Tuns a Year.
 " *Ginger* amounts to 400 Tuns a Year, and is
 " not the 6th part of the Price of what the
 " Nation paid formerly for that Commodity;
 " not to speak of *Drugs, Woods, Cocoa, Pie-*
 " *mento, Spices, Gold and Silver* from the *Span-*
 " *ish West-Indies*, for our Negroes and Manu-
 " factures : By all which the Nation saves and
 " gains by the People employ'd in those Colo-
 " nies 4000000 *l. per Ann.* Now if it be consi-
 " der'd again, that in all those *Sugar Colonies*
 " there is not 60000 White Men, Women,
 " and Children, it necessarily must follow, that
 " one with another, above what they consume,
 " each of them earns for the Publick above 60 *l.*
 " *per Annum.* The Rents of Houses and Lands
 " in *England*, by Sir *William Petty's* Computa-
 " tion,

" tion, amount to 10000000 *l.* the Consump-
 " tion to 50000000 *l.* then by reducing Labour
 " and Consumption to a proper Ballance with
 " the Produce of Rents, and supposing the
 " imaginary Wealth of the whole Kingdom
 " to increase in time of Peace the tenth part
 " annually, that will be but four Millions,
 " which does not amount to 12 *s.* a Head clear
 " Increase of Wealth, one with another, above
 " necessary and constant Expences; from which
 " it follows, beyond Controversy, that Hands
 " employ'd in the Sugar Plantations are, one
 " with another, of 130 times more Value
 " to the Common Wealth than those that stay
 " at home. To this some may object, That
 " those there consume nothing of Native Com-
 " modities, which if they did, as these do who
 " stay at home, their Consumption would a-
 " mount to 350000 *l.* annually, at 6 *l.* 10 *s.* a Head,
 " the Allowance made by Sir *Will. Petty*, and
 " others; and would consequently encrease the
 " Rents at least a fourth Part of that. But, as
 " has been said, whatever is consum'd by idle
 " Men, can never encrease either the Real or
 " Imaginary Wealth of the Nation, and no-
 " thing but the Overplus can be reckon'd ad-
 " ditional, which, according to a reasonable
 " Computation, cannot be above 2 *s.* a Head;
 " so that if we would grant, that those in the
 " Colonies did consume nothing of our home
 " Produce, the Loss by the want of them here
 " could amount only to 1200000 *s.* annually,
 " or 600000 *l.*

Thus far we have taken from the Knight,
 and have only to object against his Number of
 Souls in the Sugar Colonies, which, at the time
 he wrote that Tract, was as many more as he
 men-

mentions, there being then 40 or 50000 *Whites*, Men, Women, and Children at *Barbados* only. However, supposing that we should consume not above 800000 *l.* in Sugar, did we make none, a third Part of what he proposes, and that there was not above 250000 *l.* gain'd and sav'd by 120000 Men, Women, and Children, double the Number he makes it, every Soul then earns for the Publick near 20 *l.* and consequently every Hand employ'd in the Sugar Plantations is fourty times as good as one that stays at home, which is all the Alteration that seems necessary in his Argument.

As to what he says, may be objected, That they consume nothing of Native Commodities: That Objection is best answer'd by the Bills of Entry at the Custom-house. A Man must be so ignorant of Trade, that one may despair of convincing him, who does not know that the Planters in our Sugar-Islands have for themselves, Servants and Slaves, all manner of Necessaries, for the House or the Field, for Cloathing or Food, from *England*. Sir *Dalby* allows *five Blacks at least for one White* in the Sugar Colonies, but we cannot agree with him; for when there were 50000 *Whites*, Men, Women and Children, in *Barbados*, as there were when he wrote, can any one suppose there were 250000 *Blacks*? There might be then 80000, and never more, which with 50000 *Whites*, made 130000 Souls in all; and allowing but as many more for the other Islands, who can imagine that 260000 Souls can subsist there, where nothing is to be had but Sugar, Cotton, Ginger, and the Commodities before-mention'd, without consuming prodigious Quantities of all sorts of Goods from *England*, besides the Provisions they have from the Northern Colonies.

In

In treating of the Trade of each Colony, this Matter will be more particularly handled, with Reference to their particular Exports and Imports; but *Barbados* being the Chief of our *Sugar Islands*, comes first naturally to be mention'd on all Occasions. If the Plantations take away one Man to maintain about three at home: If they take up almost half of our foreign Commerce, and are a perpetual Nursery of able Seamen: If they yearly encrease the National Stock 800000 *l.* only, as by the following History will appear, they are of as much Advantage to this Nation in Trade, as near half of all their People elsewhere; for the annual Encrease of the National Stock, according to Dr. *Davensant*, is not above 2000000 *l.*

How they encrease it, is by our Exports; and lest the Reader may not have a clear Idea of it, let him see what Judge *Littleton* of *Barbados* wrote on this Head:

Greatest of
the Plan-
tations.

“ There is one main Advantage by the Plan-
“ tations, which has not been sufficiently ex-
“ plain'd, and that is, that the *English* have now
“ several good Commodities of their own,
“ which before they had not, which does very
“ much conduce to the enriching them; for
“ it is agreed by all who pretend to understand
“ Trade, that a Country does then grow rich,
“ and then only, when the Commodities ex-
“ ported out of it are of more Value than those
“ that are imported into it. This Proportion
“ between the Importation and Exportation, is
“ call'd the Ballance of Trade; and there is no
“ way in the World for a Country to grow rich
“ by Trade, but by setting this Ballance right,
“ and in sending out more than it takes in.
“ Some other Tricks and Shifts there are, which
“ make

INTRODUCTION.

xvii

“ make a shew of doing great Matters, but they
 “ prove idle and frivolous, and signify nothing.
 “ A Country is, in this Respect, in the same
 “ Condition with a private Man, that lives
 “ upon his Land: If this Man sells more than
 “ he buys, he lays up Money; if he buys more
 “ than he sells, he must run in Debt, or at
 “ least spend out of the quick Stock; and
 “ where the Bought and the Sold are e-
 “ qual, he has barely brought both Ends toge-
 “ ther.

This Gentleman was a Man of excellent Sense, and this Treatise of his hits the Case of the *Plantations* better than any. He represents their Grievances in the most lively Colours, speaks like a Man, who felt what he wrote, and who complain'd with no dissembled Sorrow.

After he has touch'd on our Argument of the Increase of the National Stock by *Barbados*, and it will hold for the other Sugar Islands, he goes on:

“ Why should *England* grudge at the Prospe-
 “ rity and Wealth of the Plantations, since all
 “ that is ours she may account her own, not
 “ only because we are a part of *England*, (what-
 “ ever we may be accounted) as it is taken
 “ largely, but also because all comes to this
 “ Kingdom of *England*, properly so call'd,
 “ these two and fifty Shires. By a kind of
 “ Magnetick Force, *England* draws to it all
 “ that is good in the Plantations. It is the
 “ Centre, to which all things tend: Nothing
 “ but *England* can we relish or fancy: Our
 “ Hearts are here where-ever our Bodies be:
 “ If we get a little Money, we remit it to
 “ Eng-

“ *England*. They that are able, breed up their
 “ Children in *England*. When we are a little
 “ easy, we desire to live and spend what we
 “ have in *England*, and all that we can rap
 “ and rend is brought to *England*.

It may be pretended, that the other Colonies, where there is no such Consumption of *English* Commodities, as there is not in the Provinces on the *Continent*, have not that Pretence to be an Advantage to *England*. But sure this will not be said of *Virginia* and *Maryland*, of which Colonies, their Trade and Profit to *England*, we have spoken in the Histories of those Provinces. To which we shall add what Sir *Dalby Thomas* wrote on this Subject, in the before-mention'd Treatise.

“ The Price of every Pound Weight of To-
 “ bacco imported into the Nation before we
 “ planted it, was from about 4*s*. to 16*s*. 2
 “ Pound; and now the best *Virginia* is not a-
 “ bove 17 *d*. to the Merchant, of which the
 “ King has 5 *d*. Two Thirds of the Tobacco
 “ brought from these Colonies, is exported
 “ to foreign Markets; which at about
 “ 3 Pound a Hogshead (the least the Nation
 “ gets by it) amounts to above 200000 Pound,
 “ besides the great Quantity of Shipping it
 “ employs. It is not so little as a Million
 “ the Kingdom saves yearly by our planting
 “ Tobacco; so that reckoning the White Peo-
 “ ple in our Tobacco Colonies to be 100000
 “ Men, Women, and Children, they, one with
 “ another, are each of them 12 *l*. a Year Profit
 “ to the Nation. There are in those Colo-
 “ nies, by a probable Computation, 600000
 “ Negroes and Indians, Men, Women, and
 “ Chil-

" Children, and would be more, could they
 " readily get Negroes from *Guinea*, every one
 " of which consumes yearly two Hilling-Hoes,
 " two Weeding-Hoes, two Grubbing-Hoes,
 " besides Axes, Saws, Wimbles, Nails, and
 " other Iron-Tools and Materials, consum'd
 " in Building and other Uses, to the Value of
 " at least 120000 *l.* in only Iron-Work. The
 " Clothes, Guns, Cordage, Anchors, Sails,
 " and Materials for Shipping, besides Beds and
 " other Household-Goods, consum'd and us'd
 " by them, are infinite : Nor is the Benefit of
 " them to the Kingdom sufficiently to be ex-
 " plain'd, therefore let it suffice, in one Word,
 " to say, that the Produce and Consumption,
 " with the Shipping they give Employment
 " to, is of an infinite deal more Benefit to the
 " Wealth, Honour, and Strength of the Nation,
 " than four times the same Number of Hands,
 " the best employ'd at home that can be.

To this we can only object, That the Num-
 ber of *Indians* and Negroes, Men, Women, and
 Children, is not above one half as many as he
 makes them; but that of the Whites exact,
 which Mistake does not prejudice the Argu-
 ment much, for the *Indians* make the least
 Consumption of our Goods, and there lies
 most his Error.

As for the other Colonies, *Pennsylvania* is now
 falling into the Tobacco-Trade, *Carolina* into the
Silk and *Rice*, *New-England* into that of *Naval-*
Stores: And indeed since we can so easily, so
 cheaply, and so safely be furnish'd with these
 Commodities from thence, it is a Reflection on
 our Politicks, that we will be oblig'd to the
 Northern Nations, and send for our Stores to
 the *Baltick*. *New-York* has the same Advantages
 of

INTRODUCTION.

of Naval Stores, and so have all the other Colonies in a less degree. But if *New-England*, *New-York*, the *Jerseys*, *Pennsylvania* and *Carolina*, furnish the *Sugar Islands* with Provisions and Cattle, and they could not subsist without them, as they can tell by woful Experience, 'tis enough that they are of such Advantage to *England*; for not to say any thing of the great Exportation of our Commodities to those Provinces, allowing that there are in all 350000 *Whites*, Men, Women and Children, in our *American Colonies*, which is the largest Computation, and they encrease annually, the National Stock 800000 *l.* and the whole Encrease is but 200000 *l.* yearly, there is but 1200000 Encrease, for the rest of the Subjects of the *British Empire*, computed at 8000000, which is little more than half of the whole Encrease. Thus it appears, that one Hand in the Plantations is as good as twenty employ'd at home, as has been prov'd already, by another way of working it.

Let us further consider the many Motives that are sed at home by this Trade, the many Families that are enrich'd, the vast Sums it brings into the Exchequer, to which *Barbados* only pays 50000 *l.* yearly, tho not twice as big as *Rusland*, and is after the rate of 10 *s.* for every cultivated Acre in the Island.

Thus we see that the Colonies are far from being a Disadvantage to us by the Men who live there. But then 'tis said, they are certainly so by the Men who die, that they have been Graves for several Years, and kill more Seamen than they breed: Were this true in Fact, as it is false, it should never be objected to them by an *European*.

From whence did that fatal Sickness come which infected *Barbados* and the other Islands?

Was

Was it not from *Europe*, brought by the Soldiers sent in an ill time for their Defence, being under the leading of Captains that not only betray'd those they brought with them, but those who join'd them. We may see how it was with them before the unhappy Arrival of those sickly Soldiers and Seamen.

" We employ (says Judge *Littletown*) seven or eight hundred Ships in a safe and healthy Navigation. They find less Danger in a Voyage to our Parts, than in a Voyage to *Newcastle*; and as the Ships come safe, so the Men come sound. Whereas of those that go to the *East Indies*, half the Ships Company (take one Ship with another) perish in the Voyage.

Besides the great Increase of Wealth by our Colonies, added to the National Stock, the Treasure sav'd has been prov'd to be of almost as great Advantage. Nations enough would immediately fall into the *Sugar* and *Tobacco* Trades, and supply us at their own Rates for our Money. We should soon miss our *Plantations* if we had none, and their Enemies then would have their Objections answer'd in a Style which they might tremble to hear, for Envy has made them too free of their Reflections, especially considering they have so little Appearance of Reason on their side.

Is not the Situation of the Islands for annoying the *Spaniards* or *French* in *America*, a sufficient Argument for us to be as careful of their Defence, as if they were our Frontiers? And this relates more particularly to *Barbados*. Should we in *England* be so negligent of our selves and them, as to expose them to a *French*

Con-

Was

Conquest, of which they have been in Danger more than once, What would be the Consequence? All the *Leeward Islands* must inevitably follow; nor could *Jamaica* hold out long. The *French* being to Windward, can send their Men down to *Paris Guaves* with a small Charge, and would force the Inhabitants of *Jamaica* to surrender in a few Months. The Loss of the *Sugar Islands* would soon affect the Northern Colonies, who are of great Use to *England*, for their Tobacco, Masts, Timber, breeding of Seamen, and Navigation. All which, except *Virginia* and *Maryland*, have their chief Dependance on the *Leeward Islands* and *Jamaica*, for their Lumber and Fishery. The Colonies of *New-England*, *New-York*, the *Jerseys*, *Pennsylvania*, and *Carolina*, have very little Use for any Navigation directly for *England*, but have a great Trade with the *Sugar-Islands*, which is very much for the Interest of *England*; and if these Trades were lost, one third at least of the Navigation of this Kingdom would follow it. What Effect this would have on the Merchants, Manufacturers, Mechanicks and Mariners, let every reasonable Man judge.

'Tis certain, our *American Plantations* take off more of the Manufactures of *England* than any other foreign Trade whatsoever; and is not this Consideration enough to silence all the Clamours of the unthinking *Peasantry*; for sure no Man who has convers'd in the World, and been tolerably educated, can give into such an Error, or imagine 'tis not well worth our while to spare Hands for the Culture of our Land in *America*.

Should we neglect our Islands, what Port wou'd be left us to enter the *Spanish West-Indies*? What Damage might we not do the *French* and

Spanj-

Spaniards from *Jamaica*? Is not that Island a Key that lets us into *Hispaniola* and the *Continent*? 'Twill soon be answer'd, What have we got by it in this War? Which Question let others reply to; I take the Liberty to assert, that there is nothing so plainly to be made out, as that we might have got, and still may get by it. Perhaps too, whether it has turn'd much to our immediate Profit or not, the *French* and *Spaniards* could give a very good Account for us of their Losses by it, and the Expence it has put them to. As little as we have made of the Advantage of its Situation, had we had no Ports so situated, the *Plate-Fleets* from *Spain* would not have come home with so much Uncertainty and so many Delays. *Jamaica* is an Awe upon them, and has had a Share of their Silver. Why it was not greater, let the Concern'd tell us; for it might have been, we all know. The *French* have not quite so much Reason as we, to be zealous for the promoting Navigation; yet they know their Interest so well, that 'tis a long while ago that they began to put in for a Share of the *American Continent* and Islands; and whatever they have got, they are careful to defend. They have always a great regular Force at *Canada*, for the Preservation of that cold, barren Province, and their Care for the Defence of their richer Plantations is answerable. The *French* King sets such a Value upon his Plantations, and is so far from thinking his People lost who go to them, that he pays a good part of the Freight of all such as go thither to settle, and gives them other Encouragements: There's no Man will doubt his understanding his Interest. And if those People weaken'd or impoverish'd him by transporting themselves to *America*, he would sooner send them to the Gallies.

The *Dutch*, we know, have Colonies in the *East-Indies*; do these exhaust and depopulate *Holland*; or are they, at least, a Burthen and Inconvenience? The *Hollanders* are so far from thinking so, that they justly esteem them the chief Foundation of their Wealth and Traffick: Their *East-India* Trade depends on their *East-India* Colonies, and the Greatness and Glory of their State depend on their *East-India* Trade. Tho' their Colonies drain and destroy their Men as fast as ours; as their Trade and Wealth encrease, their People encrease also; and 'tis on 'twill be the same with us, when the Plantations are so far eas'd of their Burthens, that they may flourish, and pour in Treasure upon us, which in such Case they would again do as they have formerly done. As to the *Dutch West-India* Colonies; how do they cherish *Serimam*, tho' one of the basest Countries in the World? Are they not as sollicitous for the Preservation of *Curaçoe*, (as 'tis commonly pronounc'd,) and the Settlement of *Tobago*? Did they not spare their Admiral *De Ruyter* with a Fleet, in their War with *France* above 30 Years ago, to fall upon the *French* Sugar Islands; and would they have done it, had they not thought them highly valuable?

What a Figure have the *Portuguese* made in *Europe*, since the *Dutch* drove them in a great Measure out of their *East-India* Trade, in comparison to their Strength and Riches, while they were in Possession of it? The *Portuguese* have so true a Notion of the Advantage of such Colonies, that to encourage them, they admit the Citizens of *Goa* to send Deputies to sit in the Assembly of the *Cortez*: And if it were ask'd, Why our Colonies have not their Representatives? who could presently give a satisfactory An-

nies in the
 depopulate
 men and In-
 so far from
 n them the
 d Traffick;
 their East-
 and Glory
 edia Trade;
 y their Men
 Wealth en-
 and 'tis on
 the Planta-
 thens, that
 asure upon
 again do as
 Dutch West-
 sh Surinam,
 the World?
 Preservation
 unc'd,) and
 y not spare
 et, in their
 to fall upon
 d they have
 a highly va-

e made in
 in a great
 le, in com-
 while they
 ese have so
 such Colo-
 y admit the
 o sit in the
 were ask'd,
 Representa-
 satisfactory
 An-

INTRODUCTION.

XXXV

Answer? There are some Persons who pretend
 the *Spaniards* have ruin'd themselves, by ex-
 hausting their Country, for the sake of their
American Acquisitions. To which may be an-
 swer'd, their banishing the Convert-Moors,
 the *Jews*, and the setting up of the Inquisition,
 with the Tyranny of their Government, have
 more exhausted *Spain* than all their Settlements
 in the *West-Indies*. Had moderate Counsels
 prevail'd, there would have been no Scarcity of
 Men in that Kingdom, and their Pride and
 Sloth have impoverish'd them much more than
 their Want of Hands. Besides, grant that every
 Nation best understand their true Interest,
 do not the *Spaniards* Politicks even now justify
 our Assertion, That the *West-India* Colonies
 are highly advantageous to their Mother Coun-
 tries? What do they fight for at this time?
 Why do they suffer themselves to be torn to
 Pieces on all sides? What is this Dispute for?
 Would they give up the *West-Indies* to the right
 Owner, K. *Charles III.* Matters would soon be
 accommodated; and without doing it, this War
 can never be well ended.

We hope the Reader is by this time satisfy'd,
 that our *American* Plantations are an Advantage,
 and a very great one, to this Kingdom; and
 the Arguments brought from Antiquity will be
 of no use to the Enemies of Colonies.

'Tis said, *Aristotle* speaking of the Won-
 ders of the World, writes, "That certain
 " *Carthaginian* Pilots having discover'd a vast
 " Island, very fruitful, beyond *Hercules Pillars*:
 [Which must be *America*, for *Britain* was
 known to them, so were *Africa* and the *East*]
 " several Families of that Republick left
 " their Country, to transport themselves th-
 " ther, and settle there; but the Magistrates
 b 2 " of

“ of *Carthage* forbid any, on severe Penalties,
 “ to make that Voyage.

By which means 'twas so neglected, that the Country became unknown again, till 'twas discover'd by *Columbus* 1700 Years afterwards. This is told us by some Inquirers into the History of *America*; of which more will be said, when this Author treats of those Parts of it that belong to the *Spaniards*, *Portuguese*, *Dutch*, *Danes* and *French*, as he intends to do, according as this Treatise is encourag'd. Tho the *Carthaginians* might have had such an ill Opinion of Colonies, that is no Argument of their being hurtful; for the Judgment of greater Nations, and the Success of it make against them. Did the *Athenians* and other *Greeks* lose by the Colonies they sent into *Asia*? Or rather, was not *Ionia* the Barrier of *Greece*, which defended it against the *Persian* Usurpation? Did these Colonies dispeople *Greece*? Is there any Complaint of it in all the *Greek* Story? No certainly! On the contrary, the *Grecian* States thriv'd after it; their Navigation increas'd, and by their Navigation they became Masters of *Asia*; for had they not destroy'd the Naval Power of the *Persians*, they could not have injur'd their Dominion by Land. But after they were entirely Masters at Sea, they never ceas'd till they were so at Land also. Was it ever pretended that the *Roman* Colonies dispeopl'd *Rome*? Whenever that wise and renown'd State thought it convenient to send forth a Colony, Thousands of People were sent away at a time, at the publick Charge, and that as far as the *Tygrus* on the one hand, and the *Tweed* on the other. These Colonies were the Security of their Conquests; and the greatest Politicians have been of Opinion, That

“ That as the *Roman* Empire was the greatest
 “ that ever the World saw, so it chiefly ow’d
 “ its Grandeur to its free Emission of Colo-
 “ nies.

It would not be very difficult to prove, that
 in the present Circumstances of Affairs, the
British Colonies are, or may be much more
 advantageous to the *Britains* than the *Roman*
 Colonies, of which they were so free, were
 to the *Romans*, by how much more the Safety
 of a Nation is of greater Consequence than its
 Extent of Empire ; but that would draw this
 Tract out to too great a Length. If we have
 not been too tedious already, ’tis well ; and
 we shall leave the Decision of this Argument
 now to the Reader, having said as much for
 it as we could, and as we believe is necessary to
 convince the Impartial and Disinterested,
 That our Colonies in *America* are so far from
 being a Loss to us, that there are no Hands
 in the *British* Empire more usefully employ’d
 for the Profit and Glory of the Common-
 Wealth.

Of all our *American* Commerce that of Sugar
 is most valuable, because most necessary. Sir
Josiah Child, in his Discourse of Trade, speak-
 ing of this, says,

“ It is in his Majesty’s Power, and the Parlia-
 “ ment’s, if they please, by taking off all Char-
 “ ges from Sugar, to make it more entirely
 “ an *English* Commodity, than White Herrings
 “ are a *Dutch* Commodity ; and to draw more
 “ Profit to the Kingdom thereby, than the
 “ *Dutch* do by that. * And that in Consequence
 “ thereof all Plantations of other Nations,
 “ must in a few Years sink to little or nothing.

This

This Authority will confirm all that has been said before, and it might be made out, which way so great Good may be done to the Publick; but that would be to enter into the *detail* of the Hardships the Colonies have lain under for many Years, the Means of easing them, and other Articles, some of which are treated of in the particular Histories of the Plantations; and others that remain, we must forbear mentioning till a more convenient Time and Place offer; for we have already kept the Reader too long from the Story.

Adver-

W.

at has been
out, which
the Publick;
the detail of
under for
them, and
reated of in
tions; and
ar mention-
d Place of
Reader too

Advertisement.

ALL Gentlemen, Merchants, or others, who
live in our American Colonies, and will
communicate any thing to the Author, to be added or
amended in the next Edition of this History, are de-
sir'd to direct it to either of the Booksellers whose
Names are in the Title-Page of this Book, and Care
shall be taken to have it inserted.

Adver-

There

There are some few *ERRATA*'s of the
PRESS; as,

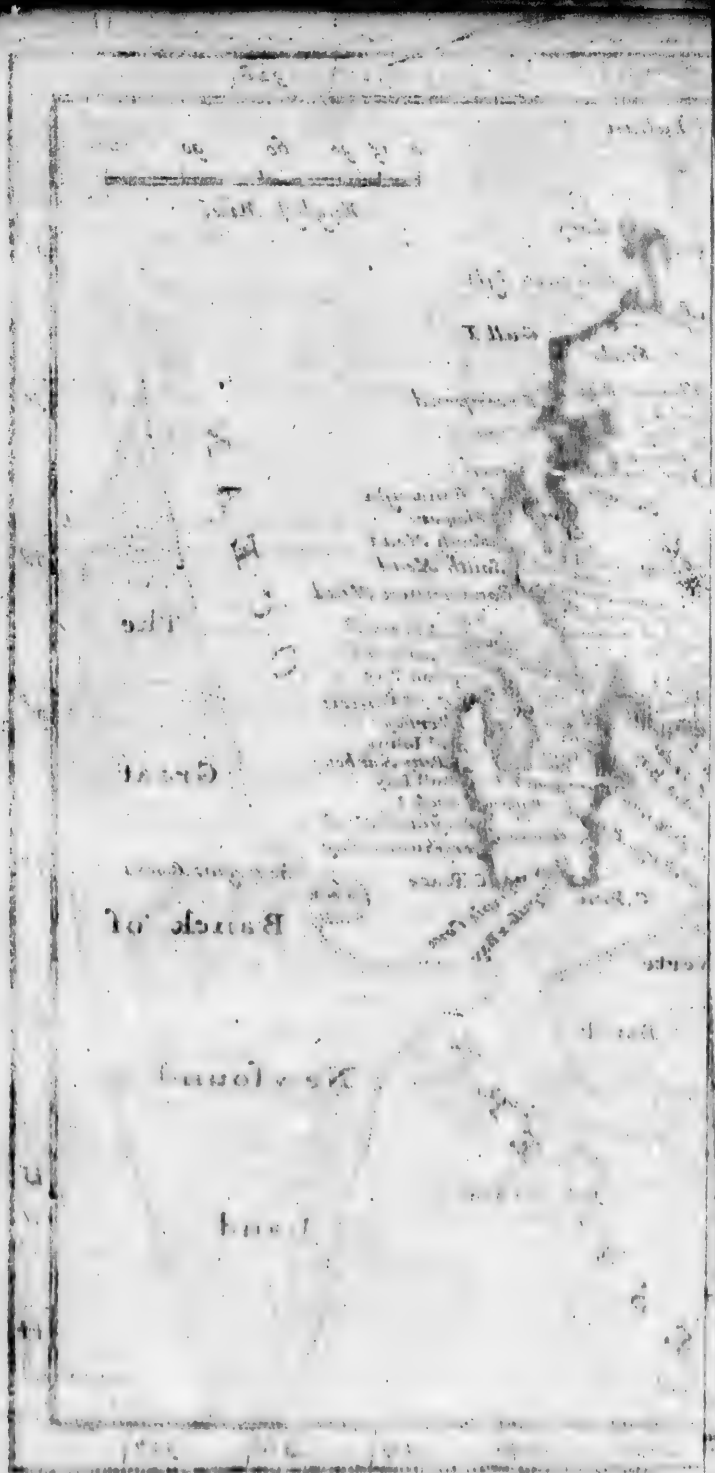
VOL. I. Page 403. l. 6. del. *him*, read *Raddison*. p.
344. l. 1. read *by the King*. p. 349. l. 19. del. *Go-*
vernour of Providence. Vol. 2. p. 110. *Baronets created the*
same Day should be only *Sir John Colliton* and *Sir James*
Modiford. p. 112. for 150000, read 130000, in the Num-
ber of *Souls*. The rest are mostly *Litterals*, and the *Rea-*
der will easily correct them.

THE

1's of the

Raddison. p.
l. 29 del. Go-
sets created the
and Sir James
in the Num-
and the Res-

THE





316

THE
HISTORY
OF
NEWFOUNDLAND.

Containing

An Account of its Discovery,
Settlement, Encrease, Pre-
sent State, Inhabitants, Cli-
mate, Soil, Product, Trade,
&c.

317

THIS large Island was discover'd by *Sebastian A. D.*
Cabot; who was sent to the *West-Indies* 1497.
by *Henry VII.* in the Year 1497. to make Discoveries. 'Tis of a Triangular Figure, The Figure
as big as *Ireland*, about 300 Leagues in Circumfe- of the I-
rence; separated from *North Canada* on the Conti-land.
nent to the North, and *New-Scotland* to the South;
about as far as the nearest part of *England* is from
France: 'Tis no more than 600 Leagues distant from
the *Lands End*; and the *Great Bank* is hardly half
way to *Virginia*: It lies between 46 and 53 Degrees its Lat-
of *North Lat.* and has many commodious Bayes along tude.
the Coast; some of them running into the Land to
wards one another more than 20 Leagues.

B

But

The History of Newfoundland.

But before we enter upon a further Description of the Country, we shall proceed with the History of it from its Discovery to its Settlement by the English.

- Discovery.* In the Reign of *Henry VIII*, Mr. *Thorn* and Mr. *Elliot*, two English Adventurers, made a Voyage thither; and one Mr. *Hore*, another Adventurer of our Nation, attempted a Settlement, but was reduc'd to such Streights, that many of his Company were kill'd and eaten by their Fellows: Those who surviv'd, were so chang'd, that Sir *William Butts*, a *Norfolk* Knight, did not know his Son at his Return, and cou'd not be convinc'd 'twas the same Person, till he shew'd him a Mark in his Body which his Father remembred. The English after this neglecting the Place, the *French* and *Portuguese* resorted to it, and carry'd on a very profitable Trade in Fish and other Commodities. In the year 1579. Captain *Richard Whitburn* of *Exmouth* in *Devonshire*, was employ'd by Mr. *Cotten*, a Merchant of *Southampton*, to fish at the *Great Bank*; but his Companions not being able to endure the Cold, he put into *Trinity-Harbour*, where they kill'd store of Fish, Deer, Bears, Beavers, Seals, Otters, Sea-Fowl, &c. and having made a tollerable Voyage, return'd to *England*. In 1583. Mr. *Crook*, a Merchant of the same Port, fitted him out for the same Voyage; and while he was at *Newfoundland*, Sir *Humphry Gilbert*, a *Devonshire* Knight, and a famous Adventurer, related to Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, came thither with two stout Ships and a Pinnace, and brought with him a Commission from Queen *Elizabeth* to take possession of the Place in her Name, which he did in *St. John's Harbour*, Mr. *Whitburn* my Author being present. Sir *Humphry* sailing thence towards *Virginia*, lost his biggest Ship; and he himself going aboard the Pinnace, was cast away in his Return to *England*: His other Ship, Captain *Hays* Commander, arriv'd and brought the News of that worthy Gentleman's hard Fortune.
1585. Two Years afterwards, Sir *Bernard Drake* of *Devon*, was sent thither with a Squadron of Men of War, and took several *Portuguese* Ships laden with Fish and Oil, which he brought into *England* as Prizes: For tho' the *French* and *Portuguese* went thither to fish, the English look'd on themselves as the true

Lords

For
seve
seat
reli
raz
Kin
that
land
to t
bapt
then
VIII
Plac
was
T
very
wher
but
Mr.
of B
sons
sollic
folloy
Apri
from
the S
Sir I
Doda
citor
Piero
Esqu
Anth
Nook
More
over
John
lande
panic
bitat
so co
their
sturb
they
Capt

nd.

escription of
History of it
English.

rn and Mr.
e a Voyage
venturer of
was reduc'd
pany were
Those who

am Butts, a
his Return,
Person, till
h his Father
glecting the
d to it, and
h and other

ain Richard
employ'd by
to fish at the
eing able to
our, where

avers, Seals,
a tollerable
Mr. Crook,

out for the
 Newfoundland,
t, and a fa-

er Raleigh,
innace, and
Queen Eliza-

her Name,
r. Whitburn
ling thence

nd he him-
away in his
ptain Hays

ws of that

ake of De-
of Men of
laden with

land as Pri-
ent thither
as the true

Lords

The History of Newfoundland.

3

Lords and Proprietors of the Country, as appears by *Hæc Insu-*
several Grants from the Crown before the French *la ab An-*
settled themselves there, and the Confession of Fo- *glis, uri*
reigners themselves: tho' tis pretended *John Ve-*
razzan, a Florentine, sent by Francis I. the French *apparer,*
King, possess'd himself of the Island in the Name of *primum*
that Prince, calling it *Terre Neuve*, or *Newfound-*
land, yet that does not lessen the Right of the English *inventa,*
to this Country; for it was done several years after *Delact.*
bastian Cabot had been there a second time; and brought
thence 3 of the Natives, whom he presented to *Henry*
VIII. as a Token of his having taken possession of the
Place in his Name: And Sir *Humphry Gilbert* when he
was there, forbade all other Nations to fish on the Coast.

'Tis true, the English were not for a long time
very fond of settling on such an unfriendly Shoar,
where there were few or no Conveniencies for Life,
but Interest at last prevail'd; and in the Year 1609.
Mr. *John Guy* a Merchant, and afterwards Mayor
of *Bristol*, who wrote a Treatise to encourage Per-
sons to undertake a Settlement, by writing and
soliciting the Business succeeded so well, that in the
following Year King *James* made a Grant, dated

April the 10th, 1610. of all that part of the Island *The First*
from *Cape Bonavist* in the North, to *Cape St. Mary's* in New-
foundland, the South, to the Earl of *Northampton* Lord Keeper, *Company.*
Sir *Lawrence Tanfield* Lord Chief Baron, Sir *John*
Doddridge King's Sergeant, Sir *Francis Bacon* Solli-

citor General, Sir *Daniel Donn*, Sir *Walter Cope*, Sir
Piercival Wilboughby, Sir *John Constable*, *John Weld*
Esquire, Mr. *Ellis Crisp*, Mr. *Richard Bowdler*, Mr.
Anthony Haviland, Mr. *William Lewis*, Mr. *Humphry*
Hook, Mr. *John Guy*, Mr. *Phillip Guy*, Mr. *William*
Meredith, Mr. *John Doughtie* and others; who sent
over a Colony thither under the Direction of Mr.

John Guy: This Gentleman arriv'd there in 20 days, 1610.
landed at *Conception Harbour*; and he and his Com-

panions built Houses, or rather Huts, for their Ha-
bitations, during their stay. Mr. *Guy* behav'd himself
so courteously to the Natives, that he entirely gain'd
their Friendship; and the English were not at all dis-
turb'd by them in carrying on their Settlement, as
they were in other Places. In the next Year 1611.

Captain *Whitburn* went thither again, and the Arch

1611.

The History of Newfoundland

- Pirate *Peter Easton* came here with a *Sail of four rich Ships*; he desir'd *Mr. Whisburn* to procure a Pardon for him, and would have return'd to *England*; in expectation of it, he waited on the Coast of *Barbadoes*; but the Court tiring out his patience, he enter'd the *Streights* with his Treasures, and the Duke of *Savoy* took him into his Service. There was very little Frost this Year in *Newfoundland*, all Winter long,
1612. which, if true, is sent to a Miracle. In the Year ensuing, the English found some of the Indian Habitations, which were Huts made of Polar set round, and meeting on the Top, about a Foot broad, cover'd with Deer Skins, and the Fire in the middle. In the
1613. next Year, 34 Men, 2 Women, and a Children winter'd there, and the Season prov'd moderate. The English sow'd Wheat and Rie, and planted Turnips and Coleworts, which 'tis said grew as well as in *England*; and this is the more rare, because Wheat and other Grain cannot now be brought to thrive there. The new Planters got plenty of Fowl and Fish for Food; and Bears and Oters for Skins: But we have reason to believe that things did not answer their Expectation, for 'tis certain that *Mr. Guy* and his Colony return'd to *England*. The Disease that troubled them most, was the Scurvy, which they cur'd with their
1614. Turnips. In the Year 1614. *Sir Henry Monmouth* was sent thither with a Squadron of 3 Men of War to secure the Fishery. And in the following Year Captain *Whisburn* made another Voyage, carrying with him a Commission from the Admiralty, to *Impartial Justice*, and make Inquiry upon Oath, of divers Abuses and Disorders committed amongst Fishermen yearly on that Coast.
- Dr. *W. Vaughan* of *Carmarthenshire* purchas'd a Grant from the Patentees for part of the Country, to make a Settlement, which however he never effected. In 1616. Captain *Whisburn* was taken in his way from *Newfoundland* to *Lisbon* with a
1616. Cargo of Fish; and in the Year 1618. he went thither as Dr. *Vaughan's* Deputy; tho' whom he was to govern, we don't find any where mentioned by himself or other Writers, or that there was any Settlement of English till 2 or 3 years afterwarde, when *Sir George Calvert*, Principal Secretary of State to King *James*, got a Grant of the best part of the Island. This Gentleman

The History of Newfoundland,

1620.

William being of the Romish Religion, was uneasy at home, and had the same Reason to leave the Kingdom, as those Gentlemen had who went to New-England, to enjoy the Liberty of his Conscience: He therefore resolv'd to retire to America, and finding the Newfoundland Company made no use of their Grant; he thought of this Place for his Retreat; to which end he procur'd a Patent for that part of the Island that lies between the Bay of Bulls in the East, and Cape St. Mary's in the South, which was erected into a Province, and call'd Avalon, the Name it goes by to this Day.

How this Grant could be made without the Consent of the former Proprietors, we cannot comprehend; for he seated himself within the Limits of their Territories; and he either agreed with them for it, or King James invaded the Company's Property. Sir George, afterwards Lord Baltimore, sent over Persons to plant and prepare things for his Reception; and in 1621. Capt. Edward Wynn went thither with a small Colony at Sir George's Charge, who seated himself at Ferryland, built Houses, planted a little Garden, and set up a Salt-Work in 1622. and the same Year, Himself, Capt. Pawel, 51 Men, 7 Women, and 1 Boy, Winter'd there. In the following Year the Lord Falkland, Deputy of Ireland, sent a Colony thither under Sir Francis Tarfit, who return'd without making a Settlement.

Lord Baltimore's Settlement.

1621.

1622.

1623.

When Capt. Wynn had given Sir George a satisfactory Account of his Proceedings, he remov'd thither with his Family, built a Fine House and strong Fort at Ferryland, Northward of Cape de Rex, and dwelt there some time; but having a better Settlement in view in Virginia, he return'd to England to get the Grant of the Country which is since call'd Maryland: However he still retain'd the Propriety of Avalon in Newfoundland, and govern'd the little Colony at Ferryland by Deputies till his Death: His Son Cecilius Lord Baltimore did the same, till the distractions in England during the Civil War, render'd his Possession precarious; and about the Year 1694. Sir David Kirk, a Gentleman whose Fortune oblig'd him to change the Climate more than his Constitution, went thither, and by Warrant of the Govern-

1694. Sir David Kirk's Settlement.

ment then in being, possess'd himself of the Lord Baltimore's Plantation, which he afterwards treat'd with that Lord to purchase; but the Family of Colvert, wou'd never formally give up their Pretences, notwithstanding which Sir David liv'd there all his time, gave his Name to a Sound on the Western Shoar; and his Children and Grand Children dwelt there after him, the latter being reduc'd to the mean Condition of the Ordinary Inhabitants. Sir David undertook an Expedition against the French at Canada, and destroy'd their Settlements, which the French not only recover'd in the Reign of Charles II. but they were suffer'd in his time first to settle on the Southern Shoar of Newfoundland, to fortify themselves at Placentia, St. Peter's, and other Places. Thus they who are Intruders, by their Industry, and the Convenience of their Neighbourhood with Canada, the Country, such as it is, of the French Dominions in America, have got the better Part of this Island, and have a more numerous Colony and Better Fortifications than the English, who have all along contented themselves with some scatter'd Settlements on the Coasts, which they do not call by the Name of Towns, but by that of Harbours. Before we go on further with our History of the Country, we shall give an Account of the Places where the English have settled, the number of Families; by the latest Surveys taken from a Merchant who liv'd some time in the Island, in what way they live, for their Constitution does not deserve to be call'd a Government. Of the Indians, the Climate, the Soil, Animals, Trade, and other things worthy the Reader's Knowledge.

The Isles.

Under the Name of Newfoundland those Isles are comprehended which lie on the West Side of it in the Gulph of St. Lawrence, and the River of Canada or New France to the North and West. These Isles are 19 in number, of which the most considerable are, the Isles of the Sand or Bank of Cape Breton, St. John's Isle about 30 Leagues long, 16 over, and 90 in Circuit; 'tis properly nothing else but a great Forest of Fir-trees, and is surrounded with steep Rocks. Cape Breton Isle in the South of the Gulph of St. Lawrence, is 60 Leagues long, 10 or 12 broad, and 140 in Circuit; 'tis almost cut in two Parts by that Gulph.

The

land.

the Lord Bil-
wards treatd
family of Cal-
neir Pretences,
d there all his
Western Shoar;
n dwelt there
the mean Con-
Sir David un-
ch at Canada,
ch the French
Charles II. but
o settle on the
tify themselves
s. Thus they
d the Conven-
ada, the Geo-
nions in Amer-
s Island, and
etter Fortifica-
long contented
ments on the
ame of Towns,
go on further
all give an Ar-
ve settled, the
ys taken from
the Island, in
action does not
of the Indians,
le, and other
those Isles are
ide of it is the
of Canada or
ese Isles are
able are, the
on, St. John's
nd 90 in Cir-
a great Fo-
h steep Rocks.
ph of St. Law-
bad, and 140
y that Gulph.

The

The History of Newfoundland.

7

The Isle of *Assumption* is also call'd *Anticosti*, 'tis a-
bout the bigness of *Cape Breton* Island, situated at
the Mouth of the Great River of *Canada*; *Bears*
Port is the best Haven in it. Between *Anticosti* and the
flat Island, the old Writers tell us was the best Cod
Fishing, and that 'twas common to take 100 in an
Hour there. 'Tis certain so many have been caught
in an hour; but 'tis as far from being a common
thing, as that Place from being the best on the Coast
for Fishing, neither the English nor French ever fish-
ing between those Islands.

The English had Settlements formerly as far as *Cape* ^{English}
St. Mary's on the Southern Shoar; but now they begin ^{Settle-}
at *Ferryland* Head, and are scatter'd along the Coast at ^{ments.}
8 or 10 Miles distance from one Harbour to another, as
far as *Greenpond*: And passing *Cape de Raz*, the most
Easterly Point of Land in the Island, we come to

Ferryland, where are about 30 Houses and Families.

<i>Cape Broil</i> ,	12
<i>Bay of Bulls</i> ,	20
<i>Brigas Bay</i> ,	6
<i>Bell Im</i> ,	3
<i>Toads Cove</i> ,	2
<i>Mummables Bay</i> ,	6
<i>Petty Harbour</i> ,	6
<i>St. John's Town</i> ,	60

The latter is call'd a Town, and is situated within *St. John's*
the Neck of the Harbour in the Bay, form'd by a Town,
River that falls into the Sea there; the Mouth of that
Harbour is about half a Mile over: On the North Side
of it at the Entrance is a Battery, and another on the
South-East, where there's a cover'd Fortification, and
8 or 10 Guns, which with the opposite Battery com-
mand the Harbour, and render it almost impossible
for an Enemy to come at *St. John's Town*, there being
besides this a Chain of 15 Tunn weight, which they
can let down a-crofs it from one Fortification to ano-
ther. There was a Church before the late Invasion of
the French. The Houses were built on the Northern
Shoar, and every Family had a sort of a Wharfe
before their Houses to dry their Fish on. The Church
then stood about the Middle of the Town, but since

B 4

for

for the better Security of the Settlement, the English have remov'd their Dwellings. The Fort there is mounted with about 50 Guns, including the Out-works added by Col. *Richards*, when he commanded there, A Garison consisting of an independant Company of Foot, whose Captain at present is Major *Thomas Lloyd*, always do Duty there, and in the late Troubles were of great Service to the Country. Within the Fort on the Right Hand and on the Left are Barracks for the Soldiers, and opposite to the Gate the Captain's House, built *à la Modern*, with Sash Windows, and is a very fair Edifice. Next to *St. John's Town* is,

<i>Ketavuity,</i>	20 Houses and Families,
<i>Terbay,</i>	4 Families.
<i>Holyrood,</i>	} 12 Families.
<i>Salmon Cove,</i>	
<i>Havre de Grace,</i>	} 12 Families.
<i>Carboneer,</i>	
<i>Bay Virds,</i>	10 Families,
<i>Old Parlikin,</i>	6 Families,
<i>New Parlikin</i>	deserted.
<i>Silly Cove.</i>	
<i>Trinity Harbour,</i>	12 Families.
<i>Bonavist,</i>	25 Families,
<i>Greenpond Island,</i>	3 Families.

In all 247 Families, some of which are very large; and all together, before the French destroy'd the Settlements from *Cape de Raz* to *St. John's Town*, contain'd 4000 English Inhabitants, Men, Women and Children; tho in the year 1698, there were but 1500 Souls, the Number encreasing after the rate of about 500 every Year, till they came to be upwards of 4000. Most of the People fled to *St. John's Town*, and were safe there; but such as cou'd not crowd into the Fort were abandon'd to the Mercy of the Enemy, who burnt all the Houses in the West End of the Town; and the few they left, were, as they said, only spar'd that they might be a Receptacle for themselves when they came there again, which they threatned to do, but have not yet been as good as their Words. They staid in the Town 5 Weeks,

land.

ent, the Eng-
the Fort there
ding the Out-
e commanded
dant Company
s Major Tho-
nd in the late
the Country.
nd on the Left
pposite to the
Modern, with
ice. Next to

families.

re very large;
destroy'd the
s Town, con-
Women and
re were but
fter the rape
me to be up-
d to St. John's
n'd not crowd
Mercy of the
in the West
left, were,
t be a Recep-
there again,
not yet been
the Town
5 Weeks,

The History of Newfoundland.

9

5 Weeks, and continually harraist the Soldiers in the Fort by False Allarms: At last, they were tir'd with attacking, before the English were with defending the place, and left it, carrying away with them some hundreds of the Inhabitants.

The English had no Settlement for many Years farther than *Bonavist*; but 10 Years ago they sat down at *Greenpond* Island, and thus take up the N.E. and E. Part of the Country, as the French do the S. and S. W. the Natives living in the North. There are several fine Bays within the limits of the English Territory, as, *Bonavist*, *Trinity*, *Conception*, which stretch themselves towards the South West; *Torbay* and *Capelin* Bay, *St. John's* Harbour, the Bay of *Bulls*, *Fresh Water* Bay, and others: For there's no Shore in the World so well accommodated with Excellent Harbours. On the French side are the Bays *Trepassey*, *St. Mary's*, *Borrell* and *Placentia*, which extend their Arms towards the North. The Great Bay of *St. Peter* lies on the South West side of the Island 20 Leagues distant from the River of *Canada*. The Bottom of all the Bays meet within the Compass of a small Circuit, by which means the Communication from Bay to Bay is easy. There are abundance of other Bays round about the Western Shore, as far as the *Great Bay*, and many more between that and *Trinity* Bay, which lies in about 49 Deg. N. L. and is very commodiously situated to receive Shipping in bad Weather. It has Arms or Rivers, long and large enough for many hundred Sail of Ships to moor fast at Anchor, above a Mile from the Harbours Mouth. The Bay of *Flowers* near *Greenpond* is Dangerous for shelves. The Bay of *Trepassey*, which is the present Bounds of the English, Southward, lies in about 46 Deg. N. L. is a bold and safe Coast, and convenient for Ships in distress to touch at, passing to or from *Virginia*, *New England* or the *Bermudas* Isles.

The Climate is very hot in Summer and Cold in Winter; the Snow lies on the Ground 4 or 5 Months; and the English in the Northern Parts are forc'd to remove from the Harbours into the Woods, during that Season, for the convenience of Firing. There they build themselves Cabbins, and burn up all that Part of the Woods where they sit down. The next Winter they do the same by

by another, and to clear 'em as they go. The People at *St. John's* Town who do not remove, are put to great Streights for want of Firing. Wood, 'tis true, is very plentiful, but the Difficulty is to come at it, the Access to the Forests for Rocks and Snow being very troublesome, and sometimes impassable; and 'tis no small part of the Profits of the Under-Officers of the Garrison to let out their Men to fetch Wood. There's hardly any stirring out of the House for 3 Months in the Year. The Inhabitants have no Corn nor any other sort of Provision or Necessaries, (except Wild Fowl, Fish, and Venison) but what is sent them from *Europe*. The Island is full of Mountains and impracticable Forests; its Meadows are like Heaths, and are cover'd with a sort of Moss instead of Grass. The Soil is good for nothing, being a Mixture of Gravel, Sand and Stones. Thus says the Baron *La Hontan*, and several Gentlemen, whom I have consulted upon the matter, particularly *Capt. Francis*, a Man of Worth and Honour, who commanded there in the Year 1702. And yet *Mr. Guy*, *Capt. Whitburn*; and from them *Mr. Delaet* set it out as a Paradise, as fruitful as the Banks of the Nile. Without the Labour of Mens Hands, says *Capt. Whitburn*, the Earth produces great Plenty of Green Pease, Fitches and Haumes, and great Store of Hay may be made with little Labour. Strawberries, Raspberries, Bilberries, Pears, Cherries, Filberds, &c. are there in abundance; as also Flowers! And for Corn, the Ground is as apt to bear as the English Soil. I thought it might not be improper to shew the difference that there is in the account of the Soil giv'n by different Persons. *Mr. Guy* and *Capt. Whitburn* were; as one may perceive, willing the Island should be inhabited by the fair Description they gave of it, whereas 'tis in truth one of the most uncomfortable Places in the Universe for 6 Months in the Year, and not one of the most delightful for the other 6. We may see by this, that even Men of the best Judgment, as *Delaet* is thought to be, may err when they treat of things which they must take upon trust, and that we shou'd be cautious how we give Credit to those Authors who write of Plantations wherein they are themselves concern'd. As this Place is scarce tolerable

The Soil.

La Hontan.

*Æstate
sponte sua
non modo
Latissima
gramina sed
et varias
fruges
progeneret.
Delaet.
Whitburn.
p. 47.*

and.

The People, are put to good, 'tis true, to come at it, Snow being affable; and Under-Officers to fetch of the House-keepers have no Necessaries, but what is full of Moulds are, like Moss instead of being a Thus says the men, whom I particularly Capt. r, who com- yet Mr. Guy, Delaet set it s of the Nile. Capt. White- Green Pease, Hay may be Raspberries, &c. are there for Corn; the I thought the difference giv'n by dis- burn were; as should be in- of it, where- portable Places fear, and not s. We may Judgment, en they treat ust, and that edit to those rein they are arce tolerable

to

The History of Newfoundland.

II

to the English for the Seasons, so 'tis no less wretched in its Government, which is altogether as barbarous as that of their Fellow-Inhabitants the Indians.

They have no settled Governour: But in time of *The Government.* Peace, the first Master of a Ship that arrives there, who he commands a Bark but of 30 or 40 Tuns, is Chief Governour for that Fishing Season, by the Stile of, *Lord of the Harbour.* In time of War the Governour is more noble, for then 'tis lodg'd in the Commadore, or Commander of the Squadron who is sent thither to defend the Fishery. If there come but two or three Men of War, the eldest Captain is Governour of the Country as well as Admiral at Sea; if but a single Ship, the Commander has that honourable Office, and in the Absence of the Captains of the Men of War, and the Lord of the Harbour, the Captain of the Land Forces in the Fort of St. John's Town, is Governour by his Place; and both the one and the other are Lord Chancellors, and decide arbitrarily in all Cases. There's no need of much Law, for the Inhabitants have not much Land, and no Money. They truck with one another for what they want and have; and Breaches of the Peace, or taking away a Man's Goods without giving Truck, stealing of Nets or Fishing-Tackle, are the main Causes that come before the Governour for the time being, who summons the Criminal before him, and his Sentence is definitive. If 'tis the Land-Officer, he keeps 'em in awe by threatening 'em with a File of Musketeers; and as much as they are without Law and Lawyers, the want of them, for what I can hear, is one of their least Inconveniencies. If a Man commits murder, he is sent in Chains to England, and unless Witnesses are sent with him, which is expensive and not always possible, he takes his Trial at the *Old Baily*, is acquitted, and goes home again; as was the Case of a Person who was accus'd of Sodomy 3 or 4 years ago. As severe as the Climate is, it agrees very well with English Constitutions, and our Countrymen have generally been healthy there, except when they brought Diseases with them.

As for the Product of the Country, Fir and Spruce *Trees.* Trees are the most remarkable, being reckon'd as fit for Masts, as those of Norway. Pine and Birch-Trees are as big

Beasts.

big there as any where; and almost all sorts of Timber-Trees abound in the Island. As for Quadrupedes, Deer, Hares, Foxes, Squirrels, Wolves, Bears, Beavers and Otters, afford them Plenty of Food, Pleasure and Traffick; and may we believe Capt. White-born, the wild Beasts as well as the Natives, were to civil to the first Discoverers, that they never gave 'em the least molestation, or put 'em to much trouble to catch 'em.

Fish.

But such Stories as these, are of equal Credit with that of the Mermaid he pretended to see; and we shall not endeavour to impose either of 'em as Truth on our Readers: What's certain, is, That the Sea on this Coast is almost full of Fish; as Cod, the staple Commodity of the Country, Salmon, Herrings, Mackerel, Flounders, and an infinite Number of Tooks in the Rivers, which are not very broad or long, but there's plenty of them, and of Springs of good Water: Fowl for Food, and Game is to be met with every where of all sorts, and is the greatest Convenience in the Country; the Trade of which consists in the Fishery, one of the most beneficial in the World, and yet it has been miserably neglected. Does it not look something like a Paradox, that we who are Masters of the Sea, should not be Masters of Trade, and especially of that Trade which is by Right our own; and that the French, the meanest Nation in the World with respect to Commerce, considering their Advantages, should rival us in so considerable a Branch of our Traffick? 'Tis pity, we who have driv'n 'em out of the *Brigg* and the *Mediterranean* Seas, should not clear the *Atlantic* of 'em, and be entirely Masters of our own Fishery, which would be so advantageous to the Publick in general, and private Men in particular: For besides the Encouragement it gives to Navigation, the Seamen that it breeds, and the Trades that it maintains, it encreases the National Stock wonderfully; for let a Ship of 500 Tuns, Mann'd with 20 Hands make the Voyage with nothing but Victuals and Fishing-Tackle, she shall bring aboard worth of Fish to Market in a good Year; and that's a certain Gain to the Kingdom, as well as to private Men. The English and French seldom load less than 300 Ships a year, to

Trade.

France,

ports of Tim-
Quadrupedes,
Bears, Bees,
of Food, Plea-
ve Capt. *Whit-*
atives, were so
ey never gave
to much trou-
al Credit with
; and we shall
in as Truth on
at the Sea on
Cod, the Staple
on, Herrings,
te Number of
very broad or
of Springs of
ne is to be met
s the greatest
rade of which
ost beneficial in
ably neglected
rader, that we
t be Masters of
which is by
y the intensest
ommerce, con-
us in so consi-
Tis pity, we
and the *Atlan-*
Atlantic of
own Fishery,
Publick in get
for besides the
the Seamen
ntains, it en-
for let a Ship
ake the Voy-
ishing-Tackle,
Market in a
to the King-
English and
a year, to
France,

The History of Newfoundland

France, Portugal, Spain and Italy, with Cod and Pom. The Fishery
John: And if the former did rightly consider the vast
Advantages of this Trade, they would spare no Cost
to establish it on so firm a Foundation, that all the Na-
tions of Europe cou'd not hurt them in it. They would
think no Expence too great in building Forts, and
fortifying the Harbours, so that they may command
the Fishery in them: They would gladly be at the
charge of a Squadron of Men of War to protect our
own Fishers, and hinder others from fishing; and if
they always lay there, we might easily in a few years
engross the Trade to our selves, drive the French out
of the Island, and the Neighbouring Continent;
which, tho it may seem to be more easily projected
than 'tis to be effected, is a very feasible Design, and
what I doubt not the Wisdom of the Nation will take
into Consideration. Whenever this is brought to
pass, the Banks of *Newfoundland* will be more valua-
ble to the English, than the Mines of *Mexico* and *Peru*
to the Spaniards. Tho our Fishers seldom fish on the
Banks, but off their Harbours in Sloops, yet the
Great Bank and the others are so much talk'd of,
that 'twill be expected we should say something of 'em.

All these Banks are vast Heaps or Shoals of Sand, *The Banks:*
that lie along in the Ocean at several distances from
the Shore: The *Great Bank* is about 20 Leagues from
Cape de Raz, the nearest Point of Land to it; 'tis 300
Miles long, and 75 broad; the Sea that runs over it is
when 'tis Flood, several Fathom deep, and the largest
Ships may venture upon it without fear of striking, ex-
cept at a place call'd the *Virgins*, where 'tis thought
several Ships have been cast away, and the Men all
perish'd; for many passing that way have never been
heard of. The next Bank is *Verr-Bank*, about 20
Miles long, and 40 over where 'tis broadest: Then
Banquero-Bank lying in the shape of a Shoe, about
the bigness of the other; then the Shoals of *Sand-*
Island, *Whalebanks*; the Shoals of *Acadia*, *Mixma-*
Bank, and the Bank of the Islands in *St. Peter's Bay*:
Off these Banks, now almost wholly frequented by
the French, and on the Coasts, there have been 6 or
700 Sail of Ships fishing at a time. Round the *Great*
Bank, which is cover'd when the Sea is high, and dry
in some places at Ebb, there are 200 Fathom Wa-
ter

Low-
thorp's
Philos.
Transf.
Vol. III.
P. 592.

The Indi-
ans.

ter on all sides of it; and about it lie several small Islands call'd *Les Buchaloes*, of the Isles of Cod-fish; from the prodigious quantity of Cod there. The Fishing-season is from *Spring* to *September*: The 22th of *August* some years ago us'd to be the last day of the Season, and kept as a Holiday; but lately the Fishers stay longer; and whereas they us'd to sail before for *Portugal* and the *Seyles* in *September*, they now seldom sail till *October*; they fish always in the day-time, the Cod not biting by Night: Train Oil is drawn off the Livers of the Fish, which are thrown up in Heaps when the Cod is cur'd, and thence there drains off the Oil which comes from *Newfoundland*. The Sea off these Banks are sometimes render'd unsafe by floating Islands of Ice, which have been often met with hereabouts by Voyagers, particularly in *May*, 1688: a Gentleman homeward bound from *Virginia* to *England*, wrote, that he saw off of the Banks of *Newfoundland*, several prodigious floating Islands of Ice; the Master of the Ship, at the Gentleman's Request, sail'd as near one of 'em as he durst securely, and 'twas judg'd to be a full League in length, higher above Water than the Main-mast Top, and the Snow drove to and fro upon it, as on a large Plain; a great Flock of small black *Divers*, about the bigness of a *Feldysare*, came about the Ship a little before, but all of 'em left it, and betook themselves to the Island; this Gentleman perceiv'd about 30 of these Islands of Ice; and to the Northward they are larger and more numerous.

The Natives of this Island don't correspond much with the English, but the French have had some Dealings with them from *Canada*. They say they are a tractable People; and the English who have dealt with them say the same: They paint themselves, and are cloath'd with Stags-skins, all their Cloathing being an Apron of it round their Wastes; they are of small Stature, broad Face and breasted, without Beards, their Joints well knit, and their Limbs strong; they are crafty, great Pilferers, dextrous at making Kettles and Canoes; they believe in a God, which they say created all things; and Men and Women, by taking a number of Arrows and sticking them in the Ground, from whence they sprung up. One of their *Sagamores* being askt what he thought of our Religion and

and
Son,
yet
with
stition
Devil
Matt
many
each
ward
the G
as for
Singe
away
stark
Indian
those
speak
beside
who h
bont
have
depend
Indian
they v
ther,
of the
them.
We
Shore
of Fish
all Kir
French
War h
Revolu
began t
ther: I
and the
French
than th
will be
vents i
thither,
rememb

veral small
Cod-fish,
re. The
The 20th of
of the Sea-
fishers stay
for *Port*
seldom fail
-time, the
drawn off
p in Heaps
e drains off
The Sea
unsafe by
often met
y in May,
Virginia to
ks of New-
nds of Ice ;
it's Request,
y, and 'twas
higher above
Snow drove
great Flock
a Feldysare,
l of 'em left
this Gentle-
Ice; and to
e numerous.
pond much
some Deal-
ey are a tra-
e dealt with
ves, and are
thing being
are of small
out Beards,
rong; they
naking Ket-
which they
men, by ta-
hem in the
One of their
ur Religion
and

and the Trinity, answer'd, there was one God, one Son, one Mother, and the Sun, which were four, yet God was above all. Some of 'em converse visibly with the Devil, if we may give credit to the Superstition and Credulity of our Voyagers, and from the Devil receive Advice concerning their Wars and other Matters. Their young Women at Fifteen lie with as many Lovers as they please for 3 or 6 years, then each of 'em chooseth one for her Husband, and is afterwards very constant to him. They set their Dead in the Ground upright, with their Goods and Provisions as for a long Journey. They are great Dancers and Singers, and in their Dances the Women often throw away the little Covering they have, and frisk about stark naked. We might enlarge our Discourse on the Indians of *Newfoundland*, but they differ so little from those of the Continent, whom we shall frequently speak of, that 'tis needless to say more of 'em here; besides, by conversing with Merchants and others who have dwelt on the spot, and consulting them about the Character of the Natives given by such as have written before us, we find there is little to be depended on in their Relations concerning them; the Indians are either quite different now from what they were, when the first Discoverers came thither, or those Adventurers impos'd upon the belief of their Readers in the Description they gave of them.

We left the English in Possession of the Eastern *War* ^{between the} *Shore of Newfoundland*, and carrying on their Trade of Fishery peacefully and profitably, which continu'd ^{English and} *all King Charles and King James's Reigns*, but the ^{French.} *French* all that while grew upon them; and when the War broke out between *England* and *France* on the Revolution, the English and French in *Newfoundland* began to commit Acts of Hostility against one another: Both Nations were disturb'd in their Fishing, and their Settlements alternately destroy'd, but the French were more careful of preserving their own than the English, who were the greatest Sufferers, as will be seen in the following Pages. As to other Events in this Place from Sir *David Kirk's* coming thither, to the Late War, there were none worth remembling; and what can we expect of that nature

in

in the History of a Place so poor, and so void of Government?

After the Revolution, and the breaking out of the War, the English and French fell upon each other, as often as they had any opportunity of doing it with advantage. The English began first, and with 5 Men of War, the *St. Albans* a Third Rate Frigate, carrying 66 Guns, being Commanded, attack'd *Placencia*, but were oblig'd to retreat, the French having made better Preparations for their Reception than they expected; but the latter were more successful in their Attempts on the English, for in September, 1696. they came down upon our Harbours with 6 Men of War; the *Pelican*, *Diamond*, taken from the English, Count de *Thoulouse*, *Harcourt*, *Philip*, *Vendange*, and some Fire-ships and Gallies: Off *Cape Spear*, they came up with the *Saphire*-Frigate, Captain *Cleasby* Commander, to whom they gave Chase, but he got into the Bay of *Belle*, where he did all he could to fortify the Place in the little time he had to do it; the English who liv'd in that Harbour came to his Assistance, but on the approach of the French they all ran away. On the 11th of September, the whole French Squadron came down upon the *Saphire*, and fir'd with the utmost Fury; Captain *Cleasby* made a brave Defence for 2 hours, and hall'd most of the Ship's Guns on her side next the Enemy; the French at the same time made a Descent, and having driven the Men that were ashore into the Woods, attack'd the *Saphire* on all sides; the Captain finding 'twas impossible to maintain the Ship any longer, set her on fire, and retir'd with his Officers and 35 Men to the Woods. When the *Saphire* was on fire, 40 French Men came aboard, endeavouring to extinguish it, but they were all blown up into the Air as soon as the Fire reach'd the Powder Room; 100 more of the *Saphire*'s Crew getting ashore, made the best of their way towards *Ferryland*, but were intercepted and taken by the Enemy; Captain *Cleasby* and his Company reach'd that Harbour, where he did his utmost to defend the Settlement against the French, who came and attack'd it. The 21st of the same Month they landed 600 Men, who approach'd within Musket-shot very resolutely, and the English firing upon them with equal

and.

void of Go
ng out of the
n each other,
doing it with
d with; Men
rigat, carry-
d Placemine,
having made
than they ex-
elsful in their
ember, 1696.
ith 6 Men of
the English,
endunge, and
Spear, they
ptain Cleashy
e, but he got
he could to
had to do it;
r came to his
rench they all
the whole
Saphire, and
leashy made a
most of the
; the French
aving driven
ods, attack'd
inding 'twas
er, set her on
Men to the
; 40 French
xtinguish it,
asoon as the
re of the Sa-
best of their
recepted and
d his Compa-
his utmost to
e, who came
nth they lan-
kot-shot very
hem with e-
qual

The History of Newfoundland.

17

nal Resolution oblig'd them to halt; the French re-
turn'd their Fire, and sent a Trumpet to summon
them to surrender. Captain *Cleashy* seeing 'twas im-
possible for him to repel so many Men with so few,
came to a Treaty, and deliver'd up the Place, which
was not tenable: Himself, his Lieutenant, and his 33
Men, were made Prisoners of War, and sent to
France; from whence they return'd to England by
Exchange; and the French destroy'd that and all the
other English Settlements, except *St. John's*, *Bonavist*,
and *Carboneer* Harbours. King *William* being in-
form'd what Damage they had done to the English
Coast, and how they interrupted their Fishery upon
the Coast, order'd a Squadron of Men of War to be
Equip'd and Commanded by Admiral *Nevil*, and
1500 Men were put aboard under the Command of
Sir *John Gibson*, at present Deputy Governour of
Porsmouth. Admiral *Nevil* sail'd in the following
Year, and arriving at *Newfoundland*, the French im-
mediately abandon'd all the Places they had taken
from the English, on the South side of the Island.
Monsieur *Pointy* was at the same time on the Coast
with a Squadron of French Men of War, and Admi-
ral *Nevil* fell in with Him, but lost him in a
Fog. After this Sir *John Gibson* held a Council of
War, and the Sea-Officers assisting at it, 'twas de-
bated whither they shou'd persue *Pointy*: The latter
were for it; but the Land-Officers against it, *Pointy*
having more Ships than *Nevil*; and if the English
shou'd have had the worst of it, it had endanger'd the
loss of their Part of the Island. The Marquess *de*
Nesmond and Monsieur *Pointy* appear'd off *St. John's*
Harbour with 15 Men of War, a few days afterwards,
and Admiral *Nevil* had but 12 Ships of less Force in
the Bay. He immediately sent notice to Capt. *Drake*,
Commander of the *Sea-Horse*, in *Scabereen* Har-
bour, that the French were on the Coasts, and bad
him be upon his Guard; but the Enemy did not think
fit to attack ev'n that single Frigate, for fear of daring
the English to a Combat. Sir *John Gibson's* Men be-
ing very sickly, hinder'd his doing any thing consi-
derable by Land. He built a regular Fort at *St. John's*
Harbour, which he call'd Fort *William*, and left
Col. *Handaside*, the present Governour of *Jamaica*

1697.
Admiral
Nevil and
Sir John
Gibson
there.

1698.
Coll. Han-
daside Go-
vernour.

Commander there, with 60 Men; after which he return'd to England.

1699.

Captain
William
Lilburn
Governor.

In the following year, Captain Norris arriv'd at St. John's Harbour with a Squadron of Men of War; and had a Commission to be Governour at land also, Colonel *Handside* going for England soon after, Captain *William Lilburn* succeeded him in the Command of the Garrison in *Fort William*; but there being Peace with France, few Events worthy the Curiosity of the Reader happen'd in this Country; where the Fishery not being disturb'd, new Inhabitants came every year; inso much that the People doubled in 3 years time.

1700.

Captain
Humphry
Haven
Governor.

In the following year, Sir *Andrew Lake* arriv'd with a Squadron of Men; King *William*, notwithstanding it was a peaceable time, thinking the *Newfoundland* Trade of so much Importance, that 'twas worth the while to be at the yearly charge of a Squadron to defend it. This year Captain *Lilburn* resign'd his Command of the Garrison of *Fort William* to Captain *Humphry Haven*; who did not enjoy it long; for in the ensuing year, Captain *John Powel* was made Governor of the Fort: He was succeeded the next year by Colonel *Michael Richards*. This Gentleman being an excellent Ingeniour, made several Improvements at the Fort, added other Works, and so strengthen'd it, that 'tis a very regular Fortification, and one of the strongest in *America*.

1701.
Captain
John
Powel
Governor.

1702.
Colonel
Michael
Richards
Governor.

1703.
Captain
Th. Lloyd
Governor.

1704.
Captain
Joh. Moody
Governor.

1705.
Captain
Tho.
Lloyd
Governor.

And now the English and French began to commit new Acts of Hostility on each other. Sir *John Lake* arriving with a Squadron of Men of War, destroy'd 3 French Men of War, and 30 Merchant-men, in the Bay of St. Peter, where the English landed, attack'd, took, and raz'd the Fort. Colonel *Richards* returning to England, Captain *Thomas Lloyd* was made Governour of *Fort William* in the following year: and Captain *John Moody* had the same command in the next; Captain, now Major *Lloyd*, being then in England. In the ensuing year he return'd to *Newfoundland*; and his Government there: A fatal year was this to the English; the French invaded and destroy'd all their Settlements, burnt St. John's Town, and besieg'd the Fort with a 1000 Men; but the Garrison defended themselves with the utmost bravery for 3 Weeks together; during which time, the French held them in conti-

and, which he
 arriv'd at
 Men of War;
 at land also,
 after, Cap-
 the Command
 being Peace
 riosity of the
 the Fishery
 every year;
 3 years time.
 arriv'd with
 withstanding
Newfoundland
 'twas worth
 a Squadron to
 resign'd his
 am to Captain
 t long; for in
 was made Go-
 the next year
 gentleman being
 provements at
 strengthen'd it,
 and one of the
 an to commit
 Sir John Lake
 War, destroy'd
 nt-men, in the
 ded, attack'd,
 & returning to
 de Governour
 : and Captain
 in the next;
 en in *England*.
undland; and
 was this to the
 roy'd all their
 d besieg'd the
 rison defended
 or 3 Weeks to-
 n held them in
 conti-

continual play night and day, with Attacks and Alarms, and at last weary'd out with the vigorous Resistance they made, retir'd, carrying off half of the English Prisoners with them, the rest saving themselves, and the best of their Effects in the Fort: The French wanted Stores themselves; and if the Sloop they expected with Supplies had arriv'd, they intended to have attackt the Redoubt again, and have storm'd the Fort; boasting, if they had *St. John's* Town, they would keep all the Fishery to themselves. They threaten still a new Invasion, expecting Ships and more Troops at *Quebeck* from *France* for that purpose. They destroy'd all the Fishing-craft, and left none of the English Youth they could light on there when they went away, some they sent to *France*, who came to *England* by Exchange: Others, for want of being exchang'd, enter'd into the French Service; and some are Slaves at *Quebeck*. They have now at *Placentia*, a Governour, a Lieutenant-Governour, a Major, 3 Captains, and Subalterns answerable, 3 Companies of Soldiers, 1 Gunner, 1 Bombardier, 3 Sergeants, 10 Masons, and other Artificers, 500 Fighting-Men, besides 300 Indians and *Canadians*; and do their utmost to fortify themselves, so that they may secure their own Fishery, and destroy ours; which, if effected, would be a Loss to the Nation of 600000 *l.* a year; for so much it has clear'd by this Trade only. To defend themselves till Supplies come from *England*, the Inhabitants at *St. John's* Town have now built their Houses round the Fort, under the Command of the Cannon, for fear of any new Insult from the Enemy: Within the Palisadoes drawn round this new Town, they have also built a Church, whose Minister is the Reverend Mr. *John Jackson*: 'Tis not so big as that which was destroy'd by the French; who have not since made any further attempts on the English; and those that left their Harbours, are since return'd to them.

Rooke's
 Account,
 &c.

THE
HISTORY
OF
NEW-SCOTLAND,
From its DISCOVERY to the
present Times.

Its Discovery.

Nova Scotia is part of the *Terra Canadensis*; said to be first discover'd by some Bretons in the Reign of Lewis XII. but that was only *en passant*. Francis I. the French King, sent John Verazzan, whom we mention'd in the History of Newfoundland, to take possession of it in his Name. Verazzan landed in North Canada, and possess'd himself of the Country that lies beyond the River of St. Lawrence, which is now the French Canada: But of that part to the Southward of the River, he made little or no Discoveries; for soon after he landed in Acadia, or New-Scotland, the Savages surpriz'd and murder'd, and some say, eat him up. The English always took Acadia to be part of North Virginia; and indeed the first Virginia-Company thought all was their own, which shou'd be discover'd Northward, and was not planted by any other European Nation. Sebastian Cabot's having been there before the Bretons, or Verazzan, by the usual way of adjudging Right to the West-Indies, seem'd to give them the best Title to it. The Princes of Europe thought they might dispose of the Dominions of the Barbarians; and made no scruple of turning them out of their Dwellings,

lings, if their Subjects wou'd go so far to take their places. All those Countries that had no Inhabitants, were free to the first Comers: and the first that settled here were the English.

The Bounds of this Province are the *Atlantick O-Bounds*. cean to the North, Breton-Island and the Bay of St. Lawrence to the East; Canada to the West, and New-England to the South: It runs from 43 to 51 Degrees N. L. and from the River of St. Croix in Norembegua, to the great River of Canada; has almost 200 Leagues of Coast; but was never much inhabited by the Indians themselves.

When Sir Ferdinando Gorges was President of the New-England Company, considering the Extent of the Limits of their Charter, he propos'd to Sir William Alexander, one of the Secretaries of State for Scotland, and afterwards Earl of Sterling, to procure a particular Patent for the Land to the Northward of New-England, which Sir William, who was in favour with King James, easily obtain'd; and a Patent for this Country was granted him, bearing date September the 10th, 1621. The next year, Sir William and some others, whom he got to be concern'd with him, sent a Ship, with a Company aboard, to settle there, and plant: These Adventurers setting out too late, were forc'd to winter at Newfoundland. In 1623. They set sail, and made Cape Breton, a Promontory, on the Northern Shore of Breton-Island: They coasted it along, till they came to Port-Mouton, near Cape Sable in Acadia: Here they found three pleasant Harbours; and went ashore in one of them, The first which they call'd Luke's Bay: They sail'd up a great Voyage way in a large River, that had 8 Fathom Water at thisher, Ebb: On each side of it they beheld flowry Meadows, and a charming Prospect of green Hills, and shady Groves; or rather high Mountains, and thick Forests: The Fields were deckt with Roses red and white, and Lillies of a fragrant smell: They saw no body here; and their Curiosity being satisfy'd, they coasted along to the next Harbour, two Leagues off; Here they met with a broader and deeper River, and a more lovely Prospect than before: They perceiv'd the Situation was commodious for a Settlement, the Soil rich, stor'd with Fruit and Grain, and so natural: The Soil.

Produce.

ly dispos'd for strength, that it might easily be fortify'd. Gooseberries, Strawberries, Hurtleberries, grew there in abundance; as also Rye, Barley, and Wheat: But our Authors do not tell us who sow'd or planted them. From thence they sail'd to the next Harbour 12 Leagues off, and found the Country still the same, fruitful and beautiful: The Rivers were stor'd with Cod, and other Fish, great and small: There was also plenty of Fowl at land, as Wild-Geese, Black-Ducks, Woodcocks, Herons, Pigeons, and many sorts of Birds, the like to which they had never seen before. The Timber Trees were Oak, Firr, Spruce, Birch, and other Wood, for which they knew no Name: yet all these Temptations did not prevail with them to stay; They return'd to *England* the same year, and visited the Place no more.

Trees.

Thus the Plantation never came to any thing: and tho several Ships went thither to fish, and load Lumber from *England*, and several Parts of *America*, yet

1662.

*Seiz'd by
the French.*

neither the English nor the Scots ever perfected a Settlement; which gave the French an opportunity to seize the Country, and fortify themselves there at *Port Royal*, on the North side of *Funda Bay*, in 45 Deg. N. L.

1667.

The English had so little an opinion of this Territory, that they abandon'd it to the French by the Treaty of *Breda*, 1667. and made no attempt to dispossess those Intruders, till the late War; at which we the more wonder, because their Settlement was so near *New-England*, that in all cases of a Rupture, it lay convenient to incommode them: And besides, if the Description we have given of the Province from our own Authors, and what the French say of it be true, 'twas very well worth our while to put in our claim to it, and not give up our Right out of Complacency to the French: But 'twas done in a Reign that was more favourable to *France*, than we or our Posterity, I hope, shall ever find another.

*Monsieur
Deny's
description
Geographique &
Historique des
Costes de
l' Amerique Sep-
tentrionale.*

The People of *New-England* had such sentiments of the Neighbourhood of the French in *New-Scotland*, that they resolv'd to drive 'em out at their own charge: They had built a strong Fort at *Port-Royal*; where Monsieur *Meneval* presided as Governour: They had also several Plantations along the Coast; and drove a considerable Trade in Lumber, Fishing,

1690.

and

and.

ly be fortify'd.
es, grew there
Wheat: But
planted them.

Harbour 12
still the same,
ere stor'd with
: There was
Geese, Black-
, and many
never seen be-
Firr, Spruce,
they knew no
d not prevail
d to England
no more.

ay thing: and
nd load Lum-
America, yet
perfected a Set-
opportunity to
s there at Port
n 45 Deg.N.L.
n of this Ter-
French by the
p attempt to
Var; at which
ettlement was
a Rupture, it
nd besides, if
Province from
h say of it be
to put in our
out of Com-
ne in a Reign
han we or our
ner.

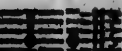
sentiments of
New-Scotland,
at their own
t Port-Royal;
Governour:
g the Coast;
ber, Fishing,
and

and Furrs; being increas'd to 8 or 7000 Souls; who,
in conjunction with their *Indian Allies*, were trouble-
some to the English about *Casco Bay*, and *Wells*, in
New-England: To rid themselves of this Enemy, the
Government of *New-England* sent Sir *William Phips* Sir W.
with 700 Men, and a convenient number of Ships, to Phips
dislodge them: Sir *William* sail'd from *Nantascot* on drives a-
the 28th of April, 1690. and on the 11th of May ar- way the
riv'd before *Port Royal*: Monsieur *Meneval* the Go- French.
vernour, surrender'd the Place after two or three days
resistance; and Sir *William Phips* took possession of it
in the Name of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, de-
molish'd the Fort, sent away the French Garrison, and
took an Oath of Allegiance to the King and Queen of
England, of the French that stay'd there; over whom
he plac'd a Governour. Sir *William* in his return
destroy'd another French Settlement at *St. John's Ri-
ver*, on the South side of *Funda Bay*. The English for
some time carry'd on a beneficial Traffick with the
Natives for Furrs; and Baron *La Montan* complains La Hon-
they under-fold the French, and took such measures, tan.
as he fear'd wou'd in time drive the latter quite out of
the Trade: But the French have since recover'd *Port They re-
Royal*, and their other places in *Nova Scotia*, which turn.
they call *Acady*; and the English now content
themselves with their old Title to the Country, with-
out any Endeavours to regain it.

'Twill be expected we should say something of the
Natives of *New-Scotland*, as well as of other Provin-
ces of *America*: Those that dwell about *Port Royal*,
were call'd the *Souriquois*, and were of a midling Sta-
ture, well-limb'd, tawny, black-hair'd, beardless, all, of the Na-
except their Rulers and Principal Men, the rest being tives.
oblig'd to pluck up their Beards by the roots; they
were dress'd like other Indians, wearing only a Cove-
ring over their Nudities: In Summer they liv'd upon
Fish, and upon Indian Corn in Winter, but did not
know how to make it into Bread, till they were
taught by the Europeans: They had no Form nor
Notion of Religion; their Conjurors whom they
call'd *Autmoins*, were their Priests and Doctors:
They consulted the Devil's Oracles, and receiv'd am-
biguous Answers, like the Greeks at *Delphos*: They
had certain *Tabagia*, or Festivals, at which they us'd

nd.

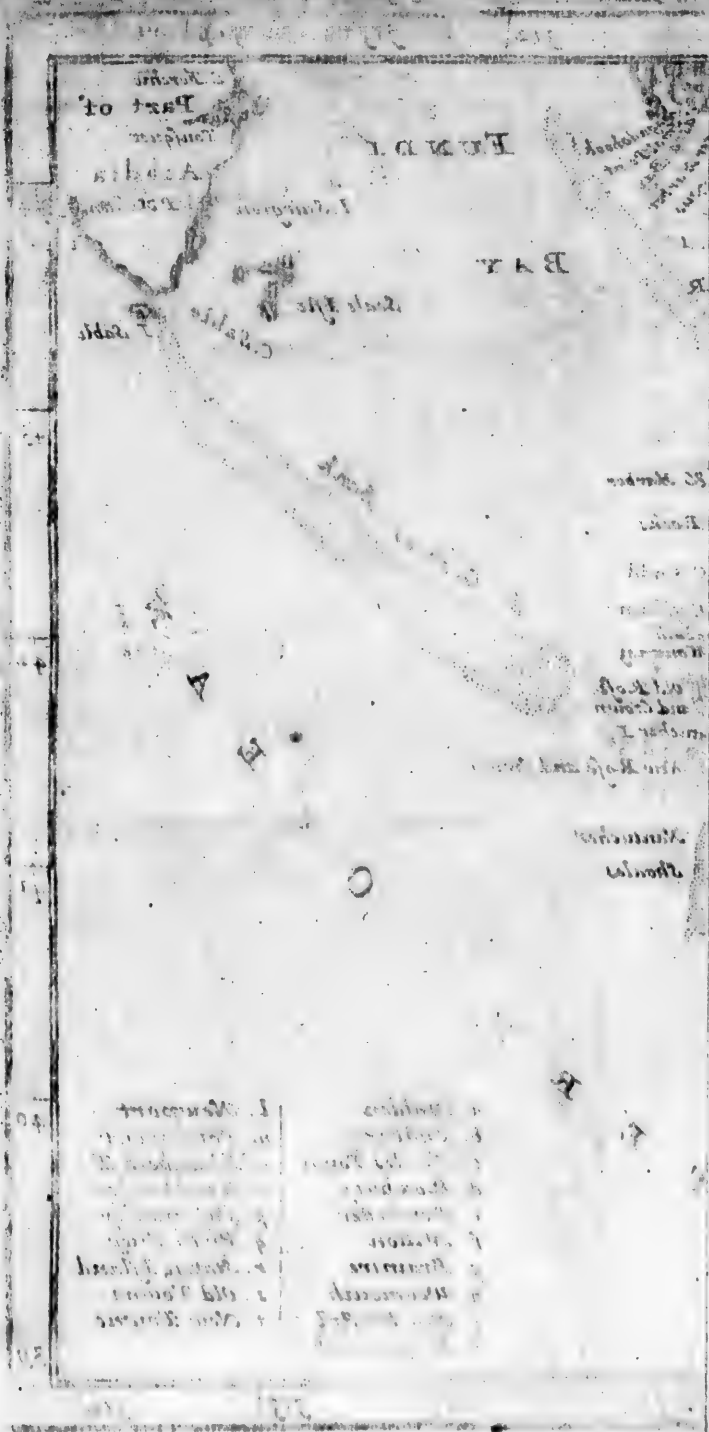
ve met with
we believe



Hau He He.

ed by all the
And the Au-
irms he often
sacred Canti-
nuine.

THE



NEW ENGLAND, NEW YORK, NEW JERSEY, and PENNSILVANIA &c.

By H. Moll Geographer.

0. 10. 20. 30.

6.

90

English Miles

PART OF

AMERICA

The Great
delinquency
Indian Port

PART OF

MARYLAND.







THE HISTORY OF NEW-ENGLAND.

CHAP. I.

Containing an Account of its Discovery, Settlement, Wars with the Indians and French, and all Events to the present Times.

THIS Province being part of the Continent which was discover'd by Sir *Walter Raleigh's* Servants, *Barlow* and *Amidas*; and by Queen *Elizabeth* call'd *Virginia*; we refer the Reader to the History of that Country for a further account of its Discovery. The first Man who landed here of our Nation, was Sir *Francis Drake*, returning from the *West-Indies*, in the year 1586. He stay'd two or three days on the Coast, and traded with the people for what he wanted. One of the Indian Kings submitted to Queen *Elizabeth*; a Submission which signify'd no more than a Courtiers Compliment. Captain *Barlow*, and such as sail'd to *Virginia* after him, generally went to South *Carolina*, and those who arriv'd on the Continent to the Southward of the Bay of *Chesapeake* which were all call'd South *Virginia*, as those to the Northward were North *Virginia*, for several Years.

1583.

its Discovery.

1586.

Cap.

Capt. Gosnold's Voyage.

1602.

Captain *Bartholomew Gosnold*, of whom we have had occasion to speak in the same History that we have mention'd above, was the first Englishman who made any considerable stay in this Country: He was very well treated by the Savages; and traded in the Latitude of 43. where he made land near *Piscataway* River; but not liking the Weather he met with there, he stood more to the Southward: He sail'd all Night, and next Morning found himself imbay'd within a mighty Head of Land, which Promontory he call'd *Cape Cod*, from the vast quantity of Cod-fish he took there; 'tis the Northern Point of *Plymouth* County: He also gave the name of *Martha's Vineyard*, and *Elizabeth-Island*, to two Islands lying to the Southward of the Cape, where some of his Crew made an Experiment how English Corn would grow; and before they went, they saw what they had sown come up very kindly.

First Proprietors.

1606.

Mr. Challons set out by them.

Captain Hanham.

Capt. Popham and Captain Gilbert.

The Reputation of this place, by the Character Captain *Gosnold* had given it, put some Gentlemen upon begging a Grant of it, (and this is the Charter we have mentioned in the above-cited History to be granted to *Thomas Hanham*, *Rawleigh Gilbert*, *William Parker*, *George Popham*, Esquires; and others of the Town of *Plimouth*, &c. to plant where they shall think fit and convenient, between 38 and 45 Degrees of Northern Latitude.) The Lord Chief Justice *Popham*, Sir *Ferdinando Gorges* Governour of *Plimouth*, and several other West-Country Gentlemen and Merchants were concern'd in this Company; who, in August 1606. set out a Ship for a Voyage to North Virginia: There were about 30 Men aboard; and the direction of the Affair was given to Mr. *Henry Challons*: who sail'd as far as the Spanish Isles; and falling in with a Fleet of Spaniards, was taken, and sent Prisoner to Spain, together with all his Companions; where he and they were barbarously treated. Tho the Adventurers were very much discourag'd by this ill Success, yet the Lord Chief Justice *Popham* quickly after sent out another Ship, commanded by Captain *Hanham*, one of the Pattentees; who made such Discoveries, as those who fell off before, resolv'd now to adventure again; and accordingly Captain *Popham*, and Captain *Gilbert*, two others of the Pattentees, were dispatch'd away

and.

The History of New-England.

27

from we have
that we have
man who made
He was very
traded in the
near *Piscataway*
met with there
ill'd all Night
ay'd within a
tory he call'd
d-fish he took
mouth County:
Vineyard, and
to the South-
Crew made an
d grow; and
ad sown come

Character Cap-
entlemen upon
ne Charter we
listory to be
Gilbert, William
s; and as he
where they shal
45 Degrees of
ustice *Popham*
mouth, and se
nd Merchants
ho, in August
orth *Virginia*
d the direction
Challons: who
lling in with a
ent Prisoner to
ns; where he
ho the Adven-
his ill Success
ckly after sent
tain *Hanham*
Discoveries, a
o adventure a
, and Captain
were dispatch'd
away

way with Two Ships, 100 Men, Ordnance, Stores,
and Provisions, for a Plantation. These Gentlemen
arriv'd there in the year 1608. and seated themselves
about the River of *Sagadahock* in *Norembegua*; At the
Mouth of which River, they built *St. George's Fort*:
but Captain *Popham* dying, and Captain *Gilbert* be-
ing oblig'd to return to *England*, to take possession of
an Estate which was fall'n to him by the Death of his
elder Brother Sir *John Gilbert*, at that time President
of the *North Virginia* Company, the new Plantation
was broken up, and the Planters re-imbark'd for *Eng-
land*. Things lay thus till the year 1611. and then
some of the Adventurers, who had more Courage than
the rest, and was loth to lose the Country, fitted out
two Ships, commanded by Captain *Hobson*, and Cap-
tain *Herly*, and accommodated with Men, Arms, Am-
munition, and Provisions, for a new Settlement: But
the *Hind* an Interloper, set the Savages against them
upon their Arrival; and the Indians assaulting them,
wounded many, tho they kill'd none. Captain *Hob-
son* perceiving 'twas to no purpose for him to stay
there, and coming thither to trade, and not to war,
will'd home again to *England*: However, notwith-
standing all these Discouragements, the Trade was so
beneficial by the Furrs, and other Commodities, that
were brought thence, that four Gentlemen, Captain
Lawden, Captain *Langham*, Mr. *Bully*, and Mr. *Skelton*,
set out two good Ships at their own charge, to make
peace with the Indians, and renew the Traffick: The
Command of the Ships, and the Management of the
Adventure, was given to Captain *John Smith*, who had
been President of the Colony at *South Virginia*, and
was famous for his Exploits there: The Captain being
come to the Coasts, fish'd for Cod, traded with the
inhabitants; and having only 8 Men in his Compa-
ny, landed, rang'd up and down, and survey'd the
Country. He made a very good Voyage; and put
500 l. in his Pocket: The Gentlemen on whose ac-
count he went, were also fully re-imburs'd their
Charges by the Produce of their Otter and Beaver
skins, Salt Fish, Train Oil, and other Commodi-
ties. He presented the Court of Managers of the
North Virginia Company, with a Draught of the
Country; and got it call'd by the Name of *New-Eng-
land*.

1608.

1611.

Captain
Hobson
and Cap-
tain Her-
ly.

Captain
John
Smith's
Adven-
tures.

1613.

Call'd
New-En-
gland.
land

1615.

Captain
Smith taken by the
French.

1616.

1618.

The occasi-
on of the
first Settle-
ment by
Mr. John
Robinson.

land in the year 1614. The Society upon this Success, immediately dispatch'd away 4 Ships, manning them with the same Men that had been with Captain Smith, who did not go this Voyage, and filling up their Compliment with others: These Ships made their Voyage in six Months, as the last had done, and return'd with a profitable Lading. The same year, Captain Smith sail'd with two Ships for *New-England*; and ill Weather breaking his Masts, he was forc'd to return to *Plimouth*: Whence, so eager was he for the Voyage, he put to Sea only with a Bark, and proceeding towards *New-England*, was taken by the French, and sent Prisoner into *France*: One of the Ships that was to have gone with him, arriv'd there; and came back with a good Cargo.

The next year, there went 8 Ships from *London* and *Plimouth*, which were loaden with Fish and Train Oil; and sold their Commodities at good Rates in *Spain*, and the *Canary* Islands. The year after, the Company sent no Ships thither; but in the following year two stout Ships sail'd from *Plimouth*; and made a prosperous and profitable Voyage in 5 Months. In the year ensuing, another Ship was sent to *New-England*; and the Adventurers succeeded so well, that every private Seaman had, clear of all Charges, 17*l.* to his share, in 6 Months time; as much as 30*l.* now; and as good as 5*l.* a Month, a Master's Pay. Thus the Trade to this Country went forward, but the Settlement was little thought of; till Mr. John Robinson and Mr. William Brewster (the former an Independent Minister, who was driven out of *England* in the Reign of King James I. for his Principles, and liv'd at *Leyden*), reviv'd the Enterprize: Mr. Brewster, and several English Families follow'd Mr. Robinson to *Holland*; where tho they had the Liberty of their Consciences, yet they found a great many Hardships and Inconveniencies; and thought by removing to *America*, they might not only have the same Liberty of Conscience, but more Opportunities of providing for their Families. King James, by Sir Robert Nanton, the Secretary of State's Mediation, consented to their transporting themselves thither. Sir Robert ask'd the King, That such a People might enjoy their Liberty of Conscience, under his Gracious Protection, in *America*; where they

would

land.

upon this Suc-
ships, manning
a with Captain
and filling up
se Ships made
had done, and
The same year,
New-England;
he was forc'd to
r was he for the
Bark, and pro
taken by the
se: One of the
, arriv'd there;

ps from London
Fish and Train
good Rates in
year after, the
in the following
outh; and made
3 Months. In
ent to New-Eng-
so well, that e
Charges, 17l. to
30 l. now; and
Pay. Thus the
but the Settle
John Robinson and
an Independant
and in the Reign
liv'd at Leyden
and several Eng
Holland; where
Consciences, ye
Inconvenienc
ica, they might
Conscience, but
r their Families
the Secretary o
eir transporting
the King, Th
of Conscience, w
ica; where they
would

would endeavour the Advancement of his Majesty's Do-
minions, and promote the Gospel. The King reply'd,
'Twas a good and honest Proposal. Mr. Brewster (for
Mr. Robinson did not live to go in Person) made an A-
greement with the Company for a large Tract of Land
in the South-West parts of New-England. He and his
Companions embark'd at Delft, and sail'd to Southamp-
ton; where they met another Ship, that went with
them, having several Dissenters aboard, who, quite
tir'd out with the Persecutions they met with, on ac-
count of their Non-conformity, were resolv'd to ac-
company them. They set sail the 5th of August, 1620. 1620.
and after a dangerous Voyage, fell in with Cape Cod
the 9th of November: They design'd to have sat down
upon Hudson River; but their Dutch Pilot had been
brib'd by the Hollanders to carry them more to the
Northward; the Dutch intending themselves to take
Possession of that part of the Continent, which they
did afterwards; and were lately dispossest'd by the
English, who call the Country New-York. Being
come upon the Coast they intended to possess, they re-
solv'd on a Form of Government before they landed,
and sign'd an Instrument as the Foundation of it;
Declaring themselves Subjects of the Crown of England,
Joining in a Body Politick, and solemnly engaging Sub-
mission and Obedience to the Laws, &c. that shou'd
from time to time be made for the Good of the Colony.
This was done on the 11th of November; after which
they chose Mr. John Carver to be their Governour: Mr. John
who sent 16 Men ashore to make Discoveries, and Carver
took out a convenient Seat for their Settlement: They
landed over against Rhode Island, in the Kingdom of
Patuxet; which Indian Nation had lately been de-
stroy'd by a Pestilence. The Savages, as they advanc'd
higher up within Land, fled from them; However,
they found some Indian Corn that was bury'd in the
Snow. They sent another Party of 30 Men, and a
third of 20, who had the same Success: The last were
surrounded by some Indians, who let fly a shower of
Arrows at them; but upon the English firing their
Pieces, they fled into the Woods, as the others had
done. They then took Boat, and sail'd, till they
came to a place which seem'd to be for their purpose:
The Land was high, and accomodated with pleasant
Fields

The first
Colony ar-
rive.

Mr. John
Carver
Governor.

Fields and Brooks; The Harbour was a Bay larger than *Cape Cod*; and two fine Islands, *Rhode Island*, and *Elizabeth Island*, in it. This Place was also so near *Cape Cod*, that it might be seen from an adjacent Hill.

Plymouth
Colony.

Here these Adventurers resolv'd to seat themselves; and accordingly began to build a Town on *Christmas-day*; which in 4 Months space they effected in some measure, and call'd it *Plymouth*. They had yet no Authority from *England* to confirm them in their Possessions; the Place being too far to the Northward of that which they had treated for: and till they were empower'd to proceed legally by Charter from the King, they agreed among themselves to chuse Rulers, who were, as near as possible, to govern them by the Laws of *England*. They saw no Indians all the Winter; but were severely afflicted by Sickness, which lessen'd their number from 150, to 50 Men. Early in the Spring, one of the Lords of the *Morattigen* Indians, who dwelt 5 days Journey from them, enter'd their Town alone, and bad them *Welcome* in English; for he had learnt a little of the Language by his conversing with those Traders that had been there before from *England*: Him they treated highly, and engag'd in their Interests; as they did *Massasoit*, the greatest King in all those parts, by the means of one *Squanto* an Indian, who had been in *England*: and tho he had no great cause to love them for the occasion of his being there, yet he was so well us'd, that he ever after had a friendship for the English: He had been spirited away by *Hunt* the Interloper, with Twenty Indians; whom that Traitor sold to the Spaniards for Slaves: *Squanto* afterwards made his escape into *England*; and was a Servant to one Mr. *Slany*; from whom, tho he had no reason but his love of Liberty to leave him, he got away to his own Country; and did very signal Services to our Nation: For he satisfy'd the Indians, who in revenge, had till then resolv'd to murder all the English who fell into their hands, that this *Hunt* was generally cry'd out against as a Villain, for what he had done. *Squanto* was more than ordinarily kind to the New Colony, serv'd them as an Interpreter, and as such accompany'd Mr. *Winstow* in his Ambassy to *Massasoit*, to confirm the Peace that King had

An Ambaf-
sy to the
Indian
King Ma-
safoit.

bassy to *Massasoit*, to confirm the Peace that King had
come

and:
 a Bay larger
 Rhode Island,
 was also fo
 from an adja

 at themselves;
 on Christmas
 fected in some
 had yet no
 them in their
 to the North
 e and till they
 Charter from
 s to chuse Ru
 o govern them
 Indians all the
 by Sickness,
 o, to 50 Men.
 of the *Moratis*
 y from them,
 em *Welcome* in
 e Language by
 had been there
 d highly, and
Massassoit, the
 e means of one
 land: and tho
 the occasion of
 l, that he ever
 He had been
 with Twenty
 e Spaniards for
 cape into Eng
 Slavy; from
 e of Liberty to
 ntry; and did
 he satisfy'd the
 esolv'd to mur
 ands, that this
 a Villain, for
 han ordinarily
 s an Interpre
 now in his Am
 that King had
 , come

come on purpose to conclude at *Plimouth Town*: Mr. *Winslow* had the honour to be lodg'd on the Royal Bed by *Massassoit* and his Queen; the King doing the same honour to two or three of his Grandees; which crouched the Ambassador so, that he did not at all like his lodging; besides, *Massassoit's* Court was so ill provided with Food, that Mr. *Winslow* was almost starv'd: However, this Friendship was the more desir'd, because the *Narragansetts*, a powerful Nation, had declared War with the Colony, and sent them an Ambassade of Defiance; which Mr. *Carver* return'd boldly, and somewhat check'd the Insolence of the Barbarians. The Governour dying in the first year of his Government, *William Bradford* Esq; was chosen to supply his place: He was a *Yorkshire* Gentleman, and one of those who came from *Holland*; from whence more Families arriv'd, as also others from *England*, before the end of the Summer: And now the People began to plant in the Fields about the Town, to clear the Woods, to enlarge their Bounds, and built a sort of Fort at *Plimouth*, to prevent any surprize from the *Narragansetts*. They were in great distress for want of Corn, till their own was fit to be gather'd; and that had like to have been spoil'd by a severe Drought, but there fell afterwards such refreshing Showers, as recover'd it; and the Settlement flourish'd and increas'd daily. In the mean while, they had no Patent from *England*: To get which, they employ'd a Person, who took it out in his own Name, and would have betray'd the Colony; but at last, after several unsuccessful Attempts to go thither, he resign'd it: And Mr. *Winslow*, the *New-England* Agent in *England*, procur'd one; which he took out in the name of the Governour, *William Bradford*, his Heirs, Associates, and Assigns: But when the Number of Freemen increas'd, the General Court desir'd him to surrender it into their hands; which he generously did. And thus the Province became a kind of Republick, by Patent from King *James I.* that Patent (reserving the Sovereignty to the Crown of *England*) enabled the People to choose a Governour, Council, and General Court, in manner of a Parliament; who should have full Power of Administration, Execution, &c. As will appear by the Laws, to which I refer the Reader. For want of a regular Chronology

William
Bradford
Esquire
Governor.

nology in this History, we are forc'd to ante-date some Events, and postpone others; but we have been as exact as possible; and sometimes shall do thus, on purpose to avoid breaking the thread of the Discourse. The People at *Plimouth* extended their Trade on all sides: And Mr. *Bradford* put to Sea in Person, to find out a Passage to the *Massachusetts* within the Shoals of *Cape Cod*; but he did not succeed in it; However, he went thither by Land to trade with them. He found the Nation in a sickly Condition, and in an ill Humour with the English, on account of some Losses they had suffer'd from a Colony that had planted themselves among them, under the Direction of Mr. *Weston*; who deserted that at *Plimouth*, and seated another small one at *Weymouth*, in *Suffolk County* in *Massachusetts*'s Bay. This Mr. *Weston*, and his Followers, dissenting from the Church of *New-England*, set up a Form of Worship in imitation of the *Anglican Church*; and 'twere to be wish'd, that they had taken care by their Lives to adorn the Doctrine they profess. On the contrary, They abus'd the Friendship of the Colony at *Plimouth*, and robb'd the Savages; and what was worst of all, they had enter'd into a sort of Partnership in some points of Trade with the *Plimouth* Colony, which seem'd to make them concern'd in their Robberies; and that render'd them suspected to the Indians. Mr. *Weston*'s Men spoil'd the Indian Trade, by the great Prices they gave for Furs and Corn. The Governour from this Nation return'd to *Nanset*, at the Bottom of *Cape Cod*, thence to *Mattachiest*, *Namasket*, and *Manomet*; where he got good store of Corn. The King of the last Nation, acknowleg'd the Sovereignty of King *James*. Mr. *Bradford* by these tarding Voyages plentifully supply'd his Friends, who had not Corn enough of their own Growth, to answer the consumption of the Colony. The next Person who was sent aboard on the like account, was Captain *Miles Standish*, who commanded the Militia of the Settlement; which by this time amounted to 4 or 500 Men effective: He went to *Mattachiest*, but was not as well us'd as the Governour, for the Savages pilfer'd his Baggage as they saw opportunity to do it: While he was at *Manomet*, another Indian Town, one *Wiwammet* a *Massachusetts* Indian, came to the King as an

Weymouth
built.

Cot. Mat.

An
into
as v
thi
was
his
Plin
tero
Ma
the
dole
the
This
Am
Mon
his f
faffoi
had
upon
at W
Lives
fions
the T
count
Mr. W
they
Matte
Capt.
Engli
they
them
Mr. S
as it
us'd h
He ha
he fell
'em, a
Am
on'd,
glis
ture.
Engli
Comb
sets to

ad.

ante-date
e have been
do thus, on
e Discourse.
Trade on all
son, to find
he Shoals of
; However,
them. He
and in an ill
some Losses
anted them-
a of Mr. We-
nd seated an-
nty in Mas-
is Followers,
and, set up a
ican Church;
aken care by
profest. On
o of the Colo-
; and what
a sort of Part-
Plymouth Co-
ern'd in their
pected to the
Indian Trade,
rs and Corn.
d to Nanfer,
attachiest, Na-
good store of
knowleg'd the
d by these tar-
ends, who had
to answer the
erson who was
Captain Miles
of the Settle-
4 or 500 Men
t was not as
ges pilfer'd his
it: While he
n, one Witu-
he King as an
Am.

Ambassador from that Nation, to desire him to enter into a League with them for the extirpating the English as well at *Plymouth* as at *Weymouth*. Capt. *Standish*, after this Man had had his Audience, perceiv'd his Usage was worse than before; so he got his Corn aboard his Sloop as fast as he could, and hasten'd back to *Plymouth*, having twice escap'd the Designs of a Trayterous Indian, imploy'd by the *Sachem*, or King of *Manomet*, to murder him. About this time *Massasoit*, the Colony's Ally, fell sick, and a Compliment of Condolence being in such Cases expected by the Kings of the Savages, Mr. *Winslow* was again sent to him to pay it. This Gentleman not only perform'd the Office of an Ambassador, but of a Phylician; and as bad as the Monarch was, some English Cordials restor'd him to his former Health. In return of which Kindness, *Massasoit* told him, the Conspiracy that the *Massachusetts* had form'd against the English, and advis'd him to fall upon them before they could execute it. The English at *Weymouth* were so insulted by them, that their Lives were precarious, the Savages taking the Provisions out of their very Fort, and threatening to cut the Throat of any Man that durst call them to account for it. These things being represented by Mr. *Winslow* and *Weston's* Men to the *Plymouth* Colony, they took it into Consideration how to proceed in the Matter; and in the mean time the Governour order'd Capt. *Standish* to go to *Weymouth*, and defend the English there against the Savages, notwithstanding they had by their Disorders brought this Danger upon themselves, and all their Countrymen. When Mr. *Standish* came among them, he found the *Indians* as it were Masters of that small Colony, and they us'd him as ill as they did the Inhabitants of *Weymouth*. He had but 8 Men under him; with whom however he fell upon the *Indians*, kill'd some of the Chief of 'em, and drove the rest to the Woods.

The Insultence of the Indians.

Chastis'd.

Among these *Indians* was *Witwamut* before-mention'd, a Bullying Barbarian, and an Enemy to the English; and one *Pecksnot*, a Fellow of Gygantick Stature. With these two, Capt. *Standish* and another Englishman fought, and kill'd them on the Spot in fair Combate. He Challeng'd the *Sachem* of the *Massachusetts* to decide the Controversy, the same way which

the Barbarian refus'd to do: And Mr. *Standish* having put new Life into *Weston's* Men, by his Example and Assistance, they fell upon the Indians, who fled from them with Terror and Precipitation at the noise of their Guns. These Indians were such as liv'd nearest *Weymouth* Settlement, and they giving the Allarm to the rest, the whole Nation was immediately up in Arms. At the approach of the English they dispersed; so Capt. *Standish* return'd in Triumph to *Plimouth*, carrying with him the Head of *Wituwamet*, which an Indian in that Town seeing, was so dejected, That being question'd upon it, he confess'd the *Massachusetts*, and the other Indian Nations in Alliance with them, designs against the English. This Savage they releas'd, and sent to the *Sachem* to let him know, That they were provided to receive him; and if he attempted any thing against the Peace of the King of *England's* Subjects at *Weymouth*, they wou'd severely revenge it. Upon which the King submitted, and beg'd Pardon. The Indians were not long after most of them destroy'd by a Plague, which made room for the English, who now inhabit the Country they then Possess'd. Both the Settlements were quiet, and so continu'd for 10 years, prospering under the wise Government of Mr. *Brauford*, a Gentleman of equal Piety and Learning, and as zealous for the good of the Colony, as if he had been their Common Father. The *Weymouth* Settlement lessen'd by degrees, as the *Plimouth* increas'd; and at last the People were forc'd to leave it, and remove either to the other at *Plimouth*, or return to *Old England*.

'Tis time we shou'd take some notice of Mr. *Brewster*, who was the next Founder of this Settlement to Mr. *Robinson*, and may indeed be reckon'd the first; because he came over, and liv'd and dy'd here. Tho he was a *Lay-Man*, yet, according to the Terms of their Religion, as a Ruling Elder he might teach and perform all the other Office of the Ministry, except dispensing the Sacraments, which he was not qualify'd by Ordination to do. So these *New-England* Men continu'd without a Pastor till the Year 1629; when Mr. *Ralph Smith* arriv'd from *England*, and took upon him the Government of the Church at *Plimouth*. With him came the first Black Cattle thither, which have

They submit.

1629.
Plimouth
Church
Founded.

have so multiply'd, that for many years this Colony has supply'd the Sugar-Islands with Provisions as much as any, or all the rest, or *Old England* it self. Mr. *Smith* prov'd to be a Man of very ill Morals; and for that, and his writing Home against the People of *New-England*, which the Governour discover'd by intercepted Letters, He was expell'd the Plantation.

While the Colony at *Plimouth* by their Planting, Fishing, and Traffick, were growing rich and numerous, several Worthy Persons, encourag'd by the Prospect of Advantage, and others animated by Zeal for the Propagation of Religion, resolv'd to make Settlements in other Parts of the Country. The chief of these was Mr. *White* Minister of *Dorchester*, who having engag'd several Gentlemen in the Design, they sent Mr. *Roger Conant* with some Men and Necessaries, to settle about Cape *Ann*, the Northern Promontory of *Massachusetts Bay*. Mr. *Conant* was soon weary of his Post and about to return, when he receiv'd encouraging Letters from Mr. *White*, assuring him, That he wou'd procure a Patent for him and his Companions, and seasonable Supplies of all things: Upon which he stay'd and look'd out for a more commodious Place to build a Town upon. Mr. *White*, as he had promis'd, by soliciting the Matter strenuously did it so effectually, That several of his Friends purchas'd of the *North Virginia Company*, call'd, The Council of *Plimouth*, that Part of *New England* which lies between the River *Merimack* and *Charles-River* in the bottom of *Massachusetts Bay*. The chief of these were, Sir *Henry Roswell*, Sir *John Young*, Sir *Richard Saltonstall*, *Isaac Johnson*, Esq; *Matthew Craddock*, Esq; *Theophilus Eaton*, Merchant, *Thomas Southcot*, Esq; and Mr. *John Ven*. They bought all the Company's Right and Interest, and obtain'd a Grant of the King, bearing Date in the Year

1628. To hold their Lands in Common Soccage as of the Manner of East-Greenwich, and an Assurance of Protection in their Liberty of Conscience, and for all such as should remove thither. Several of them accordingly went over with their Families, and carry'd with them as many as they cou'd engage to accompany them. Of these *Matthew Craddock*, Esq; was appointed Governour,

1628.
Massachu-
set Colony.
Matthew
Craddock,
Esq; Go-
vernour.

1629.
John Endicott, Esq;
Deputy
Governor.

nour, who seated himself at a Place call'd *Nahemkeik* by the Indians, to which these Non-conformists gave the Name of *Salem*, about 8 Miles Northward of *Boston* in the County of *Essex*. To them came Mr. *Higginson*, a *Lestershire* Minister, and Mr. *Skelton* a Minister of *Lincolnshire*, silenc'd for their not Conforming to the indifferent things impos'd on them by their Ecclesiastical Governours. And these drew so many Puritans after them, that *Salem* Colony in a little while began to Rival her Elder Sister *Plimouth*. Mr. *Higginson* was Chosen Minister of the Church at *Salem*, and Mr. *Skelton* his Associate. The former dy'd in about a Year, and his Son Mr. *John Higginson* succeeded him very young in the Ministry, and is Minister of *Salem* at this Day.

John Winthrop, Esq;
Governor.
Thomas Dudley, Esq;
Deputy Governor.

The Company of Adventurers in *England* finding their *Massachusetts* Colony thriv'd, and was likely to turn to a good Account, resolv'd to give it due Encouragement; and considering Mr. *Craddock* was grown old, and his Deputy *John Endicott*, Esq; not so fit for the Post as a Man of greater Quality and Interest would be; By Virtue of their Charter, which empower'd them to elect their own Governour, Deputy-Governour and Magistrates, they made *John Winthrop*, Esq; of *Groton* in *Suffolk*, Governour, and *Thomas Dudley*, Esq; of *Northampton*, Deputy Governour of the New Colony. To whom they sent with these Gentlemen large Supplies of Necessaries and about 1000 Persons transported themselves thither at this Time. Among whom were Sir *Richard Saltonstall*, *Theophilus Eaton*, *John Venn*, Esq; *Isaac Johnson*, Esq; and his Wife, the Lady *Arrabella Johnson*. They arriv'd in *New-England* in the following Year 1630. Mr. *Winthrop* entring upon the Exercise of his Office gain'd the Affection and Esteem of every Body; and the easiness of his Government, the Success of his Councils, and the Piety of his Life, invited many more Families to retreat thither from the rage of their Persecutors, who are an eternal Shame to the Purity of our Holy Religion, and the Christian Temper of a true Church of *England-Spirit*. The Head of these Furious Zealots, was the Head of the Church at that time, Archbishop *Laud*. To whom *New-England* was as much oblig'd, as *Old England* was dis-

oblig'd

blig'd by him; for his obstinate Severity drove so many thousands out of *England* thither, for Liberty of Conscience, that he was himself forc'd to complain of it to the King, and desire some restraint might be put upon their absenting the Kingdom. Since his Spiritual Sword cou'd not reach 'em in *America*, he resolv'd to hold them within the length of his Arm, as will be seen hereafter.

To disturb the Peace of this Gentleman, Mr. Winthrop, and his Colony, He summon'd one Mr. Cleaves before the King, in hopes to get some Accusation from him against the Country. Mr. Cleaves gave such an Account of the Governour's laudable Carriage in all respects, that his Majesty express'd himself highly pleas'd with him. Cot. Math.

The *Massachusetts* Settlement had now built several Towns, as *Charles-Town*, on *Charles River* in *Middlesex* County, where there was a Church erected, and Mr. *Wilson* an outed Minister of *Sudbury* in *Suffolk*, chosen Pastor of it, *Dorchester* in *Suffolk* County, and *Boston*, which rose out of the Ruins, if we may use the Expression, of *Charles-Town*. That Town being not thought so Commodious for Trade as *Boston*, many of the Inhabitants remov'd thither, as did the Minister Mr. *Wilson*. This Place flourish'd so much, that in a little Time it became the Capital of *Massachusetts* Colony, and of all *New-England*. After *Boston*, *Roxbury* in *Suffolk* County was built, and then *Lynn* in *Essex* County, *Water-Town* in *Middlesex* County; all these were finish'd and settled in less than two years, and the Plantation went on so prosperously by the Multitudes of People who came over, that some of them were forc'd to remove to other Parts of the Country.

The first who broke up from *Massachusetts* Colony, was Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, Minister of *Cambridge*, who seated himself at a Place on *Connecticut* River, where He built the Town of *Hartford* in the County, from thence call'd *Hartford-County*. From *Dorchester* several Families remov'd to the Place now call'd *Windsor*, in the same County of *Hartford*. From *Water-Town* several went and settled on the place where *Weathers-Field* now stands, as they did from *Roxbury* to *Spring-Field*. This New Settlement had a sort of Commissi-

1635.

Edward
Hopkins
Esq; Go-
vernour.

J. Haynes
Esq; Go-
vernour.

on for what they did from that of *Massachusetts*; but finding they had extended their Discoveries far beyond the Limits of that Colony, they set up an independant Government of their own, founding it on a League or Agreement among themselves, became a Body Politick, made necessary Laws and Orders, chose proper Officers to execute them, and *Edward Hopkins* Esquire to be their Governour. This Gentleman return'd afterwards to *England*, was made Warden of the Fleet, one of the Commissioners of the Admiralty, and chosen a Member of Parliament during the Protectorate of *Cromwel*. But many years before he left *New-England*, he was every other year chosen Governour of *Connecticut* Colony. The Man who had always the Alternate with him, being *John Haynes* Esquire. This Settlement was scarce well fix'd; before *George Fenwick* Esquire, was sent to *New-England*, on account of several Persons of Quality, who had bought of the Lord *Say*, and the Lord *Brook*, some Lands on the River which ran thro' *Connecticut* Colony. Mr. *Fenwick* seated himself at the Mouth of the River; and built the Town call'd *Saybrook*. The Lord *Say* and *Brook's* Title to that Territory, was by a Grant from the Earl of *Warwick*, to whom the King had given it. *John Winthrop Jun.* Esquire, assisted him in this Undertaking; and had himself thoughts of planting there: To which end, he got a Grant of these Lords for some Lands; but being unwilling to hinder the new Colony, he made no use of his Grant. In consideration of which, he was chosen their Governour after the Restoration. The *Connecticut* Colony thinking, that by purchasing this Ground, their Right to the Land they had seiz'd without any Grant wou'd be the stronger, bought it of Mr. *Fenwick* by Consent of the Proprietors; that Gentleman having but begun his Plantation, and not finding sufficient Encouragement to finish it. With this shadow of a Constitution they continu'd till after the King's Restoration; and then they procur'd a Charter from the Crown; upon which they chose *John Winthrop* Esquire, Son of Mr. *Winthrop* Governour of *Massachusetts*, to be their Governour.

Two years after the settling the Colony at *Connecticut*, Mr. *Theophilus Eaton*, and Mr. *Davenport* a Minister,

achusetts; but
series far be-
up an inde-
ding it on a
s, became a
nd Orders,
and Edward

This Gen-
was made
millioners of
Parliament
many years
every other
colony. The
him, being
was scarce
was sent to
ns of Quali-
nd the Lord
thro' Con-
mself at the
n call'd Say-
that Terri-
Warwick, to
Winthrop Jun.
g; and had
which end,
Lands; but
y, he made
f which, he
Restoration.
y purchasing
ey had seiz'd
r, bought it
etors; that
on, and not
h it. With
u'd till after
procur'd a
they chose
Winthrop Gover-

ur.
at Connecti-
port a Mini-
ster,

ster, hearing of another Bay to the South-west of *Connecticut*, and expecting more Families to follow them from *England*, purchas'd of the Proprietors, all the Land that lay between them and *Hudson's River*, which divides the Southern parts of *New-England* from *New-York*; and remov'd thither in the year 1637. where they seated themselves in a pleasant Bay; and built *New-haven*, which gave name to the Colony. *New-Haven*, *Guildford*, *Milford*, *Stamford*, and *Brainford*. Tho they had a Right to the Lands by purchase, they had none to a particular Government; yet they form'd themselves, by mutual Agreement, into a Body Politick. These Men who settled here, were generally *Londoners* and Merchants; and apply'd themselves at first to Trade; choosing Mr. *Eaton*, who had been bred a Turkey Merchant, for their Governour: But they met with so many Losses, that they were discourag'd in their Traffick, and were going to transport themselves to *Maryland*, *Jamaica*, or *Ireland*; where the Parliament had offer'd 'em the City of *Gallway* for their Dwelling, with large Privileges: At last turning their Industry to Husbandry, they thriv'd wonderfully, and thought no more of removing. Mr. *Eaton* dying in the year 1657. was succeeded by *Francis Newman*, Esquire, and *William Leet*, Esquire, who was Governour of the Colony when Mr. *Winthrop* procur'd a Charter from K. *Charles II.* for settling the Liberties of this Plantation on a solid Foundation, and annexing it to *Connecticut*; which was done in the year 1664. Upon this Union the Colonies chose *John Winthrop Jun.* Esquire, to be their Governour, and Mr. *Leet* their Deputy Governour.

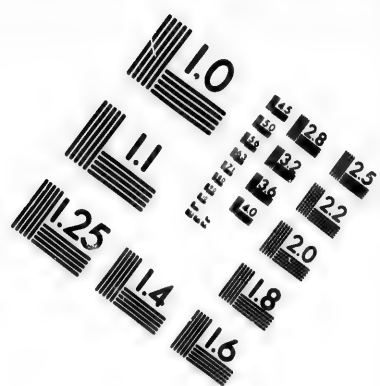
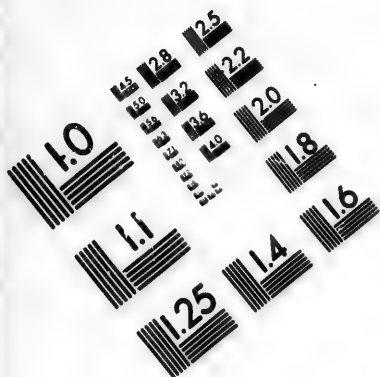
Thus we have given the Reader a short History of the Rise of the four Settlements that were made in *New-England*: We have divided them into their separate Governments; and taken notice of their most remarkable Occurrences: We shall now proceed in our History more generally; and treat of those Facts that related to all the Colonies, as they went under the general Denomination of *New-England*.

The *Plymouth* Colony was still govern'd by Mr. *Bradford*; and carry'd on their Trade and Planting with Success: The same did *Massachusetts's* Settlement, under the Government of Mr. *Winthrop* the Elder.

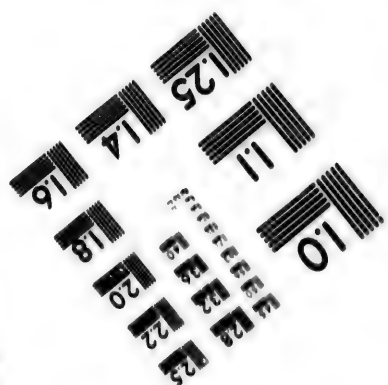
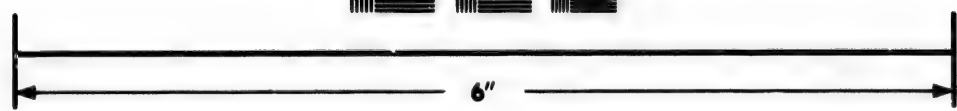
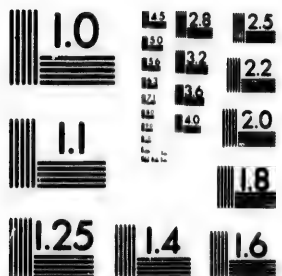
Theophilus Esq; Governour.

1657: Francis Newman Esq; Governour. William Leet Esq; Governor. Connecticut and New-haven Colonies join'd. John Winthrop Esquire Governor. William Leet Esq; Dep.





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

14 28
16 32
18 36
20 40
22 44
24 48
26 52
28 56
30 60
32 64
34 68
36 72
38 76
40 80
42 84
44 88
46 92
48 96
50 100
52 104
54 108
56 112
58 116
60 120
62 124
64 128
66 132
68 136
70 140
72 144
74 148
76 152
78 156
80 160
82 164
84 168
86 172
88 176
90 180
92 184
94 188
96 192
98 196
100 200

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100

Wth with
the Indi-
ans.

The Indians were quiet, and nothing molested them in their Proceedings, till in the year 1634, the Savages fell upon Capt. Stone, who was sailing up *Connecticut* River, murder'd him, and 6 Men that were with him, and sunk the Bark they were in. They also murder'd a Ship's Crew who were thrown upon *Long Island*. These Insolencies occasion'd the Governour and Council of *Massachusetts* Colony, to send out 120 Men, commanded by Captain *Endicot*, Captain *Underhill*, and Captain *Turner*, to demand the Murderers; whom the Indians refusing to surrender, the English destroy'd their Country, and drove the Barbarians to the Woods. The *Pequots* (a Nation inhabiting the *Connecticut* Country) were very troublesome to the Settlement, kill'd nine Men, and took two young Women, near *Weathers Field*. Upon which Mr. *John Mason* with 90 Men, Captain *Underhill* with the Garrison of *Saybrook*, consisting of 20 Men, and Captain *Patrick* with 40 Men from *Boston*, were dispatch'd away to subdue them, and clear the Colony of them. Captain *Mason* and Captain *Underhill* entering the Territories of the *Narragansetts*, their King retir'd to a Fort which he thought impregnable, with 5 or 600 Men, but the English attackt it with great Resolution, and took it by storm the 20th of May 1637. putting all the Savages to the Sword, except 8 Men who made their escape. *Weymash* an Indian Convert, did the English great service in this Expedition, following them where-ever they went in their Wars. *Sassacus*, the chief Prince of the Barbarians, threaten'd to be severely reveng'd on the English for this loss, and accordingly made mighty Preparations to invade them; but Captain *Patrick*, and soon after Captain *Stoughton*, with a Reinforcement from *Massachusetts* Colony, arriving, the Savage shut himself up in his Fort, and the English made several hundreds of the Indians Prisoners. They also put many hundreds to the Sword, and forc'd *Sassacus* to fly to the *Maquas*, a Nation the most dreaded of any of the Indians, being said to be Man-Eaters; but these Barbarians were unwilling to bring the War into their Country; So they cut the King and all the *Pequots* that accompany'd him in pieces. The *Narragansetts* and the other Indian Nations, submitted on the Suc-

cess

nd.
sted them in
Savages fell
ctic River;
m, and sunk
Ship's Crew
e Insolencies
of *Massachu-*
nmand by
nd Captain
the Indians
troy'd their
the Woods.
Eticut Coun-
ment, kill'd
, near *Wen-*
son with 90
sion of *Say-*
tain *Patrick*
h'd away to
them. Cap-
g the Terri-
retir'd to a
with 5 or 600
great Resolu-
of *May* 1637.
except 8 Men
Indian Con-
his Expediti-
vent in their
e Barbarians,
e English for
Preparations
nd soon after
t from *Massa-*
ut himself up
eral hundreds
t many hun-
tus to fly to
aded of any
Eaters; but
the War into
all the *Pequot*
Narragansett
d on the Suc-
cess

cess of the English, who in this Expedition kill'd near 1000 Men, took almost as many, and cut off no less than 13 of their Petty Kings. The Savages to gain the favour of the English, murder'd the *Pequot*; where- ever they met with them, and sent their Heads to the Christians; who having thus chastis'd the Barbarians, struck 'em into such a Consternation, that they were quiet for Forty years afterwards. Indeed the Power of the English began to grow formidable. The *Massa- chuset* Colony had a strong Militia of near 2000 Men, commanded by their Deputy Governour Mr. *Dudley*, with the Character of Major General. Their Civil Government was well regulated, and all things going on happily among themselves, they were not afraid of any Irruptions from the Barbarians. In the year 1638. there was a terrible Earthquake felt all over *New-England*, and the Peace of the Colo- ny had like to have been disturb'd by a Faction that grew to a great height among them. These Persons favour'd those whom the *Presbyterians* call'd Sectaries; by which, according to their modest way of expressing themselves, is to be understood Men of all Religions but their own. The *Presbyterians* *Divisions* were for rigid Conformity to their Worship. Mr. *Winthrop* the Governour, opposing this Faction, they *in New-England*. oppos'd him; and when the time of electing a new Governour came, set up Mr. *Tho. Dudley*, the Deputy Governour, against him, got him chosen; And in the following year, when Mr. *Winthrop* was restor'd to his Government, would have prevented it. The Court of Election, for fear of a Tumult, was remov'd from *Boston* to *Cambridge*: The Sectaries intended to confound the Choice, by desiring the *General Court* to take a Petition they had presented them into Consideration that day; which if it had been granted, the time for choosing a new Governour had elaps'd, and the Faction had kept their own Governour in a year longer. Mr. *Winthrop's* Friends did not presently see into the Deceit of their Opponents, and were going to consider the Merits of their Petition; but Mr. *Winthrop* strenuously opposing that Irregularity, procur'd the Election to be carry'd on according to the custom of the Court; and notwithstanding the violent Opposition of the Faction, he was chosen Governour by

by a great Majority of Voices; yet so Powerful was the Party, and they so aw'd the Officers, whose Duty 'twas to wait upon the Governour, that they refus'd to attend him, and laid down their Halberds: Mr. *Winthrop*, instead of punishing the Serjeants for their Insolence, order'd his own Servants to take them up, and wou'd not suffer the Magistrates to punish the Offenders. The *Antinomian* and *Familistical* Factions were the most Rampant, and these he was very Instrumental in suppressing, by getting an Order past for banishing the Chief of them: Himself pronounc'd the Sentence of Banishment, and their Friends, who cou'd not call him to account as Governour, did it as he was a Member of the Church, and oblig'd him to vindicate himself before the Congregation, which he condescended to do, and was justify'd by them. These Heats had like to have spread as far as *Plimouth*, and have created a difference between the two Colonies; but Mr. *Winthrop's* Moderation triumph'd over all Difficulties, and preserv'd the Peace of the Settlements.

People hinder'd from going to New-England.

1637.

The Troubles of the Dissenters continuing at home, Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Sir *William Constable*, Sir *Arthur Haslerig*, *John Hampden*, Esq; *Oliver Cromwell*, Esq; Names too well known in the Histories of England, and several other Gentlemen, were preparing to remove to *New-England*; at which both the Church and State were alarm'd; and on the 30th of April, a Proclamation was issu'd forth, to restrain the disorderly transporting his Majesty's Subjects to the Plantations, without a Licence from his Majesty's Commissioners: And an Order was made in Council, That the Lord Treasurer of England, should take speedy and effectual Course to stop eight Ships in the River of Thames, bound for *New-England*, and command that all the Passengers and Provisions should be landed. All Unconformable Ministers were also to be stopp'd; which proceeding, says a Doctor of our Church, increas'd the Murmurs and Complaints of the People thus restrain'd, and rais'd the Cries of a double Persecution; to be vex'd at home, and not suffer'd to seek Peace or Refuge abroad. 'Tis true, the vast Numbers of People that transported themselves to *America*, if it did not make the Government jealous that they might throw off their Dependance on the Crown, as well as on the Church, yet it cou'd not but give an

Powerful was
 whose Duty
 they refus'd
 Mr. Win-
 for their In-
 hem up, and
 sh the Offen-
 sions were the
 Instrumental
 for banishing
 the Sentence
 cou'd not call
 as he was a
 e to vindicate
 e condescend-
 ese Heats had
 nd have crea-
 colonies; but
 ver all Diffi-
 tlements.
 ing at home,
 ble, Sir Ar-
 Cromwell, Esq;
 f England, and
 to remove to
 ch and State
 ril, a Procla-
 disorderly tran-
 sitions, without
 e And an Or-
 d Treasurer of
 Course to Rep-
 for New-En-
 ts and Provisi-
 nisters were
 ys a Doctor
 nd Complaints
 he Cries of a
 nd not suffer'd
 he vast Num-
 es to Ameri-
 jealous that
 the Crown,
 not but give
 an

an ill Idea of that Clemency to which it pretended,
 and which is the distinguishing Character of Christi-
 an Rulers. Sir Henry Vane, jun. with near twenty, *Sir Henry*
 Sail of Ships in his Company, visited *New-England* Vane, jun.
 about this time, and was Chosen Governour of *Massa- Governor.*
chusetts Colony. He went over by the King's Consent,
 and his Majesty commanded Old Sir Henry, who
 was against the Voyage, to give him The young
 Gentleman design'd to reside in *Cornetticut* Colony;
 but the Compliment past upon him by that of *Massa-
chusetts*, alter'd his Resolution. He became here a
 more rigid Non-conformist than he was before; and
 when he return'd to *England*, was so active against
 the Royal Family, that it cost him his Head, in the
 Year 1662. The Plantation of *New-England* en-
 creas'd so in a few Years, That *Anno 1640*. There
 were 4000 Men there, besides Women and Children.
 They had out-stripp'd all the other English Settlem-
 ments in *America*, and probably wou'd have grown
 still more numerous, had not the Civil War in *En-
gland* broke out, and put a stop to Peoples removing
 in such Multitudes till after the Restoration. The
 Colonies were often misrepresented by their Enemies,
 who had driven them out of *England*, as a Factious,
 Schismatical Company of Persons, who wou'd in time
 endanger the State: Tho' those were distant and Chi-
 merical Views, yet they had like to have ruin'd the
 Plantations in *New-England* in King Charles the First's
 Opinion, had not Mr. Winslow of *Plimouth* Colony
 undertaken their Defence: And accordingly he went
 to *England*, vindicated them at the Council-Board,
 and wip'd off those ill Impressions, which the Go-
 vernment had receiv'd of them from their implacable
 Adversaries. For which Service, when he return'd,
 the Colony of *Plimouth* chose him their Gover-
 nour; whose Presence being again necessary in *En-
gland*, Mr. Bradford was restor'd to his Government,
 and Mr. Winslow went again to Court, where he was
 employ'd by the Powers then in being, and never re-
 turn'd to *New-England*; but he did them all the good
 Offices he cou'd by soliciting their Affairs. Tho' these
 Settlements were separate Jurisdictions, yet they were
 like the *United Provinces*, confederated into one League
 for the Common Good of them all: which Confede-
 racy

racy after several fruitless Essays to bring it about, was effected in the Year 1643. and they became in *The Colonies united.* Fast as well as Name the *United Colonies*; they Form'd and Sign'd an Instrument, declaring, *That they all came into those Parts of America with the same End and Aim, to advance the Christian Religion, and enjoy the Liberty of their Consciences with Purity and Peace.* It was firmly agreed between the four Settlements, that there shou'd yearly be chosen two Commissioners out of each, who shou'd meet at fit Places appointed on purpose, with full Powers from the General Courts in each Colony, to concert and conclude Matters of General Concernment: As Peace or War, or any thing relating to the Welfare of the Confederacy. Thus they settled their Polity or Civil Government, and by Synods of their Clergy; they did the same by their Ecclesiastical declaring, *That the Church ought to be govern'd by Presbyters, Elders, &c.* as will elsewhere be shown more largely. They began very early to Found a Colledge at *Cambridge*, before call'd *New-Town*, where they establish'd a University: Which was begun about the Year 1630. when Mr. *John Harvard* Minister of *Charles-Town* near *Boston*, dying, left almost 800 l. to be laid out in carrying on the Design, and he is look'd upon as the *Founder* of the First Colledge, which from him was call'd *Harvard-College*. The Foundation was incorporated by the *General Court*, An. 1640, and the University has since flourish'd so much, that there is now another Colledge built, and 2 or 300 Students. We shall treat further of the *New-England* Accademy in the following Chapters.

Mr. John
Harvard
Founds
Harvard-
College.

The People of this Province applying themselves most by Husbandry, Tillage and Pasture; their Trade consisted chiefly in Corn and Beef, which they exported to the *Sugar-Islands*; In Fish, which they sent thither and to the *Straits*; In Oil and Lumber, which they Shipp'd to all the Places where they had any Commerce. Their Lumber is Timber, Boards, Masts, Pipe-staves, Hoops, all good Commodities in the *West-Indies*. They also fell to building of Ships, which Trade has so encreas'd, that it has been a Common Thing for the Merchants of *London* to have Ships built at *Boston*, and other Parts of *New-England*, for the *West-India* Trade; and there have been more Ships built

ring it about,
 ey became in
 ; they Form'd
That they all
the same End
z, and enjoy the
and Peace. It
 tlements, that
 missioners out
 ounted on pur-
 Courts in each
 ers of General
 thing relating
 us they settl'd
 by Synods of
 Ecclesiastical
 vern'd by Pres-
 e shown more
 Found a Col-
 Town, where
 h was begun
 Harvard Mini-
 g, left almost
 e Design, and
 First College,
 College. The
 ural Court, An-
 ish'd so much,
 uilt, and 2 or
 of the New-
 apters.
 ng themselves
 asture ; their
 f, which they
 h, which they
 and Lumber,
 here they had
 mber, Boards,
 mmodities in
 ing of Ships,
 is been a Com-
 o have Ships
 ngland, for the
 ore Ships built
 in

The History of New-England.

48

in New-England, than in all the other Provinces of *America*, subject to the Crown of *England*. The Colony of *Massachusetts* thriv'd more than the other three, and therefore we shall be the more particular in its History.

In the Year 1645. Mr. *Dudley* was again chosen Governour, and Mr. *Winthrop* was his Deputy. At which time there happen'd a sort of Tumult in the Town of *Hingham* in *Suffolk* County, whither Mr. *Winthrop* went to appease the Mutiny, by interposing his Authority : Upon which the Seditious petition'd the *General Court* against him, as invading their Liberties, and he was forc'd to leave the Bench, and stand forth as an accus'd Person, to defend himself ; which, waving his Prerogative, he did, and was acquitted by the Court ; but his Prosecutors were severely fin'd. *John Endicot*, Esq ; was now Major General of the Forces, and *William Burgis*, Esq ; Secretary. Mr. *Winthrop* in the following Year re-assum'd the Place of Chief Governour, and so continu'd till his Death. Mr. *Bradford* govern'd the *Plimouth* Colony also thirty seven Years except three Years, in which Mr. *Winslow*, and two Years in which *Thomas Prince*, Esq ; at the Choice of the People, took a Turn with him.

The *Connecticut* Colony lost their Governour *Mr. Hopkins*, whose Brother was Warden of the *Fleet* in *England*, and dying, left his Estate to him, which oblig'd him to go thither ; where, besides his Brother's Post, which was given him, he was made a Commissioner of the Admiralty and Navy-Office, and serv'd as a Burgess in *Cromwel's* Conventions. His Place in *New-England* was supply'd by *John Haines*, Esq ; *George Willis*, Esq ; *Thomas Wells*, Esq ; *John Webster*, Esq ; who were all Governours of *Connecticut* Settlement, alternatively ; and contributed, by their prudent Administration, to the flourishing State of that Colony.

Mr. *Eaton* held the Government of *New-Haven* till he dy'd, and there hapning nothing remarkable in either of these Colonies, separate from the Concerns of the Confederacy, we shall not detain the Reader longer about their History. The Province of *Massachusetts* sent out several Families, who inclin'd to the Fishing, and Beaver-Trade, to settle to the North of *Pascataway* River, where these New Inhabitants

The Deputy Governor try'd as a Criminal.

Connecticut-Colony.

*J. Haines, Governor.
 G. Willis,
 T. Wells,
 J. Webster, Esq;
 Governor.*

East-
Hamp-
shire Coun-
ty settled.

T. May-
hew, Esq;
settles on
the Isles.

Capt.
Atherton
Insults an
Indian
King.

Several
Persons re-
move to
England.

bitants built several Towns, and those Parts are now the Counties of *East-Hampshire* and *Poscatoway*, which were added to the *Massachusetts* Colony, and taken into the Protection of their *General Court*. *Martha's Vineyard*, *Nauvoker* and *Elizabeth* Isles were granted to *Thomas Mayhew, Esq;* who settled there with his own Family, and a few others. The Savages were all this time quiet, and the English fear'd them so little, that one *Capt. Atherton* with a small Company, being provoked at the Prevarications of the King of the *Narragansetts*, went boldly to his very Town, enter'd his Wigwam or Pallace, took him by the Hair, held a Pistol at his Breast; and told him, *unless he deliver'd his Hostages, and paid his Debts to the Colony, he would kill him*; which the Barbarian promis'd to do, and did accordingly, not one of his Attendants daring to assist him. There were several Rumours of Conspiracies and intended Massacres: But they all vanished, and while *Old England* was rent and torn to pieces by intestine Wars, *New-England* enjoy'd a profound Peace. Most of the *American* Colonies on the Revolutions, after the Death of the King, Proclaim'd King *Charles II.* and stood out against the Commonwealth, but *New-England*; whose Principles were nearer the Constitution of the Republick than the other Settlements, willingly submitted to that Government; and several considerable Gentlemen remov'd to *Old England*, to come in for a share, with their Puritan Brethren, of the Spoils of their Enemies, and the Benefit of Posts and Offices, which now were wholly dispos'd of by them. Many of the *New-England* Divines left those *Sanctify'd* Regions, as they are pleas'd to term them, and came to *England*: Among the Gentlemen, were *Mr. Winslow* Governour of *Plimouth* Colony, who left his Government in *America*, for a Commissioner of the Navy's Place at home; *Edward Hopkins, Esq;* Governour of *Connecticut*, of whom mention has been made already: *Mr. Geo. Downing*, afterwards Sir *George*, Sir *Henry Vane*, and others. Of their Ministers were *Mr. William Hook*, who thought fit to leave his Flock at *New-Haven* in *New-England*, for the Mastership of the *Savoy* in *Old England*. *Mr. Robert Peck*, *Mr. Hugh Peters*, who left his Church at *Salem*, for a

Chaplain.

Parts are now
escatoway, which
and taken into
Martha's Vine
were granted to
re with his own
ges were all thi
in so little, tha
any, being pro
g of the Narro
wn, enter'd his
he Hair, held
less he deliver'd
the Colony, he
promis'd to do
endants daring
mours of Con
at they all va
nt and torn to
land enjoy'd a
an Colonies on
he King, Pro
out against the
hose Principles
epublick than
mitted to that
Gentlemen re
a share, with
their Enemies,
hich now were
f the New-En
ns, as they are
land: Among
Governour of
riment in A
Navy's Place
Governour of
een made al
s. Sir George,
Ministers were
ave his Flock
Master-ship of
ere Peck, Mr.
Salem, for a
Chaplain.

chaplain-ship to *Cromwell*; Mr. *Samuel Mather*,
Mr. *Blissman* of *Bristol*, Mr. *Eaton* of *Cheeshire*, Mr.
knowles of *London*, Mr. *Firmin* of *London*, and many
more, who were silenc'd after the King's Restorati-
on, but had either such good Congregations in pri-
vate, or had heap'd up such fair Provision in the Days
of their Domination, that they did not care to cross
the *Atlantick* again, to lay their Bones among the
brethren. We must not omit a Passage in the Hi-
story of *New-England* about this time, which relates
of *Venner* the Fifth Monarchist, who was one of *Hugh*
Venner's Congregation at *Salem*. This Fellow was by
trade a Cooper, but very mutinous in Publick Mat-
ters: He would fain have perswaded a Company of
people to have abandon'd the Settlement at *Massa-
chuset* Colony, and have remov'd to *Providence*, one
of the *Bahama* Islands.

Venner
the Fifth
Monarchist
in New-
England.

They petition'd the chief Magistrates for leave to do
; and an Assembly was held to consider the Busi-
ness. The Magistrates assisted by the Ministers, de-
clar'd, that for several Reasons by them alledg'd, they
could not admit of their Proposal: Upon which *Ven-
ner* stood up and said, according to the Cant of the
place and Times, *Notwithstanding what had been of-
fer'd, they were clear in their Call to remove*. But his
companions not being so mad as himself, there were
no Attempts made to get off tumultuously, which *Ven-
ner* was ready to have done, if any one would have ac-
company'd him. The Colony of *Massachusetts*, on the *Massa-
chuset*.
1649. chose *Thomas Dudley* Esquire their Governour;
and Mr. *Dudley* surviving Mr. *Winthrop* but three or
four years, the Inhabitants would have elected *John*
Haynes Esquires to supply his place, but that Gentle-
man removing to *Connecticut*, *John Endicot* Esq; was
chosen Governour; and *Edward Gibbons* Esq; succee-
ded him as Major General of the Militia. *Plimouth*,
the Mother-colony of the three others, had the mis-
fortune; or 4 years afterwards, to be depriv'd of her
old Governour Mr. *Bradford*, who died *May* the 9th,
1657. In his room the Court of Electors chose
Thomas Prince Esquire, who had been twice their Go-
vernour before, to succeed him; and this Gentle-Prince
man continu'd many years in the Government. In
the Governor.

Tho. Dud-
ley Esq;
Governor.
1653.
Joh. Endi-
cot Esq;
Governor.
Plimouth
Colony.

1657.

Newha-
ven Colo-
ny

Fr. New-
man Esq
Governor.

Wil. Leet
Esq
Governor

Cot. Mat.
Hist.

the same year 1657. *Theophilus Eaton* Esquire, Go-
vernour of *Newhaven* Colony, dying, *Mr. Francis
Newman* their Secretary, was chosen Governour.
But this Gentleman enjoy'd his honourable Office
scarce 4 years; and dying at the end of that Term,
was succeeded by *William Leet* Esquire; who, be-
fore he came to *New-England*, had been Register of
Bishop's Court in *Old-England*. But, says a famous
Writer of that Country, finding 'twas made a Crime
to bear Sermons abroad when there were none at home; and
that the Court he serv'd, made themselves merry with
such Peccadillo's as *Fornication* and *Adultery*, he took
disgust against them, refus'd Conformity, and went
to *New-England*; where the good People err'd as
much on the other hand, by hanging Men and Wo-
men for those Peccadillo's, and severely punishing
them for not attending their frequent Sermons, let 'em
be never so tedious and dull.

1661.

The Colo-
nies ad-
dress K.
Cha. II.

On the Restoration of *King Charles II.* the Colo-
nies of *New-England* fell in cheerfully with their Pres-
byterian Brethren in *Old-England*, and congratulated
his Majesty on his Accession to the Throne of his An-
cestors, sending *Simon Bradstreet* Esquire, Secretary
of *Massachusetts* Colony, and *Mr. John Norton* Mini-
ster of *Ipswich*, in *Essex* County, a Man whom *Dr.
Fuller* commends in his *Church History*, for his Lear-
ning and Modesty, to carry their Address to his Ma-
jesty; which contain'd chiefly a Petition for *Liberty of
Conscience*. They sail'd in *February* 1661. and re-
turn'd in about a year, with Letters from the King,
signifying, *That the Expressions of their Loyalty and
Affection to him were very acceptable; that he would
confirm their Privileges, encourage and protect them.*

The Colony of *Connecticut* having been all this
time without a firm Charter, with the consent of
that of *Newhaven*, prevail'd with *John Winthrop* Jun.
Esquire, Son of the late Governour of *Massachusetts*, to
go to *England*, to get them a Charter of Settlement
and Union, which he did. This Gentleman had been
generously educated, and was a Philosopher, as well
as a Christian, and a Gentleman; Infomuch, that
when the Royal Society was Establish'd, he was ad-
mitted a Member of it, and he communicated several
curious things to them, as appears in the Collection of
their

their
King's
King
Mr. W
Englan
Govern
Comm
of tha
hands
their
bers o
but th
And b
vernou
to the

Whi
Son o
revolt
hearing
Comm
him;
brough
of Gri
him, a
ding h
sworn
them r
Brothe

'Twa
become
Metrop
Sees in
14000
Barthol
Englan
sand as
out of
Englan
milies,
Arch-B
Doctor
late. T
lony w
sand;

and.

Esquire, Governor of that Term; who, being Register of the Court, says, a famous Criminal made a Crime at home; and was merry withery, he took a Party, and went to people err'd at Men and Women, punishing them, let em

II. the Colony with their President congratulated one of his Assistants, Secretary Norton Minister whom Dr. for his Learning to his Majesty for Liberty of 1661. and returned from the King's Loyalty and that he would protect them.

been all this time the consent of the Winthrop family in Massachusetts, to the Settlement of a man had been a prophet, as well as in so much, that he'd, he was admitted several the Collection of their

The History of New-England.

49

their Transactions. 'Tis said that he procur'd the King's Favour, by presenting him with a Ring which King Charles I. had on some occasion or other given Mr. Winthrop's Grandfather. On his Arrival in New-England, the two United Colonies made him their Governor; and Mr. John Webster Governor of Connecticut Colony, and Mr. William Leet Governor of that of Newhaven, resign'd their Charges into his hands; the New Colony choosing Mr. Leet to be their Deputy Governor. There were some Members of these two Colonies who oppos'd this Union, but the major Part were for it, and they prevail'd: And by the Moderation and Prudence of their Governor Mr. Winthrop, they were soon all reconcil'd to the Union. 1664.

While these things were transacting, Alexander, Son of Massasoit, solicited the Narragansets to revolt; Which Mr. Prince, Governor of Plimouth hearing, sent Josias Winslow, Esq; who at that time Commanded the Militia of the Settlement, to seize him; which he did at a Hunting-House of his, and brought him Prisoner to Plimouth; where he dy'd of Grief and Rage. His Brother Philip succeeded him, and was a Plague to the English, notwithstanding he had renew'd the League with them, and sworn to the strict Observance of it. But he gave them no disturbance till about nine Years after his Brother Alexander's Death.

'Twas now that the Province of New-England was become a powerful Nation. The City of Boston, the Metropolis, being as big as most of our Episcopal Sees in England, and containing no less than 12 or 14000 Souls. For after the severe Act, call'd the Bartholomew-Act, which some pretended Church of England Men procur'd, to turn above three Thousand as good Protestant Ministers as any in the World out of their Livings, many of them remov'd to New-England; and were follow'd by some hundreds of Families, who fear'd the same cruel Treatment from Arch-Bishop Sheldon, who had been a Creature of Doctor Laud's, as they had met with from that Prelate. The whole Number of Inhabitants in this Colony were computed to be near one hundred Thousand; and some of those who came over, bringing

E

good

1665.
Massachu-
set Colony.
Richard
Billing-
ham Esq;
Governor.

1672.
John Le-
verett
Esq; Go-
vernor.
Plymouth
Colony.
Josias
Winslow
Esq; Go-
vernor.

The rise of
the War
with King
Philip.

good Estates with them, the English fill'd their Towns, and extended their Limits. Such was the General State of the Colonies in the year 1665. when that of *Massachusetts* mourn'd the Death of their Governour Mr. *Endicot*: In whose Chair they plac'd *Richard Billingham* Esq; a very old Man, who had been a Magistrate or Councillour thirty Years before. He enjoy'd that honourable Office about Seven Years; and then dying, *John Leverett* Esq; was advanc'd from the Post of Major General of the Militia, to that of Governour of the Colony. The next year 1673. Mr. *Prince*, Governour of *Plymouth* Colony, dy'd, and was succeeded by *Josias Winslow* Esq; the first Governour that was born in *New-England*; A Man endow'd with so many Christian and Heroick Vertues, that he seems to have wanted a larger Sphere to act in, that he might have shewn himself more, and have serv'd the Commonwealth better, than in those rude Corners of the World.

A year or two before he was chosen Governour, the War with the Indian King, *Philip* Son of *Massasoit*, broke out. He had a long time been contriving a Conspiracy to invade and destroy the English; which he discover'd the sooner, to revenge an Affront he pretended to have receiv'd from the *Plymouth* Colony, the Government having hang'd one *Tobias* a Councillor of his, and two other Indians, for murdering *John Saufaman*, an Indian Preaching Convert. They had a fair Trial, and were condemn'd by a Jury of half English and half Indians. However *Philip*, who hated the English, was resolv'd to take this occasion of shewing his ill Disposition towards them. He courted several other Indian Nations to joyn with him; and Multitudes of them flock'd to him to fight against the Common Enemy, as they reckon'd the Christians. The Governour of *Plymouth* sent Messengers to demand the reason of *Philip's* arming, but his Envoys were insulted; and soon after a Party of Savages made an In-road into the Territories of that Colony. They fir'd a Volley of small Shot on a Congregation of Christians when they were at their Devotions, kill'd three Men, and wounded another. They pillag'd the Plantations about *Mount Hope*, and began the War between *Simsfey* and *Taunten* in the County of

Pli-

Plim
other
all po
mas
Dan
their
a Co
Samue
ces u
out 1
vages
drove
five ti
Englis
durst
try to
March
Count
torn in
body
rest, a
der.
and th
League
not app
how fa
the Co
ragant
with A
Domin
Fuller
ments
Barbar
were.
Island,
and 15
Inequal
them w
tion w
all that
coming
from w
the Cor
from th

and.
 find their
 ch was the
 1665. when
 their Gover-
 ac'd Richard
 been a Ma-
 re. He en-
 Years; and
 vanc'd from
 a, to that of
 r 1673. Mr.
 dy'd, and
 the first Go-
 d; A Man
 deroick Ver-
 rger Sphere
 himself more,
 ter, than in

Governour,
 on of Massas-
 en contriving
 the English;
 ge an Affront
 Plymouth Co-
 ne Tobias a
 for murder-
 onvert. They
 a Jury of half
 Philip, who has
 his occasion of
 n. He cour-
 n with him;
 fight against
 the Christians.
 engers to de-
 t his Envoys
 Savages made
 olony. They
 ngregation of
 otions, kill'd
 they pillag'd
 d began the
 he County of
 Pli-

Plimouth. This Settlement immediately sent to the other two for Succours; and that of *Massachusetts*, with all possible diligence, dispatch'd away Captain *Thomas Prentice* with a Troop of Horse, and Captain *Daniel Henchman* with a Company of Foot, to assist their Brethren of *Plimouth*. These were follow'd by a Company of Volunteers, commanded by Captain *Samuel Mosely*, and were join'd by the *Plimouth Forces* under Captain *Cudworth* at *Swansey*. They sent out 12 Men to discover the Enemy, of whom the Savages from their Ambushes kill'd one, but the rest drove them from behind the Bushes, tho they were five times their number. The next day the little English Army march'd against the Indians, who durst not give them Battle, but abandon'd their Country to their just Revenge. The English in their March found the mangl'd Carcasses of some of their Countrymen, their Heads stuck upon Poles, Bibles torn in pieces, empty Wigwams or Cottages, and no body to oppose them. *Philip* himself fled with the rest, and left his Kingdom to the Mercy of the Invader. The Name of *Philip's* Nation was *Wompanoags*; and these had drawn in the *Narragansetts* into the League against the English. 'Tis true, the latter had not appear'd in Arms; however the English knowing how far they encourag'd the Rupture, march'd thro' the Country of the *Wompanoags* into that of the *Narragansetts*, and forc'd them to renounce their Alliance with *Philip*. Captain *Cudworth* proceeded into the Dominions of the *Sachem* of *Pocasset*, where Captain *Fuller* and Captain *Church*, with two small Detachments of English, were over-power'd by an Army of Barbarians, twenty times as many in number as they were. Captain *Fuller* was driven by them into *Rhode Island*, and 200 of them surrounded Captain *Church* and 15 Men in a Pease-field: Notwithstanding the Inequality of the Number, Captain *Church* fought them with invincible Resolution till all his Ammunition was spent, he then retir'd to the Shore, driving all that oppos'd him before him; and some Sloops coming off from *Rhode Island*, he retreated thither; from whence, without loss of time, he pass'd over to the Continent, got two or three Files of Musqueteers from the *Massachusetts Forces*, and engag'd them again

Wars with
the Indians.

in *Pocasset*. He flew in this Action 15, and in the former 30 of the Savages, and struck such a Terrour into the rest, that they fled to the Woods from the small Company he had with him, of which he lost not a Man. Captain *Cudworth* being join'd by the *Massachusetts* Captains, march'd from *Taunton* to a Swamp 18 Miles off, where the Savages from several Ambuscades kill'd some of his Men, but the English pursuing them to their Wigwams, they found no less than 100 of them empty; out of which the Indians were fled to a neighbouring Thicket. The Officers thought the best way to reduce them wou'd be by starving; so they posted two Hundred Men at all the Avenues of the Thicket, and sent the rest to the Relief of *Mendham*, where the *Nipmuck* Indians, King *Philip's* Confederates, committed terrible Spoil and Cruelty. *Philip* himself was in the Thicket, and being driven to Despair, he with his best fighting Men taking the advantage of a low Tide, in a River that ran through the Swamp, waded over it on small Rafts, and escap'd into the *Nipmuck* Country; 100 of his Men were left behind in the Thicket, who surrender'd themselves at discretion. The English pursu'd *Philip* as soon as they heard of his Flight: And tho they could not come up with him, overtook some of his Men; of whom they slew 30. The *Monhegin* Indians join'd with the English; and most of the Western Nations were set against them by *Philip*.

It spreads.

Thus the whole Province of *Massachusetts* became engag'd in the War, the Flame of which rag'd more than it had done in that of *Plimouth*. Captain *Hutchinson* being sent to know the Reason of the Savages invading that Colony, was himself mortally wounded, and eight of his Party kill'd; the rest fled to *Quaboag*, a little Village where the Christian Inhabitants were retir'd into one House, and the Barbarians having destroy'd the rest, beset this also. They try'd all the Devices they could think of to beat them out of it, but the English defended themselves so bravely, that all their Attempts prov'd in vain; at last they resolv'd to set it on fire; and just as they were preparing to do it, Major *Wilward*, who had heard of his Friends Distress at *Quaboag*, arriv'd with 49 Men, attack'd the Savages, and forc'd them to raise the Siege of this Hovel, for it deserv'd no better Name. The Major de-

det
mor
man
ther
sta
nou
wit
of S
ges
wer
kill
and
Eng

The
ry p
shut
Wo
ing
in th
Beer
othe
Arm
his
Ref
the
jor
unde
to b
cept
shou
skull
expo
then
ing
but
Barb
Men
mor
Lath
ter
land
T
Spring

detatch'd Captain *Lathrop* and Captain *Beers* with more Forces to observe them, for fear they should march to *Connecticut* River, and seduce the Indians there. This Colony sent Major *Treat* to the Assistance of their Mother *Massachusetts*; and the Governour, who heard that the Savages upon that River within his Government were in motion, sent a Party of Soldiers, with an Officer, to demand of them Hostages for their peaceable Behaviour: But these Barbarians were so far from answering the demand, that they kill'd their King, because he wou'd not go with them, and then fled to a Swamp; from whence they fir'd on the English, and slew 9 Men belonging to 9 several Towns.

Thus this bloody War spread over all *New-England*. They destroy'd the Plantations about *Deerfield*, a very pleasant Country, and forc'd the Garrison there to shut themselves up within the Fortification of a poor Work which they had rais'd for their Defence, it being a Frontier Place in *Hampshire*. They slew 8 Men in the Woods near *Squak-heag*. Upon which Captain *Beers* was sent with 40 Men, to fetch off that and some other small Garrisons. These were intercepted by an Army of the Savages; and Captain *Beers* with 20 of his Men having fought to the last with the utmost Resolution, was over-power'd by Numbers and slain, ^{Captain} the rest escap'd to *Hadley*; and a few days after Major *Treat* with more Soldiers perform'd what he had ^{Beers} ^{slain,} undertaken. Captain *Lathrop* marching with 80 Men to bring off the Corn from *Deerfield*, was also intercepted by 800 Indians. The Captain thinking he shou'd succeed better by fighting as the Savages did, skulking behind Trees, and aiming at single Persons, expos'd his Soldiers to the Ruin that follow'd, 60 of them being kill'd on the spot. Captain *Mosely* hearing the Noise of the Fire, hasten'd to relieve *Lathrop*, but he came too late: He broke his way through the Barbarians five or six times; and with a handful of Men kill'd almost 100 of the Enemy, loosing no more than 2 of his own. In this Action fell Captain ^{And Capt.} *Lathrop*, and above 70 of his Men, the greatest Slaugh- ^{Lathrop.} ter that ever happen'd till that Day of the *New-England* Christians.

The Indians encourag'd by this Success, fell upon *Spring-field*, (the Hostages they had given for their

preserving the Peace, flying before they came) they burnt 32 Houses, and among the rest, the Minister Mr. *Brewer's*, together with his Library; and had cut the Throats of all the Inhabitants, had not an honest Indian reveal'd their Design to them time enough, before 'twas executed, for them to retire to the fortify'd parts of the Town.

The *General Court* sitting at *Boston*, order'd all their Forces to rendezvous about *Northampton*, *Hadley*, and *Hatfield*, for the Security of those Places. Of which Orders the Indians having no notice, and growing bolder by Success, 800 of them broke in upon *Hatfield*; but the English being prepar'd to receive them, the Enemy were soon beaten out of the Town, and the Western Counties were for a long time free from their Incurfions, except now and then some Straglers committed a few Robberies. These Indians fled to the *Narragansetts*, and were entertain'd by them: Upon which the Commissioners of the United Colonies, who were assembl'd on this Emergency, resolv'd 'twas a Breach of the Peace; and understanding that Nation intended to begin a War in the Spring, were before-hand with them; and in the Winter sent Mr. *Winslow*, Governour of *Plimouth* Colony, with 1000 Men, to invade their Territories. General *Winslow* being joyn'd by the *Connecticut* Forces, march'd up 18 Miles in the Enemies Country, attack'd the Savages in a Fort they had rais'd in an Island, of about 5 or 6 Acres, and taking it by Storm, put 700 Indians to the Sword, besides 300 which dy'd of their Wounds, and a vast number of Old Men, Women and Children, who had crowded into the Fort, which was thought impregnable. The General lost in this gallant Action 85 Men and 6 Captains, Capt. *Davenport*, Capt. *Gardner*, Capt. *Johnson*, Capt. *Gallop*, Capt. *Sealy*, and Capt. *Marshall*, and about 150 English were wounded. This was the best Fortification the Barbarians ever had, being so strengthen'd by Nature, that they wanted not the Arts of Europeans to fortify it. The Savages had never such a terrible Blow given them, and they cou'd never recover the Loss they suffer'd. After this the English had some slight Advantages more in the Winter, and then return'd to their Quarters. *Mendham* not being tenable, they deserted

Indians
worsted.

fortes
at Cal
Fran
caster
into
the
He w
his H
heard
way
forc'd
did fu
ford;
the
like
Lines
ampt
ter th
The E
carry
that
Plimo
Then
groun
Chris
laying
ry dex
kill'd
12 In
their
slain i
Th
boroug
field;
dence
and
40 In
on th
yet th
burnt
Assist
ing o
the S
tice,

nd.
came) they
he Minister
y; and had
d not an ho-
me enough,
e to the for-

er'd all their
Hadley, and

Of which
nd growing
upon *Har-*
ceive them,
wn, and the
e from their
aglers com-
s fled to the
nem: Upon
d Colonies,
esolv'd 'twas
ng that Na-
g, were be-
er sent Mr.
with 1000
ral *Winstow*
arch'd up 18
the Savages
about 5 or 6
Indians to
r Wounds,
n and Chil-
which was
in this gal-
Davenport,
Allop, Capt.
50 English
fication the
by Nature,
ns to fortify
Blow given
e Loss they
e slight Ad-
return'd to
le, they de-
serted

serted it, and the Indians laid it in Ashes. The French
at *Canada*, tho there was no War between *England* and
France, sent them Assistance, and they fell upon *Lan-* *Assisted*
caster, burnt several Houses, kill'd and carry'd away by the
into Captivity above 40 Persons, among whom was *French*.
the Minister Mr. *Richardson's* Wife and Children.
He was then at *Boston* soliciting Succours, and found
his House and Library in Ashes when he return'd, and
heard the dreadful Tidings of his Family being led a-
way into Slavery by the Barbarians, who had been
forc'd to leave the place by Captain *Wadsworth*. They
did further Mischief at *Marlborough*, *Sudbury*, *Chelms-*
ford; and 200 of 'em surpris'd *Medfield*, burnt half
the Town, and kill'd 20 of the Inhabitants. The
like Damage they did to *Weymouth*; and enter'd the
Lines that were drawn up for the Defence of *North-*
ampton; but they were repuls'd by Major *Savage*, af-
ter they had burnt 5 Houses, and kill'd 5 Persons.
The Enemy finding they had not Strength sufficient to
carry on a General War, return'd to the Province
that at first was the Seat of it; surpris'd part of
Plimouth, and having murder'd two Families, retir'd:
Then they fell upon *Warwick*, and burnt it to the
ground. Captain *Pierce* with 50 English, and 20
Christian Indians, pursu'd these Incendiaries; who
laying an Ambuscade for him, in which they were ve-
ry dextrous, and over-powering him with Multitudes,
kill'd him and all his Men, except 1 Englishman, and
12 Indian Allies. Captain *Pierce* and his Men sold
their Lives dearly, there being 140 Indians Enemies
slain in the Engagement. *Capt. Pier-*
ce kill'd.

The same Day, another Party of Savages laid *Marl-*
borough in Ashes; slew several Christians at *Spring-*
field; burnt 40 Houses at *Rohoboth*, 30 at *Provi-*
dence; committed terrible Cruelties at *Chelmsford*
and *Andover* on the poor innocent Children; and tho
40 Inhabitants of the Town of *Sudbury* sally'd out up-
on them, and kill'd 30 out of 300 in one Night;
yet that Place was assaulted by them, several Houses
burnt, and 12 Men coming from *Concord* to their
Assistance, cut in pieces. Captain *Wadsworth* hear-
ing of these Murders and Burnings, march'd against
the Savages with 70 Men; of which they having no-
tice, surrounded him in the Woods with 500 Men,
cut

Capt.
Woodf-
worth and
Capt. Brat-
tlebank
slain.

cut off the most part of his Soldiers, took several Prisoners; and what was a greater Loss than all, slew himself and Captain *Brattlebank*, with the loss of 120 of the Enemy. The Prisoners they took, they put to Death with exquisite Tortures.

Thus they continu'd prosperous for four or five Months; and the first blow that was given them since General *Winslow's* Victory, was by Captain *Dennison* of *Connecticut* Colony, at the head of 60 Volunteers, and 100 Indian Confederates. These set upon a Body of the Savages, slew 70 of them, amongst whom were some of their chief Princes: And the *Maquas* breaking in upon those *Indians* that were in War with the English, and Dissention arising among the Barbarians, gave the Christians the more Opportunities of defeating them. Another Party of *Connecticut* English routed another of *Indians*, and slew 44, without any loss. They took some Prisoners, among whom was *Quanenchet*, the mighty *Sachem* of *Narraganset*, whom the English wisely gave to their Indian Auxiliaries to cut off his Head, knowing that wou'd make the Breach between those *Indians* and the Enemy irreparable. However, the Savages did further Mischiefs at *Plimouth*, *Taunton*, *Chelmsford*, *Concord*, *Haverhill*, *Bradford* and *Woburn*. They attempted to fire the Town of *Bridgewater*, but the Inhabitants falling out upon them, and a great Shower falling at the same time, sav'd that Place. The English kill'd several of the *Indians* near *Medfield* and *Plimouth*; and having notice by two Boys who, being Captives, made their escape from them, that several Savages were in great Security some Miles further up the River, Captain *Turner* with 180 Men hasten'd thither, surpriz'd them, kill'd 100 of them; and in his Retreat was himself surpriz'd and kill'd, with 30 of his Men, by an Ambuscade of *Indians*, who purchas'd this Victory with the loss of 300 of their Fellows. At *Hatfield* 25 of the Savages were kill'd, and but 5 English; and at *Roboboth* 12 *Indians*, with the loss of one Englishman only. A Detachment of the *Massachusetts* Forces took and kill'd 40 *Indians*; and another of *Connecticut* 100 Savages, without loosing a Man. Seven hundred Savages were repuls'd from before *Hadley*; and at the same time,

Capt. Turner surpriz'd and kill'd.

Indians
worsted.

the

Several Pri-
than all, slew
e loss of 120
they put to

four or five
given them
by Captain
ad of 60 Vo-
s. These set
of them, a-
Princes: And
ms that were

on arising a-
ans the more
ther Party of
Indians, and
t some Priso-
e mighty Sa-
n wisely gave
Head, know-
en those Indi-
ever, the Sa-
th, Taunton,
and Woburn.
dgwater, but
and a great
that Place.

ear Medfield
b Boys who,
from them,
y some Miles
th 180 Men
00 of them;
d and kill'd,
e of Indians,
he loss of
the Savages
Robeboth 12
n only. A
ok and kill'd
00 Savages,
avages were
same time,
the

the *Maquas* invaded their Country, and carry'd away their Wives and Children into Captivity. They fell upon King *Philip's* Subjects, and kill'd 50 of them. The Barbarian had try'd several ways to engage them in the War with the English; one of which was this: He kill'd some *Macquese*, and gave out they were murder'd by the Inhabitants of *Plimouth* County. It happen'd one of the *Macquese*, whom he had mortally wounded, as he thought, recover'd, escap'd into his own Country, and informing his King of the Truth of the Matter, that Nation conceiv'd an irreconcilable Hatred to *Philip*, for his Treachery and Cruelty.

Philip thinking he might return securely into his own Territories, now the English had been so harass'd by the Enemy, came to *Mount Hope*, and Major *Bradford* of *Plimouth* had like to have fall'n into an Ambush; but he was deliver'd by a strange Accident, slew many of the *Indians*, and reduc'd the Queen of *Saconet*, who had revolted. Of the *Narragansetts*, the *Comstock*-Forces kill'd 240. Two hundred submitted in *Plimouth* County, and as many of them who attack'd *Taunton* were beaten off. Capt. *Church* with no more than 18 English, and 22 Indian Confederates, slew 80 Savages without losing one of his Company. At *Dedham*, 36 English and 90 Confederate Indians, took *Pombam*, a Prince of the *Narragansetts*, and 50 Prisoners. This Prince receiv'd a mortal Wound, and lay as one dead; yet when an Englishman came to look upon him, the Barbarian took him fast by the Hair, and had kill'd him, if help had not come in. These Successes so terrify'd the Indian Savages, That *John*, a *Segamore*, or Lord of the *Nipmuck* Indians, with 180 of his Men, submitted to Mercy. To ingratiate himself with the English, he brought in with him one of the Chief of his Nation, that had instigated the rest to the War in the *Massachusetts* Colony, and the Officers order'd the *Segamore* to shoot him, which he did. The Garison of *Bridgewater* hearing *Philip* with a Party of Men was in their Neighbourhood, sally'd out upon them, kill'd ten of his Followers, took 15, and the rest fled; among whom was *Philip*, who for haste left his Spoils and Treasure behind him. Capt. *Church* with 30 English, and

King Philip's Wife and Son taken.

Queen of Pocasset drown'd.

King Philip kill'd.

Wars in the North Part of New-England.

20 Indian Allies, took 23 of the Enemy, fell upon *Philip* in his Head Quarters, slew 130 of his Men, and lost but one of his own; The King hardly escap'd: His Wife, and Son were taken. A Deserter coming to the Town of *Taunton*, inform'd the Garison where a Body of Indians lay, upon which they sallied out and brought 30 of them Prisoners. The Queen of *Pocasset*, who was with *Philip* in the late Action, fled to the River, and not finding a Canoo to carry her over, she threw her self into the Water on a Raft, which breaking under her, she was drown'd: Some Englishman meeting with her Body by Chance, cut off her Head, not knowing who she was, and stuck it upon a Pole in *Taunton*, which the Indians seeing, they made a hideous howling, and were in a terrible Consternation. Capt. *Church* having recruited his Forces at *Rhode-Island*, and receiv'd information by an Indian Deserter, whither *Philip* was fled, pursu'd him; and coming upon him, the King thought to have escap'd from a Swamp, to which he had retir'd; but an Englishman and an Indian firing at him, the latter shot him to the Heart. He was quarter'd, and his Quarters set upon Poles for a Terror to such Rebellious Princes as dar'd make War upon their *New-English* Sovereigns. His Head was carry'd in Triumph to *Plimouth*, and his Death put an End to the War in the Western Parts of *New-England*.

In the North, the Indians bordering on the Counties of *Main* and *Cornwall*, lying beyond *Pesce-taway* River, had driv'n a very profitable Trade with the English, who had settled there. These Europeans minded their Traffick more than Religion, and were so taken up with Lumber, Fishing, and their Beaver-Trade, that they had not time to build Churches or Towns, but liv'd in Plantations, and in Houses scatter'd up and down: The Savages having some old Grudges against them, and understanding the Christians in the other Parts of *New-England* were involv'd in a dangerous War, fell upon these Settlements, destroy'd many of them, and kill'd 50 Men, not without losing twice as many of their Countrymen. Mr. *Wakely* of *Casco*, his Wife and Children were butcher'd by them, as was Capt. *Thomas Lake* at *Arrowshik*

and.

ny, fell upon
of his Men,
King hardly
A Deserter
d the Garison
ch they fall'd
The Queen
e late Action
anoo to carry
Water on a
was drown'd
dy by Chance
she was, and
h the Indians
and were in
b having re-
receiv'd inter-
er Philip was
him, the King
, to which he
Indian firing
art. He was
oles for a Ter-
d make War
His Head was
Death put an
s of New-En-
on the Coun-
eyond Pesca-
e Trade with
ese Europeans
on, and were
their Beaver
d Churches or
a Houses scar-
ing some old
ing the Chri-
were involv'd
tlements, de-
en, not with-
Countrymen.
hildren were
omas Lake at
Arrowpik

The History of New-England.

39

Arrowsick Island. The Government of *Massachusetts* Colony hearing of these Murders, sent Capt. *Flam- born*, with Forces to subdue them; this Gentle- man surpriz'd 400 of them, as they were coming to Destroy Major *Walden's* House at *Quabiche*, of whom half were sold as Slaves for their Rebellion; and the rest on Promise of future Obedience, dismiss'd; which gave Peace to the Colony for several years. Most of these Events happen'd between the Year, 1673, and 1676. and tho they are not so important, as the Great Actions in *Flanders* and *Spain*, which have lately rais'd the Wonder of the whole World, yet the Valour of these English Captains in *America* deserves to be remember'd, and the Reader will, we doubt not, be diverted with their History.

A few Months before the War was at an end, dy'd *Mr. Winthrop* Governour of *Connecticut* Colony, and was succeeded by *Mr. Leet*, who had formerly been Governour; and two Years after dy'd *Mr. Leveret*, Governour of *Massachusetts* Colony, whose Place was supply'd by *Simon Bradstreet*, Esq; who had serv'd the Settlement in several Capacities. *Mr. Winslow* Go- vernor of *Plimouth* Colony dying about *Christmas*, 1680. was succeeded by *Mr. Treat*, in whose Time the Charter granted to this and the other Set- tlements in *New-England*, suffer'd the same Fate with those of the Chief Corporations in *England*; *Quo Warranto's* were brought against them, and a Judg- ment enter'd up in Chancery: Upon which King *Charles II.* sent over *Henry Cranfield*, Esq; to be Go- vernour of *New-England*; and King *James* arbitrarily assum'd the Power of making Governours, Deputy- Governours, Magistrates, Judges, Officers of the Mi- litia, and depriv'd the Colony of *New-England* of all their Privileges. He impos'd a Governour on that Re- publick, with a Commission, by which he and three or four more of their naming, had Power to make what Laws they pleas'd, and levy Taxes upon the People ac- cording to their own Humour. In the Year 1685, *Jo- seph Dudley*, Esq; Son of *Mr. Thomas Dudley*, was ap- pointed President by the King's Commission. The Elected Governours were all turn'd out of their several Governments, and the Form of the Ad- ministration quite chang'd. This Gentleman was

1676.
Connecti-
cut and
Newha-
ven Colo-
nies,
W. Leet,
Esq; Go-
vernor.

Massachu-
set Colony,
Sim. Brad-
street, Esq;
Governor.
Plimouth
Colony,
Mr.

Treat
Governor.
1683.

H. Cran-
field, Esq;
Governor
of New-
England,
by Commis-
sion from
the King.

The Colo-
nies lose
their Pri-
villeges.

1685.

Joseph
Dudley,
Esq; Pre-
sident of
New-En-
gland by
the King's
Commissi-
on.

the more acceptable to the People of *New-England* because of his Father's Services and Merit, and for that he was a Native of that Province; but his favouring the Church and Government of *England* at the Time made him many Enemies. He did not keep his Post long; for in the Year 1686, Sir Edmund Andros arriv'd there from *England*, with a Commission to be Governour of the Country. How welcome he was to the People we may imagine, when we consider by whom, and over whom he was put in Power. 'Twas not likely that a Person who came on those Terms, shou'd be very well beloved; or that one who, says a *New-England* Historian and Preacher, acted by an Illegal, Arbitrary, Treasonable Commission, shou'd gain the good Opinion of the People: And indeed his Government is represented by that Author, to resemble his Master King *James's*, in the Course of it, as it did in the Consequence. 'Twas in his time that Capt. *William Phips*, a Native of *New-England*, went from thence to *London*, to sollicite some Noblemen and Gentlemen, to undertake an Adventure for the Wreck near *Port de la Plats*. Which he prevail'd with the Duke of *Albemarle*, and others to employ him about; and he was so fortunate as to hit upon the Ship where the Silver he sought after was lodg'd, and brought 300000 *l.* in Pieces of Eight to *England*: Whereof about 20000 *l.* came to his share. The King Knighted him for this Service, and made him High-Sheriff of *New-England*. Sir *William* petition'd that the Charter might be restor'd, but that was a Grant which the King wou'd not at any Terms part with. Sir *William's* Design by obtaining a Patent for High-Sheriff of *New-England* was, that he might have it in his Power to supply the Country with honest Juries: But the Government then being found a way to evade his Patent, and when he arriv'd at *Boston*, which was in the Year 1688. he had like to have been Assassinated at his own door in *Green-Lane*, in that City, where he built a fine Brick House after the Modern way of Building.

The People of *New-England*, by their Agents at *London*, Sir *Henry Ashurst*, and Dr. *Mather* Rector of *Harvard College*, petition'd the King to have their Charter restor'd; and had many good Words in an

Sir Ed-
mund An-
dros Go-
vernor.

Cot. Mat.

Captain
Phips's
Expedition
to the
Wreck.

wer fr
at Pr
and, v
Crown
In t
and g
proper
and the
practis
most in
set of
and Sc
to rule
were r
consent
crown'
Person
These
People
Those
that ha
to pay
add to
all of th
from t
French
the East
Sir W
diate f
Court
lution
the Pr
structi
proceed
was n
heard
New-
Ab
July 1
" nou
" ate
" etec
" but
" furi

gland.

New England
Merit, and for
but his favour
England at the
did not keep
Edmund And
ommission to
welcome
ine, when
he was
a Person who
y well below
Historian and
ry, Treasonable
ion of the Pe
represented
ing James's,
equence. Two
Native of New
to sollicite for
take an Adv
Plata. While
arle, and other
fortunate as
ought after
es of Eight
me to his share
vice, and made
Sir William
stor'd, but the
d not at an
n by obtaining
gland was, that
ly the Country
nment then
ent, and when
Year 1688. he
his own door
he built a fine
Building.
their Agents
ather Rector
g to have their
Words in an
syer

The History of New-England.

61

er from him, but nothing was done in it, till after
at Prince, for his Male Administration in *Old-Eng-*
nd, was reduc'd to the necessity of abdicating his
Crown.

In the mean time, the Government of *New-Eng-*
nd grew so rampant it became intollerable. The
Properties of the People were every where invaded, Cot.
and the *Lives of the best Men in the Country* began to be Math.
tractis'd upon. The Ministers and their Ministry, a
most insufferable Outrage, considering the Nature of the
Set of Men, were discountenanc'd, and the College
and Schools discourag'd. The Governour pretended
to rule by a Faction, and that all Foreigners. Laws
were made without the Majority of the Legislators Grievan-
consenting to them. Complaints of Grievances were ces.
rown'd upon, Money levy'd without a General Court;
Persons imprison'd illegally, and Juries were pack'd.
These Men gave out, *That the Charters being lost, the*
People lost all their Titles to their Lands with them.
Those who would take out New Patents for Estates,
that had been fifty Years in their Families, were forc'd
to pay one fourth part of their Value for them. And to
add to all these Afflictions another more terrible than
all of them, The Indians by the Hardships they suffer'd
from the Government, and at the Instigation of the
French and their Abettors, broke out into a War in
the East, which lasted almost as long as that of Troy.

Sir William Phips went in Person to England, to me-
diate for his Country with the King, but he found the
Court in such Confusion, on apprehensions of a Revo-
lution, that he cou'd do no good; so he return'd after
the Prince of Orange's being declar'd King, with In-
struction from the Ministry then at Court, how to
proceed for the Service of the Colony. King William
was not willing to displace the Governour, till he
heard how he behav'd himself; and the People of
New-England sav'd him that trouble.

About 100 Indians invaded the Eastern Counties in
July 1688. and says our Historian, "Tho the Gover-Cot. Mat.
nour then in the Western Parts of it, had immedi-
ate notice of it, yet he not only delay'd and negle-
cted all that was necessary for the Publick Defence,
but also, when he at last return'd, shew'd a most
furious Displeasure against those of the Council,
" and

" and all others that had forwarded any one thing for
 " the Security of the Inhabitants, while at the same
 " time he dispatch'd some of his Creatures on secret
 " Errands to *Canada*, and set at liberty some of the
 " most murderous Indians whom the English had
 " seiz'd upon.

He imprison'd a Man who brought over a Copy of
 the Prince's Declaration; and put out a Proclamation
 requiring all Persons to use their Endeavours to hinder
 the landing of any whom his Highness might
 send thither. Reports were spread in *Boston*, that
 Mischief was to be expected from the *Rose-Frigot*, a
 Man of War then in the Harbour. Upon all which
 many Soldiers of the Governour's Forces deserted
 the Army; and a general Revolt seem'd to be prepar-
 ing. Several Gentlemen met on this occasion, and
 resolv'd to appear at the head of the People, in case of
 an Insurrection, and drew up a Declaration to be
 dispers'd about the Country. On the 18th of *April*,
 some of the disaffected seiz'd the Captain of the *Rose*
Frigot, and immediately the Town of *Boston* was in
 Arms: The Towns-men seiz'd the Governour; and
 those wretched Men, who by their innumerable Exor-
 tions and Exactions, had made themselves the Objects of
 universal Hatred.

The Govern-
 our de-
 pos'd by the
 People.

Æ. Will-
 iam ap-
 proves of
 it, and
 grants a
 new Char-
 ter.

1690.

This Revolution was effected without the least
 Plunder or Bloodshed. The Gentlemen who brought
 it about, appointed a Committee for the Conservation of
 the Peace. The Criminals were sent to *England*; and
 the Governour and Magistrates who were in Power
 before the loss of the Charters, were restor'd to the
 Exercise of their former Authority. King *William*
 and Queen *Mary* approv'd of their Proceedings, and
 granted them a new Charter; which tho it reserv'd the
 Power of nominating the Governour in the King or
 Queen of *England*, yet it granted them great Privileges,
 and in some respects greater than what they formerly en-
 joy'd, to use the words of one of their own Country-
 men. While the Agents were soliciting the Affair
 of the Charter, Sir *William Phips* reduc'd *New-Scotland*
 to the Obedience of the Crown of *England*, at the
 charge of these Settlements, as we shall shew in an-
 other Chapter. Upon the Petition of Sir *Henry*
Asburst and Mr. *Mather*, in the Name of the Colony,
 King

ny one thing
while at the
atures on se
erty some of
e English

over a Copy
a Proclamation
eavours to
ighness might
n Boston, th
Rose-Frigot,
Upon all which
Forces deserted
d to be prepa
s occasion, an
ople, in case
laration to be
e 18th of April
ain of the Rose
f Boston was
overnour; and
merable Extor
es the Objects

hout the least
n who brought
Conservation of
England; and
were in Power
restor'd to the
King William
ceedings, and
o it reserv'd the
in the King or
reat Privileges,
hey formerly en
own Country
ing the Affair
New-Scotland
England, at the
all shew in a
of Sir Henry
of the Colony,
King

ing William made Sir William Phips Captain General, Sir Willi-
and Governour in Chief of the Province of *Massachu-* am Phips
e Bay in *New-England*. Under which Title that Co- Governor.
ny only seems to be meant, but the other two were
included in the Commission.

Canada was always a Thorn in the side of *New-England*, and from thence all her Troubles came. The French having such a Natural Envy and Hatred to the English, that they never miss'd any opportunity of doing them a Mischief, in whatever part of the World they met with them. By their own Confession, they and their Confederates the *Hurons*, fell upon an English Company in the year 1687, and took a Ransom from them to the Value of 30000 Crowns: Also Monsieur *Dulhut* defeated another Company, commanded by Major *Gregory*, who was Convoy to some *roquois*, a Nation in league with the English, and at War with the *Hurons*. These, and other late Provocations from their Allies the Indians, were just grounds for Sir William's Expedition to endeavour to dislodge them at *Quebec*. Their Indian Confederates seiz'd several Plantations about North *Tarmouth*; and Captain *Blackman*, a Justice of Peace, seiz'd about 20 of 'em, who had been Ring-leaders in the last War. These Indians were sent Prisoners to *Falmouth*, in *Casco Bay*; and the Savages took Reprizals. *William Stoughton* Esq; Deputy Governour, and other Gentlemen, went to treat with them, whom the Savages promis'd to meet at *Macquoit*, and to bring their English Captives, in order to their being releas'd; but never came, being, as they declar'd, dissuaded by the French: The English stay'd for them some days; after which, finding they had betray'd them, they return'd to *Falmouth*; and they were scarce arriv'd there, before the Barbarians fell again on North *Tarmouth*. Yet Sir *Edmund Andros* took no care to put an end to this War before the Flame spread farther, and the French had supply'd them with Arms and Ammunition.

The French
fall upon
the English
before the
Revolution.

We shall now take a short view of the State of the Indian War; in which we shall find the French open- War with
ly engag'd. After the seizing of those Indians by Mr. the Indians.
Blackman's Order, the Savages surpriz'd Captain *Raw-*
den and Captain *Gendall*: The former of them dy'd in
Sla-

Major
Walden
kill'd.

Slavery, the other made his Escape; and being about fortifying North *Tarmouth*, was attackt by the Indians, whom he repuls'd. This was the first Blood that was spilt in this long War. Captain *Gendall* passing over the River with his Servant in a Canoe, fell into an Ambush of the Savages, by whom they were both murder'd: They assaulted and slew several English, at a Village call'd *Merry Meeting*; the same they did at *Sheepscot*, a Town that was reckon'd the Garden of the East: This Place they burnt to the Ground, and oblig'd the Inhabitants to retire into their Fort. They murder'd Mr. *Burrow's* and Mr. *Buffy's* Families at *Kenebunk*; and committed so many Outrages, that at last Sir *Edmund Andros* with 1000 Men march'd into the East, built a Fort at *Pemmaquid*, another at *Pechypso*, and repair'd and enlarg'd that at *Sheepscot*. Upon the deposing of this Person from his Government, the old Governour and Magistrates sent Captain *Greenleaf* to treat with the *Penacook* Indians who, notwithstanding their fair Pretences, join'd with the *Saconian* Savages, surpriz'd Major *Walden* in his Garrison of *Quobeche*, kill'd him, and 22 of his Soldiers, and carry'd away 29 into Bondage. This worthy Gentleman was betray'd by one *Mesandouit*, a Prince of the *Saconians*, whom he had honourably entertain'd and trusted as a Friend, and who on the approach of the Indians, open'd the Gate of the Fort, and admitted them. Mr. *John Broughton* they murder'd in their Retreat; and Forces being sent after them, the *Penacooks* fled to the Woods, and left their Corn and Country to the mercy of Captain *Noyes* and his Men, who enter'd it, and destroy'd their Wigwams and Plantations.

The Indians kill'd many Men, Women and Children, in other places; as a whole Family on the North-side of *Merrimack* River, four young Men of *Saco* whom they surpriz'd in the Woods, five more near *Saco* falls, out of 25 who came forth to bury the others; one *Starkey* falling into their hands, to save his own Life, discover'd to them, that one Mr. *Giles*, and 14 other Englishmen, were not far off, these the Savages murder'd.

The Indians having intimation, that there was but a small Garrison in *Pemmaquid* Fort, got up upon a Rock

Rock
rably
their
of Lif
lation
also C
coming
as he
caus'd
abando
several
It w
think
pradati
with 5
one of
ny mo
gainst t
Huckin
Frontie
Work,
all off.
Fortin
men an
the Sava
law the
the Ho
not yiel
mane V
three of
the oth
the Ene
nother
Bracket
had not
and eng
The
were fr
Confede
ver'd al
understa
their in
was no
reliev'd
Quarter

Rock which over-look'd it, from whence they miserably gaul'd the Besieg'd, who surrender'd, with their Governour Captain *Weems*, on Conditions of Life and Liberty. The Indians broke the Capitulation, and butcher'd the greatest part of them, as also Captain *Skinner* and Captain *Farnham*, who were coming to the Relief of the Fort; and Mr. *Parishall*, as he lay in his Sloop in the *Barbican*. These Losses caus'd the Inhabitants of *Sheepscot* and *Kennebunk* to abandon those Places, and retire to *Falmouth*, and did several other Planters in other Parts of the East.

It was time for the Government of *New-England* to think of vigorously opposing these Murders and Depredations of the Savages: Accordingly Major *Swayne* with 500 Men from *Massachusetts*, and Major *Church*, one of their best Officers from *Plimouth*, with as many more English, and Christian Indians, march'd against the Enemy; who hearing, that one Lieutenant *Huckin* was gone out of a Fort he commanded on the Frontiers, with all his Garrison about their daily Work, intercepted them in their return, and cut them all off, 17 in number. Then the Indians attack'd the Fort in it, which were only two Boys, and some Women and Children. These Boys defended it against

Several English Captains slain,

The Bravery of two English Boys.

the Savages, wounded several of them, and when they saw the Barbarians had found out a way to set fire to the House in the Fort, and so burn 'em out, wou'd not yield, but on Terms of Life, which these inhumane Wretches granted, and yet afterwards kill'd three or four of the Children, with one of the Boys, the other made his escape. Captain *Garner* pursu'd the Enemy, but they were too nimble for him. Another Party of 'em assaulted *Casco*, kill'd Captain *Bracket*, and had put the whole Town to the Sword, had not Captain *Hall* come opportunely with Relief, and engaging the Barbarians, put 'em to flight.

The Designs of Major *Swayne*, and Major *Church*, were frustrated, by the Treachery of some Indian Confederates, who being sent out as Scouts, discover'd all that they knew to the Enemy; and these understanding the Number of the English, fled to their inaccessible Woods and Swamps, where there was no coming at them; so Major *Swayne* having reliev'd the Garrison of *Blew Point*, retir'd to Winter Quarters.

In the following year, Monsieur *Arrell*, a French man from *Canada*, and one *Hoop-Flood* an *Huron* Leader, assaulted *Salmons Falls*, and destroy'd the best part of the Town with Fire and Sword, killing 30 Persons, and leading away above 50 into Captivity, using their Captives with the utmost Barbarity that French and Indian Cruelty could invent.

Sir W.
Phips's
Expedition
against
Canada.

This Descent of the French, and their confederating with the Indians, alarm'd all the English Settlements on that Coast; and after the Reduction of *Nova Scotia*, Sir *William Phips* was dispatch'd away with 12 Sail of Ships and Tenders to attack *Quebeck*. The principal Men of War were,

The *Six-Friends*; Capt. *Gregory* Sugar's Admiral, 44 Guns.
The *John and Thomas*, Capt. *Carter* Vice-Admiral.
The *Swan*, Capt. *Tho. Gilbert* Rear-Admiral.

They had aboard in all 2000 Men; and setting sail from *Hull*, near *Boston*, the 9th of *August*, 1690. arriv'd before *September*, at *Quebeck*; but were detain'd so long by contrary Winds, that they were 3 Weeks going up the River of *Canada*, which otherwise they might have done in 3 Days. This gave the Count *de Frontenac* an opportunity to prepare for his Defence, and draw all the Strength of the Colony to *Quebeck*; which Sir *William Phips* expected would have been divided by an Army marching over Land, and attacking *Mount Royal* Fort at the same time that he fell upon the City.

This Army was to consist of 1000 Men from *New-York*, *Connecticut*, and *Plimouth* Colonies, and 1500 Indians, to whom the French give the general Name of *Iroquois*, but our English distinguish them by the Names of their several Nations. The English march'd as far as the great Lake of *Canada*, but not finding Canoes ready for them to pass it, and the Indians not joyning them according to their Agreement, they return'd; by which means, Count *de Frontenac* had no need of making any Detachments for the Security of *Mount Royal*. Sir *William* summon'd the Count to surrender the City, but receiv'd a very insolent abusive Answer: So on the 8th of *October*, the English landed, under Lieutenant General *Whalley*, to the number of

1400, for to those few they were already reduc'd by the Small Pox, and other Diseases.

In the mean while, Sir *William* brought his Ships to bear on the West-end of the City, waiting when General *Whalley* wou'd begin the Assault; but this Gentleman hearing Count *Frontenac* had 4000 Men with him, and was provided to make a vigorous Defence, notwithstanding the Prayers of the English Soldiers to the contrary, resolv'd to re-embark; and Sir *William* expecting the Signal of their attacking the Town on the East-side, sent a Messenger ashore, to know the reason of their not giving the Assault; which when he understood, and that many of the Men were almost frozen to Death, and that the Colonel and others were ill of the Small Pox, he order'd them on board to refresh themselves; and calling a Council of War, it was resolv'd to return.

The Baron *La Hontan*, who was then at *Quebeck*, says, there was not 200 French in the Town when Sir *William* came thither; that when he fir'd upon it, he was two Leagues off it; that the English landed about 3000 Men against the Isle of *Orleans*, about a League and half below *Quebeck*; but meeting with an Ambuscade, they retir'd.

The English Account varies from this, and assures us, that Ambuscade ran away from *Whalley's* Men. The Baron adds, That if *Phips* had been engag'd by the French, to stand still with his Hands in his Pockets, he could not have done less against them. That the English kill'd Monsieur *S' Helene*, and 100 French, and took the Sienr *Folet*, his Lady, and other Prisoners. This was a sad Misfortune; by the *New-England* Accounts, above 1000 Men perish'd in it one way or other. The Fleet was separated in its return, and some Ships driven as far as the *Leward* Islands; one was wreck'd, another never heard of; a third founder'd and all the Crew lost; a fourth was driven ashore on the desolate Island of *Antecosta*, where Captain *Rainsford* and his Company, forty at first, were reduc'd by Want and Weather, to half the Number, in a Month's time, and then sav'd almost miraculously. This Expedition cost the Colony of *New-England* 40000 l. for which they ran in Debt, and paid it off by Bills which they made current, like the Exchequer Bills in *England*.

Sir William, soon after his return to *Boston*, sail'd from thence to *Bristol*; and hastning to *London*, shew'd the King the necessity of reducing *Canada*, for the Safety of his Dominions in the *West-Indies*; but the French War in *Europe* lay so heavy on King *William*, that he could not find a way to begin it in *America*, where he had enough to do to defend his own Territories. 'Twas now that this Knight, on the representation of the Agents, of his Merit and Zeal for the King and Country's Service, receiv'd his Commission of Governour, and the new Charter we have already spoken of in this Chapter. With these he hasten'd back to *New-England*, accompany'd by the Agent *Mr. Mather*; and a Day of Thanksgiving was appointed for the safe Arrival of two such important Persons. If the Author of *Sir William Phipps's* Life, in *Cotton Mather's* loose Collections, be to be credited; He was a Man of great Honour, and a true Lover of his Country; as will appear by this Speech of his to the General Assembly.

Sir William Phipps Governor.

Gentlemen;

His Speech to the Assembly. You may make your selves as easy as you will for ever: Consider what may have any Tendency to Your Welfare, and You may be sure, That whatever Bills You offer to me, consistent with the Honour and Interest of the Crown, I'll pass them readily: I do but seek Opportunities to serve you. Had it not been for the sake of this Thing, I had never accepted the Government of this Province: And whenever You have settl'd such a Body of good Laws, that no Person coming after me may make You uneasy, I shall desire not one day longer to continue in the Government.

Witches punish'd.

Cot. Mat. p. 61.

We are told, he was very careful to make good Judges, Justices, and Sheriffs, and tender in burning Witches. The People of *New-England* were at this time got into such a Humour of Witch-hunting, that there was a Society of them at *Boston*, as there is of Reformation in *London*; and that Society engag'd themselves to find out and prosecute all Witches, as the Society in *London* seeks after and punishes all Whores, &c. The *New-England* Society had thrown no less than 100 old Men and Women into Goal for

for S
some
sters
at Ne
haps
by the
Shape
not fo
him w
for the
to des
Sir
Witch
ches,
fore hi
sion;
cu'd, a
For w
ry, our
wrote
We
War;
vince
knew
had tak
ly at t
manner
figure i
their v
Astoni
them a
ry on
fors.
The
tenant
drove t
oblig'd
had lost
Convoy
the Ma
and the
Laurem
many b

for Sorcery; and some had been put to Death; some Scores lay ready for the Faggot; but the Ministers of Boston, and the French and Dutch Ministers at New-York, informing Sir William Phips, that perhaps some of the pretended Mischiefs said to be done by the Witches, might be the Devil's doing in the Shape of such Persons; the new Governour was not so ready to burn them, as those who went before him were; and many of the Sorcerers, who lay only for the Warrant on a new hearing, were found rather to deserve Pity and Alms, than a Gibbet or Fire.

Sir William by discountenancing the Novelty of Witch-burning, clear'd the Country more of Witches, than all the Executions that had been done before his time. For to use the Historian's own Expression; *They ran as vehemently upon acquisting all the Accus'd, as by mistake they ran at first upon condemning them.* For which prudent Proceeding, the late Queen Mary, our Sovereign of Sacred and Glorious Memory, wrote him a Letter of Thanks.

We must now take a further View of the Indian War; the Seat of which was in that part of the Province where the Governour was born. The Indians knew him Personally, and when they heard that he had taken a Ship full of Money, they wonder'd mightily at the Fortune of a Man, of whom they had no manner of expectation that ever he would make such a figure in the world; but when he was made Governour, their wonder was increas'd, and Fear added to their Astonishment. They knew he was acquainted with them and their Country, and understood how to carry on an Indian War much better than his Predecessors.

The French and Indians attack'd Casco, kill'd Lieutenant Clark, and 13 Men out of 30 near the Town, drove those within it into the Fort, undermin'd it, and oblig'd the English Governour Major Davis, after he had lost most of his Men, to surrender, on promise of Major Convoy to the next Garrison. However the French sent the Major and some of the Men Prisoners to Quebec, and the rest were murder'd by the Savages; Captain Laurence was mortally wounded in this Siege, and many brave Soldiers kill'd.

The History of New-England.

Upon the loss of *Casco*, the Garrisons of *Papoodack*, *Spurwink*, *Blow-point* and *Black-point*, retir'd to *Saco*, and thence to *Wells*; from whence half of them retreated as far as Lieutenant *Storers*. *Hopehood* follow'd them, burnt some Houses, kill'd 12 or 13 Men and Women, and carry'd away 6 or 7 from *Berwick* and *Fox-point*; But Captain *Floyd* and Captain *Greenleaf* meeting him, many of his Men were slain, and himself wounded. He was afterwards kill'd by some French Indians, who mistook him and his Party for Confederates with the English. At *Spruce-Creek* an old Man was murder'd, and a Woman made a Captive. At *Lamperwell* 9 Men were slain, and others led into Captivity. Capt. *Wiswell*, and Capt. *Floyd*, being detach'd by the Council of War at *Portsmouth*, to scour the Country as far as *Casco*, overtook the Enemy near *Wheelwrights-Pond*, and coming to an Engagement, the former, his Lieutenant *Flag*, and most of his Men were kill'd, which oblig'd Capt. *Floyd* to retire. They had 100 Men with them, but the English worsted by Indians 3 or 4 times that number; and besides, there were some French Soldiers mix'd among them to discipline them, and teach them a regular way of Fighting, which was the reason that the English wanted more Men in this Indian War, than they did in the former: Nor durst they venture an Action where the Advantage was so much on the Enemies side, as they us'd to do. After this Victory, the Savages made an Incurfion as far as *Amesbury*, took Capt. *Foot*, and tortur'd him to Death. The Townsmen taking the Allarm fled to their Fort. However, the Enemy kill'd 3 Persons, burnt as many Houses, drove off their Cattle, and retreated.

A greater Force under the Command of Major *Church* was sent against these Invaders. Himself, with 300 Men, went by Sea, and landed in the Night at *Macquoit* in *Casco Bay*. They march'd immediately to *Pechepscot* an Indian Fort, which they found deserted: From thence they advanc'd 40 Miles up the River to *Amonoscoggin* Fort, where they met 5 Indians haling away 2 English Prisoners. They releas'd the Captives, but cou'd not come at the Indians. There were no more than 21 Indians in *Amonoscoggin*; of them Major *Church* took and slew 20, and set 5 English

glifh
vages
Captiv
of the
out of
Conver
observe

Soon
of Tru
were se
was co
be resto
mores
their C
ashore.
were N
because
Nathan
Stake t
with a
those P
while,

The
came d
Convers
they wi
kill'd 2
at Cape
Capt. A
Waters,
to Pech
grew f
the Sava
them w
with th
They t
Beach,
forc'd t
Nidduc
Popish
Men, a
tisy'd th
but a h
hundrec

English Prisoners at Liberty; the Major hunted the Savages up and down, forc'd them to drop some of their Captives, particularly Mr. *Anthony Bracket*, kill'd some of their Straglers, but not being able to get them out of their Fortresses, he return'd, leaving Capt. *Convers*, and Lieutenant *Plaisted* in that Country to observe the Enemy.

Soon after the Indians came to Wells with a Flag of Truce, and Major *Hutchinson* and Capt. *Townsend* were sent from Boston to treat with them. A Truce was concluded: The Captives on both sides were to be restor'd, and *Edgeremet* and 5 more of their Sega-mores sign'd the Treaty (as well as they cou'd) in their Canoes at *Sagadahoc*; for they wou'd not come ashore. Among the Prisoners that were releas'd, were Mrs. *Hull*, whom they wou'd feign have kept, because she cou'd write, to be their Secretary, and *Nathaniel White*, whom they had fasten'd to a Stake to roast him to Death. Captain *Convers* staid with a good Garrison at Wells, for the Security of those Parts. And thus the War ceas'd for a little while, Anno 1691.

The Indians instead of bringing in all the Captives, came down two or three Months after upon Capt. *Convers* at Wells; but he receiv'd them so well, that they withdrew. The Hostilities being renew'd, they kill'd 2 Men at *Berwick*, 2 at *Exeter*, and 5 or 6 at *Cape Nidduck*. To prevent further Mischiefe, Capt. *March*, Capt. *King*, Capt. *Sherbarn*, and Capt. *Waters*, with 400 Men, landing at *Macquoit*, march'd to *Pechypscot*. These Forces not meeting the Enemy, grew secure, and straggled out in Parties; which the Savages observing, gather'd in a Body, attack'd them with Advantage, and drove them to their Ships, with the Loss of Capt. *Sherbarn* and several Men. They then kill'd 7 Persons at *Berwick*, 21 at *Sandy Beach*, a Family at *Rowley*, another at *Haverhill*, and forc'd the Garrison to desert the strong Fort of *Cape Nidduck*, for want of Men to defend it. A Body of Popish Indians assaulted the Town of *York*, kill'd 50 Men, and led away 100 into Slavery; the rest fortify'd themselves in their Houses; and tho they were but a handful, yet the Savages, who were several hundreds, durst not attack them. Here Mr. *Dum-*

Capt. Convers
Bravery.

mer the Minister was shot, to the great Joy of these *Romish Barbarians*. A Ship was immediately dispatched away, with a Grant to purchase the Redemption of the *York-Captives*; and those Men who remain'd in that Town talking of abandoning it, Major *Hutchinson* was sent thither with a strong Party commanded under him by Capt. *Convers*, Capt. *Floyd*, and Capt. *Thaxter*, to defend those Parts of the Country from the Incurfions of the Enemy. Capt. *Convers* was Posted at *Wells*, with only 15 Men in the Fort, and 15 more in Sloops, to assist the Garrison upon occasion from the River. Against him *Madenkawando*, *Moxus*, *Edgeremst*, *Warumbo*, Indian Princes, Monsieur *Burniff*, and Monsieur *Labrocree*, and 500 *Hurons*, or French Indians, came down; yet such was the incredible Valour of the Men in the Sloops, and the Captain with his in the Fort, that after several fruitless Attempts to master them by Land and Water, the French Generals, and their 4 Indian Confederate Princes, were oblig'd to retire; and Monsieur *Labrocree* never liv'd to bear the Reproach of so scandalous a Retreat, being kill'd in the first of it. The Enemy happen'd to take one *John Diamond* Prisoner, whom they us'd so barbarously, that 'twou'd move too much Horror in the Reader to hear it. For none but Indians or Frenchmen cou'd be guilty of it.

Pemma-
quid Fort
built by
Sir William
Phips.

Sir *William Phips* having settled the Affairs of his Government at *Boston*, and understanding the Enemy had made a terrible Slaughter of some Husbandmen on the Northside of *Merrimack* River, rais'd 450 Men, and march'd to *Pemmaquid*; where Capt. *Bancroft*, and Capt. *Wing*, by his Order and Directions, built the best Fort that is on the Continent of *America* in English hands: In which he put a Garrison of 60 Men; but the Charge of building and maintaining it, caus'd Murmurings and Complaints in the Country, which began to make Sir *William's* Administration uneasy to him. Major *Church* took 5 Indians at *Penobscot*, demolish'd their Fort at *Tacenet*, and destroy'd the Corn about it. The next year Sir *William* sent 350 Men to *Wells*, and order'd Captain *Convers*, whom he also made Major and Commander in Chief, to drain the Eastern Garrisons

ons, and
he did;
to *Saco*, a
was carr
was a g
took sever
some late
ver. At
ges appea
who pur
Horses at
Track, k
tives whi
Upon the
Proceedin
the Forts
to a real
ned to fa
or Prince
quas had
Nation, a
two Milli
to the W
English.
voy in the
against th
Priest did
War; bu
Arms and
cou'd not
Accord
August,
Mr. *John*
by *Edgen*
about a y
instigated
prevail'd
ritories c
ceive th
Treaty.
An A
fter-River
Bickford
and desp

ons, and march into the Enemies Country, which he did; scow'd the Woods about *Taconet*, proceeded to *Saco*, and laid the Foundation of a Fort there, which was carry'd on by Major *Hook*, and Capt. *Hill*, and was a great defence to the Eastern Counties. He took several Indians, and cut 'em in pieces, to revenge some late Murders they had committed at *Oyster-River*. At *Connecticut* also the English hearing the *Sava-Saco-Fort* ges appear'd about *Quaboag*, sent out a Party of Horse, who pursu'd them to a Swamp, and leaving their Horses at the Entrance of it, follow'd them by their Track, kill'd most of them, and recover'd some Captives which they had taken, with all their Plunder. Upon the late Successes of the English, the vigorous Proceedings of Sir *William Phips*, and the building the Forts in the East, the Indians began to incline to a real Peace, especially hearing the *Macquas* threatened to fall on them for killing some of their *Squas* or Princesses, on a *Whartel-berry* Plain. These *Macquas* had the Use of Guns, before any other Indian Nation, and by this Advantage are said to have kill'd two Millions of Indians. They inhabited the Regions to the West, and were generally in League with the English. The Indian *Sagamores* had a French Envoy in their Courts, who was a Friar, to stir them up against the English, and keep them in heart. This Priest did his utmost to persuade them to continue the War; but the French not assisting them with Men, Arms and Ammunition, as they promis'd, the Friar cou'd not hinder them from begging a Peace.

And,
1693.

The Indians
beg a Peace.

Accordingly a Peace was concluded the 11th of August, 1693. by Capt. *Wing*, Mr. *Manning*, and Mr. *Johnson*, in the Name of Sir *William Phips*, and by *Edgeremes* for the Indians. The Indians lay quiet about a year, and all that while the French Priests instigated them to break the Truce. They at last prevail'd upon them to make an Inroad into the Territories of the English, who were not provided to receive them, reckoning themselves secure in the Treaty.

They break
the Peace.
Instigated
to it by
French
Priests.

An Army of these Savages falling on a sudden on *Oyster-River-Town*, made near 100 Persons Captives. One *Bickford* courageously defended his House against them, and despairing to reduce him before Succours came, they

1694.

The English take
the Sachem
Bommas-
seen.

they left him: Such was the end of the Peace of *Pemmaquid*, the Place where the last Treaty was concluded. They murder'd Mrs. *Cutt* and her Family on *Piscataway*. They made an Assault on *Groton*; but were repuls'd by Lieutenant *Labin*: However they kill'd 20 Persons in that Plantation. At *Spring* Creek they slew three, and at *Killery* eight more. Here they barbarously us'd a Daughter of Mr. *Dawson*, who notwithstanding she was knock'd down, had her Skull scalp'd, and was left for dead, recover'd and is still Living. Mr. *Pike*, Under-Sheriff of *Essex*, was murder'd by them, between *Amesbury* and *Haverhill*. To recompense these Losses, the English seiz'd *Bommasseen*, one of the Segamores, who, with *Edgeremet*, had sign'd the late Treaty. He pretended to be just come from *Canada*, and came into the English Territories, on purpose to endeavour to put an end to the Hostilities; but it being prov'd that he was a Principal Actor in the late Murders, he was sent Prisoner to *Boston*. The loss of so great a Man as *Bommasseen* quieted the Indians for 6. or 7 Months, and then they renew'd their Barbarities. They took two Souldiers belonging to the Garrison of *Saco*, kill'd the one, and sent the other into Bondage.

Sometime after *Sheepscot John*, so call'd from a Place of that Name, near which he was born, who was one of the famous Mr. *Elliot's* Converts, but now an Apostate and Enemy, propos'd a Treaty, and the Indians came to *Pemmaquid*, pretending to be sorry that they had violated the Truce. To shew their Sincerity, they deliver'd up 8 Captives, and promis'd to release the rest. Col. *Philips* Commander in Chief of the Forces, Lieutenant Col. *Hawthorn*, and Major *Convers* were Commission'd to treat with the Savages, who design'd only to get *Bommasseen* again if they cou'd; and when they found the English were resolv'd to keep him fast at *Boston*, they broke off the Conference, and departed.

The Indians first
use Horses.

An Ambuscade of Indians took Major *Hammond* of *Kettery*, and sent him to *Canada*, where Count *Frontenac* treated him very honourably, having bought him of his Savage-Master. Another Party came to *Bellica*, on Horseback, which render'd them unsuspect-

ed; the
Here the
slew Ser
and 6 m
Point ab
of New
wounded
keep the
Church,
lay down
Club, w
chery u
Edgerem
he put 'e
The r
Quobeck
14 Pers
7 taken
Men out
had taken
News for
der'd th
People
Sir Will
Complai
a little
in the f
the Indi
in New-
Old Eng
The t
in those
Deputy
ney, C
ral Part
with so
no mor
5 Sould
From
Captive
man of
a Week
foot to
liv'd.

ed; they never using a Horse, unless to eat him. Here they kill'd and took 15 Men and Women. They slew Serjeant *March*, and 3 Men, near *Pemmaquid*, and 6 more as they were rowing a *Gondola* round a Point above the *Barbican*. They took 9 People out of *Newbury*, and being pursu'd by Capt. *Greenleaf*, wounded them so, when they found they cou'd not keep them, that they all dy'd, except a Lad. Capt. *Church*, Governour of *Pemmaquid* Fort, desiring to lay down his Commission, was succeeded by Capt. *Chub*, who we are told was guilty of a Piece of Treachery unworthy the English Name; for, meeting *Edgeremet* and another Prince on a sort of Treaty, he put 'em both to Death. Captain Chub's Treason.

The next Year one *John Church*, and 3 more of *1695.* *Quobeche*, *Thomas Cole* and his Wife of *Wells*, 14 Persons near *Portsmouth*, were massacred, and 7 taken Prisoners. In *August*, the French landed some Men out of a Man of War, the *Newport*, which they had taken from the English, to assist the Indians. This News so frightened the Traitor *Chub*, that he surrend'rd the new and strong Fort of *Pemmaquid*. The People of *New-England* mis'd their Governour *Sir William Phips*, whom by their Clamours and Complaints they had caus'd to be sent for to *England*, a little after the *Pemmaquid*-Peace, as we shall shew in the following Pages, being now willing to finish the Indian War; which, tho it made a mighty Noise in *New-England*, will not have a like effect on an *Old English* Reader.

The taking of *Pemmaquid* Fort threw the English in those Parts into a dreadful Consternation; and the Deputy Governour, Col. *Seoughton*, sent out Col. *Gedney*, Col. *Hawthorn*, and Major *Church*, with several Parties, to put a stop to the Enemy, who, pleas'd with so formidable a Conquest, were retir'd, doing no more mischief at that time, except in murdering 5 Souldiers of *Saco* Fort, who fell into their hands.

From *Haverhill* in the ensuing Year, they took 39 Captives, of whom one was *Hannah Dunstan*, a Woman of a masculine Spirit: She had lain in not above a Week, yet she and her Nurse walk'd 150 Miles on foot to the Town where the Indian, she was to serve, liv'd. This Woman being afterwards to travel with her

her Master and his Family, to a Rendezvous of Indians, she watch'd her Opportunity in the Night, and having animated her Nurse to assist her, they kill'd ten of the Indians with their own Weapons, and made their escape; for which Action they receiv'd a Reward of 50 Pounds, from the General Assembly of the Province, and Presents from private Persons to a good Value. The Savages continuing their Inroads, kill'd a Man at *Tork*, another at *Hatfield*, a third at *Groton*, and a fourth at *Exeter*, from whence they carried away 2 Children Captives. They kill'd another Man at *Exeter*; after this wounded a second, and carry'd off a third: They also surpriz'd and slew Major *Frost* and his Two Sons, and 3 Women near *New-Chawamwic*; and dreadful Desolation threatened the whole Province, from an Invasion of the French: But before we speak of that, we shou'd let the Reader know what became of the Governour, Sir *William Phips*, and in whose Hands the Government of *New-England* was in these difficult times.

Sir *William* having settled Peace, as he thought, in the Province, and the Trade being open'd with the Savages, went for *England* to justify himself against the Complaints of his Enemies, who prosecuted him at the Council-Board, for several Acts of Male-Administration. The General Assembly of the Province, sent Letters to Court by him, to pray that he might be continu'd Governour, which seem'd to be a sufficient Justification of his Innocence; and the King was so well satisfy'd of his Conduct, that had he liv'd, 'tis thought he would have been sent back in the same Post; but he dy'd at *London*, and the Government of *New-England* was after his Death manag'd by his Deputy, *William Stoughton*, Esq; till the Year 1697. when the Earl of *Bellamont* came over Governour. Sir *William* carry'd home with him a Project to supply the Kingdom of *England* with Naval Stores from the Eastern Parts of *Massachusetts* Colony, which might easily be done; he also intended to solicit Assistance for the Conquest of *Canada*; and the Court was so well convinc'd of the Necessity of that Conquest, as to order Sir *Francis Wheeler* to stop at *New-England*, to take in what Forces the Province had rais'd, and thence proceed to *Canada*. Accordingly Sir *Francis*

1697.
William
Stoughton, Esq;
Deputy
Governor.

is arriv'd
had lost t
the Sugar
which, ha
have pre
New-Eng

The D
fence, an
out into
Men was
the Enem
that few
a Souldie
Three mo
for the C
They too
of whom
sacred.

came on
sted to th
jor having
con'd get
Barnstable
appear to
effect: F
Savages,
being we
feat of th
posture o
Disturbar

While
Lord Bel
parture,
Novembe
but kept
ston, in
gan to g
at Lanca
burnt so
them, a
murder
get Chuk
quid Fo
nation

is arriv'd there during the Peace of *Pemnaquid*, but he had lost three quarters of his Seamen and Landmen at the Sugar-Islands, and so that Design came to nothing; which, had it been executed as 'twas projected, wou'd have prevented the Fears of a French Invasion in *New-England*.

The Deputy Governour prepar'd for a vigorous Defence, and the Forts, particularly those at *Boston*, were put into very good Order. Major *March* with 500 Men was posted on the Eastern Frontiers, to observe the Enemy on that side; and he did so much good, that few English fell into their Hands. They kill'd a Souldier near *Wells*, took another and Roasted him. Three more they surpriz'd as they were cutting Wood for the Garrison at *Saco* Fort, and murder'd them. They took Lieutenant *Fletcher* and his two Sons, one of whom escap'd; the other with his Father was massacred. Major *March* proceeded to *Casco* Bay, and came on the Enemy unaware, who after one Fire, fled to their Fleet of Canoo's and got off; the Major having kill'd a good number of them before they cou'd get away, with the loss of Capt. *Weymouth* of *Barnstable*, and 12 Men. This Action, tho it does not appear to be of any great Consequence, yet was so in effect: For it hinder'd the promis'd Irruption of the Savages, as that did the Descent of the French, who being weakened by a Storm, and hearing of the Defeat of their Confederates the Indians, and the good posture of Defence the English were in, gave them no Disturbance.

While the Savages continu'd their Incursions, the Lord *Bellamont* in *England* was preparing for his Departure, and set sail in the *Deptford* Man of War, in November 1697. He was driv'n as far as *Barbadoes*, but kept near of the Island, and arriv'd in safety at *Boston*, in December. After his Arrival, the Enemy began to grow weary of the War. They kill'd 20 Men at *Lancaster-Town*, with Mr. *Whiting* the Minister, burnt some Houses, and two or three old People in them, and carry'd away 5 into Slavery. They also murder'd one Man at *Oyster-Bay*. Nor must we forget *Chub*, the false Wretch, who surrender'd *Pemnaquid* Fort. The Governour kept him under Examination some time at *Boston*, and then dismiss him.

As

d.
devious of
the Night
her, they
apons, and
ey receiv'd
eral Assem-
ate Persons
g their In-
eld, a third
ence they
ld another
cond, and
and slew
omen near
on threat-
ion of the
shou'd let
Governour,
e Govern-
t times.
e thought,
d with the
elf against
cuted him
Male-Ad-
Province,
e might
be a suffi-
the King
d he liv'd,
n the same
nment of
d by his
ear 1697.
overnour.
Project to
ores from
ich might
Assistance
rt was to
Conquest,
New-En-
ad rais'd,
Sir *Fran-*
ck

The Traitor
Chub
murder'd
by the In-
dians.

They make
Peace.

Complain
of the Je-
suits.

1698.

The Earl of
Bellamont's
Speech to
the As-
sembly.

As he was going to his House at Andover, the Indians surpris'd him and his Wife, and massacred them, a just Reward of his Treason. They slew three or four Persons more; and had got Colonel Dudley Bradstreet into their hands, but being closely pursu'd, they dismiss'd him and other Prisoners. They kill'd two, and took two sometime after at Haverhill, murder'd an Old Man at York, and attack'd Deerfield on Connecticut side, but were beaten off by Mr. Williams the Minister, and the Towns-men. A Man and a Boy were slain at Hatfield, and that was the last Blood spilt by them. For Count Frontenac gave notice to the French Indians, that there was a Peace concluded in Europe, and they must restore all the English Captives; many of whom were dead, and the rest return'd. Major Convers, and Captain Alden were sent by the Earl of Bellamont to receive them, and the Submission of the Sachems and Sagamores; who came and excus'd themselves for breaking the Peace, saying, The Jesuits would not let them alone till they had done it; and if the Earl of Bellamont, and the Count de Frontenac, would not banish those Devils, they could not promise the Peace would last long.

Colonel Phillips, and Major Convers were sent again to settle Commerce with them, and to take a more formal Submission; which Maxus, a principal Sagamore, and others, Sign'd near Mares Point, at Casco Bay, the 7th of January, 1698.

On the Conclusion of the Peace, the Earl of Bellamont summon'd an Assembly, wherein, besides his just Praises of our Late Sovereign, King William of Glorious Memory, he recommended to them, To engage their Neighbour Indians in a Trade, by a good Regulation, and underselling the French. To provide Warlike Stores, and take care of the Fortifications. To let their Laws agree with those of England as near as possible. To which the Assembly made a handsome Reply, in an Address of Thanks; and the Lieutenant Governour Mr. Stoughton did the same in the Name of the Council. So that all was Peace and Harmony now in New-England. The Earl of Bellamont was also Governour of New-York, and chose to reside mostly at the City. In his Absence, the Lieutenant Governour supply'd his Place.

In

In the Y
as taken
ford Bellam
e was of
y Commis
condemn'd
In 1700.
ing a Roc
ridge, whe
t Appartm
On the 10
at at Bost
burnt so v
Quantity o
al Streets o
Events, th
The Indian
resent Wa
ment and
since the la
successful, t
Capers, in
mont dying
was graciou
ty to be G
overnment o
to the Lord

Of the C
Climate
mals a

MR. Del
Auth
an Error
says it has
that time
which the

In the Year 1699. the famous Pirate Captain Kid was taken at Boston, by Order of the Governour the Lord Bellamont, and sent Prisoner to England, where he was often examin'd concerning his Piracies by Committees of Parliament, and afterwards try'd, condemn'd and hang'd.

In 1700. The Assembly gave a Tax towards building a Room for a Library, and a Theatre at Cambridge, where there was an Indian College erected, and Appartments built for them in that of Harvard.

On the 10th of March, 1702. a dreadful Fire broke out at Boston, in the House of Mr. John George, which burnt so violently, that 9 Ware-houses, with a vast Quantity of Goods, were reduc'd to Ashes, and several Streets consum'd and damag'd by it. As to other Events, there have been none remarkable lately: The Indians have not dar'd to break the Peace in the present War; and the Privateers which the Government and Merchants of New-England have set out since the last Rupture with France, have been so successful, that they took 14 Merchant-men, and 3 Capers, in a few Weeks time. The Earl of Bellamont dying in this year, Her Majesty Queen Anne was graciously pleas'd to appoint Colonel Joseph Dudley to be Governour of New-England; but the Government of the Province of New-York was given to the Lord Cornbury by King William.

1699.
Capt. Kid
the Pirates
taken here.

1700.
1702.

Col. Jos.
Dudley
Governor.
1706.

CHAP. II.

Of the Country, Towns and Forts; Of the Climate, Soil, and Product; Of the Animals and Trade at New-England.

MR. Delaet, who is look'd upon to be the most exact Author that ever wrote of the West-Indies, is in an Error in his Account of New-England, when he says it has but 70 Miles in Length. The Dutch at that time shut it in so much on the South-side, from which they took all Nemhaven Colony; and the French

The Extent
of New-
England.

French on the North, where they reckon'd all beyond *Piscataway* River, as part of *Norembergua*, that there was little left for *New-England*. But we shall prove it runs near 300 Miles along the Coast, without reckoning the Angles, which wou'd make it much more. It is not any where in a direct Line above 50 Miles broad. It lies between 41 and 45 Degrees N. Latitude: Is bounded by the *Terra Canadensis* on the N. *Pensylvania* W. *New-York* S. and the *Atlantick Ocean* E. By the Situation, 'tis in the Middle of the Temperate Zone; yet the Climate is not so mild nor so regular as to Heat and Cold, as those Countries are, that are Parallel with it in *Europe*, as some Parts of *Italy* and *France*. For what reason, † we may see in

† Nam Mr. *DeLaet*, who in his Description of it says, " * The qua Mare " Summer is not so hot, and that the Winter is contingit " more cold than 'tis commonly in the same Climate; Aer mul- " and for Goodness of Air, and Fertility of Soil, the to frigidior est, " Country may be compar'd with the best in Europe. idque par- " rope.

ceani (uti videtur) vicinitatem, cuius jugis & inconstans motus; radiorum Solarum reflexum frangit, partim ab Vaporum ascendentium copiam qui Aestum mitigant, &c. — And again, Eadem regiones longe frigidiores esse qua ascendentem Solum spectant, quam qua descendentem.

* Aestas minus ferveat, & Hiems magis algeat, quam vulgo in Europa sub eodem Climate; Coeli Solique bonitate cum laudatissimis Europae merito posse comparari.

The Climate of *New-England*, in comparison with that of *Virginia*; is as the Climate of *Scotland*, compar'd with that of *England*. The Air however is healthy, and agrees with English Constitutions: On which account, this Colony is the most flourishing and numerous of any that belongs to the Crown of *England* in *America*. The Soil is generally fruitful, but in some Places more so than in others.

The Soil.

We shall shew the difference in treating of the particular Counties. In doing which, we shall run along the Coast from North to South; and take in every thing remarkable that has come to our knowledge: Dividing the whole Country into the four first Colonies

nies or P
to the pr

The la
Massacha
tion inho
stands th
East to V
Plimouth
Miles, a
in Hamp
'tis narrow
ties of,

Main, in

York g
this
of N

Cornwall,
a

The fu
is Saco
borough
the last
Hurons,
mounted
is the W
about 20
time of V
son'd by
between
are belie
hunk, an
Coast, so

nies

ies or Provinces, and those into Counties, according to the present Division of it in the latest Surveys.

The largest and most populous Settlement is that of *Massachusetts*; which was the Name of the Indian Nation inhabiting that part of the Country, where now stands the City of *Boston*. This Province extends from East to West in length along the Coast from *Scituate* in *Plimouth* County, to *Saco* River in that of *Main*, near 110 Miles, and in breadth from the same *Scituate* to *Enfield* in *Hampshire* in the Province of *Connecticut* about 60, but 'tis narrower up in the Country. It contains the Counties of,

	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.	
Main, in which are,	<i>Falmouth,</i>	Mr. —	Main County.
	<i>Scarborough,</i>	Mr. —	
	<i>Wells,</i>	Mr. <i>Hancock.</i>	
	<i>York,</i>	Mr.	
	<i>Kittery,</i>		

The Isle of Shoals.

York gives the Name of a Shire to a small part of this Province, but 'tis generally included in that of *Main*.

Cornwall, in which are,	<i>Dover,</i>	Mr. <i>Joh. Pike.</i>	Cornwall.
	<i>Exeter,</i>	Mr. <i>Joh. Clark.</i>	
	<i>Hampton,</i>	Mr. <i>Joh. Cotton.</i>	
	<i>Heddeck or</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Moody.</i>	
	<i>Newcastle,</i>	Mr. <i>Josh. Moody.</i>	

The furthestmost Bay Northward is *Casco*, in which is *Saco* River. On this River *Saco-Town* or *Scarborough* stands. Here is a very good Fort, built in the last Indian War, and is a great awe upon the *Hurons*, or French Indians to the Eastward. 'Twas mounted with 10 or 12 Guns. In the same County is the *William* and *Henry* Fort, on *Pemmaquid* River, about 20 Rods from *High-Water-Mark*; which in time of War, was mounted with 18 Guns, and garrison'd by 60 or 80 Men. The River *Pemmaquid* runs between 40 and 50 Miles up in the Country: There are besides three less Rivers, *Spurminck*, *Kennebunk*, and *Piscataway*, and several Islands off the Coast, some of which are 10 Miles long. There are

The History of New-England.

high Mountains, and horrible Forrests in the Eastern Parts of these Counties, which are the most barren of any in *New-England*: However, towards the Sea-coasts, and upon the Rivers, the Soil is fruitful for Corn and Pasture; but the chief Trade is for Beaver, Lumber and Fish. These two Counties, when they were first planted, were a Province of themselves, and were call'd *New-Hampshire*, but they desir'd to be added to the Government of *Massachusetts*. The most considerable Towns in them, are *York*, *Dover*, and *Wells*, where there are Fortifications; and so there are in all the Frontiers, and indeed in most of the other Towns, for the Indians in a Day's march can be in the middle of the Country. There were above 100 Families in *Wells*, before the breaking out of the Indian War in the East. The County-Courts are held at *Dover* and *Portsmouth* the last Tuesday in *June*, and at *York* the first Tuesday in *July*. The next Counties are,

Essex, in which are,		Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
{		<i>Amesbury</i> ,	Mr. ———
		<i>Andover</i> ,	§ Mr. Francis Dean.
		<i>Beverly</i> ,	§ Mr. Thomas Barnard.
		<i>Boxford</i> ,	Mr. John Hale.
		<i>Gloucester</i> ,	Mr. Symmes.
		<i>Haverhill</i> ,	Mr. Emerson.
		<i>Ipswich</i> ,	Mr. Benjamin Rolfe.
		<i>Lyn</i> ,	§ Mr. William Hubbard.
		<i>Manchester</i> ,	§ Mr. John Rogers.
		<i>Marblehead</i> ,	Mr. Jeremiah Shephard.
		<i>Newbury-East</i> ,	Mr. John Emerson.
		<i>West</i> ,	Mr. Samuel Cheever.
		<i>Rowley</i> ,	Mr. Tappin.
		<i>Salem</i> ,	Mr. Samuel Belcher.
		<i>Salisbury</i> ,	Mr. Edward Payson.
		<i>Topsfield</i> ,	§ Mr. John Higginson.
		<i>Wenham</i> ,	§ Mr. Nicholas Noyse.
			Mr. Crisping.
			Mr. Joseph Capen.
			Mr. Joseph Gorish.

Salem is the chief Town of this County. The County Court is kept there the last Tuesday in *June*, and

and *New*
two Fair
the last
between
built in
The Co
in *Mar*
East by
Miles u
cept it b
ry high
the Indi
three M
the Tow
Conveni
Promont
very hig

Middlesex, in which are,

§ B
C
C
C
C
L
G
L
M
M
M
O
R
S
S
S
E
W
W
W

The ch
ated on t
a Univer

The History of New-England.

83

d. the Eastern
t barren of
ts the Sea-
fruitful for
for Beaver,
when they
themselves,
desir'd to be
The most
Dover, and
so there are
f the other
can be in the
ove 100 Fa-
f the Indian
are held at
a June, and
next Coun-

and November. It has a Market every Wednesday, and two Fairs in the Year; the last Wednesday in May, and the last Wednesday in September. 'Tis pleasantly seated between two Rivers, and was the first Town that was built in *Massachusetts Colony*. *Lyn* is a Market Town: The County Court is kept at *Ipswich*, the last Tuesday in March and September. This Shire is water'd on the East by the great River *Merrimack*, navigable 40 Miles up and more; the Soil is not very fertile, except it be near the Coast. The Hills here are not very high; but in the Western Parts are inhabited by the Indians. There's an Island lies off of it, about three Miles long, which is very fruitful; and most of the Towns being built near the Sea-side, afford great Conveniences for the Fishery. In this County is the Promontory *Trabigzanda*, now *Cape Arme*, which is very high. The next to it is that of,

Middlesex, in which are,		Towns Names.	Ministers Names.	
		Billerica,	Mr. Sam. Whiting.	
		Cambridge,	Mr. W. Brattle.	
		Charles-Town,	Mr. Char. Merston.	
		Chelmsford,	Mr. Tho. Clark.	
		Concord,	Mr. Joseph Eastbrook.	
		Dunstable,	Mr. Tho. Weld.	
		Groton,	Mr. Gersham Hobart,	
		Lancaster,	Mr. John Whiting.	
		Marlborough,	Mr. Wil. Brinsmead.	
		Malden,	Mr. Michael Wigglesworth.	Middle-
		Medford,	Mr. Simon Bradstreet.	sex.
		Newton,	Mr. Nehemiah Hobart.	
		Oxford,		
		Reading,	Mr. Jonathan Peirpoint.	
		Sherburn,	Mr. Daniel Gookin.	
		Stow,		
		Sudbury,	Mr. James Sherman.	
		East-Waterton,	Mr. Henry Gibs.	
		West,	Mr. Sam. Angier.	
		Woburn,	Mr. Fox.	
		Worcester,		

ounty. The
ay in June,
and

The chief Town of this County is *Cambridge*, situated on the Northern Branch of *Charles River*. 'Tis a University, which has two Colleges, *Harvard* Col-

The History of New-England.

College, and *Stoughton Hall*. 'Twas at first call'd *Newton*, but it got the Name of *Cambridge* by the College's being built there. There are several fine Streets and fair Houses in it. The County Court is held there the first Tuesday in *April* and *October*. The next Town is *Charles Town*, the Mother of *Boston*; from which it lies about a Mile cross the Harbour, over which there is a Ferry. 'Tis situated between two Rivers, *Charles River* and *Mistic River*, and takes up the space that is from the one to the other. 'Tis beautify'd with a handsome large Church, a Market-place by the River's side, and two long Streets leading down to it. The County Court is kept there the third Tuesday in *June* and *December*.

Reading is a populous Town, commodiously situated on the Banks of a great Lake. There are two Mills in it, one for Grift, and another to saw Boards; such a one as is on the River of *Thames* on *Southwark*-side.

Watertown is noted for the Fairs held there the first Fryday in *June*, and the 1st in *September*. The Rivers are small in this County, but there are a great many of 'em, which watering the Pastures, render this one of the pleasantest and fruitfulest Spots of Ground in *New-England*. The Fields are full of Cattle of all sorts, and the Market at *Boston* is plentifully supply'd by it for Exportation, with Beef, Pork, &c. besides for a home Consumption. The Hills are cover'd with Sheep; and both together resemble *Devonshire* in *England*, and as do the following County.

Sm. Del.

Suffolk.

Suffolk, in which are,	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
	<i>Boston,</i>	Mr. <i>James Allen.</i> Mr. <i>Benjamin Wadsworth.</i> Mr. <i>Mather, sen.</i> Mr. <i>Mather, jun.</i> Mr. <i>Sam. Willard.</i> Mr. <i>Emblin.</i> <i>Monsieur Daille.</i>
	<i>Braintree,</i> <i>Dedham,</i> <i>Dorchester,</i>	Mr. <i>Moses Fisk,</i> Mr. <i>Jos. Belcher.</i> Mr. <i>John Danforth.</i>
		<i>Hingham,</i>

Suffolk, in which are,

The C
New-En
cept tw
built on
modious
of the
Mouth
and on t
Neighbo
it. The
lick and
Sir Will
ral hand
contains
four Co
Church
Houses,
and Sou
are the
French
Meeting
land Me
the Col
have b
Beef, P
ca. He
ral Cou
sit, and
short,
ty of i
gives p
The
The
first Tu

The History of New-England.

85

Suffolk, in which are,	{	Hingham,	Mr. John Norton,
	{	Hull,	Mr. Whitman.
	{	Medseild,	Mr. Jos. Baxter.
	{	Mendon,	Mr. Grindall Rawson.
	{	Milton,	Mr. Peter Thatcher.
	{	Roxbury,	Mr. Nath. Walter.
	{	Weymouth,	Mr. Sam. Torrey.
	{	Woodstock,	Mr. Josiah Dwight.
	{	Wrentham,	Mr. Samuel Man.

The Capital of this County is *Boston*, the Capital of *City of New-England*, and the biggest City in *America*, except two or three on the Spanish Continent. 'Tis built on the Sea Coast, which renders it very commodious for Commerce. 'Tis fortify'd on the side of the Sea by a strong Castle, in an Island at the Mouth of the Harbour, thence call'd *Castle-Island*, and on the side of the Shore by Forts on two or three Neighbouring Hills, which command the Avenues to it. There are abundance of fine Buildings in it publick and private; as the Court House, Market Place, Sir *William Phips's* House and others. There are several handsome Streets: 'Tis bigger than *Exeter*; and contains 10 or 12000 Souls; the Militia consisting of four Companies of Foot. There are three Parish-Churches, and a French Church, and two Meeting Houses, in this City; the old Church, North Church, and South Church belong to the Presbyterians, who are the *Church of England as by Law Establish'd*: The French Church to the French Protestants; and the Meeting Houses to a Congregation of Church of *England* Men and Annabaptists. This is the chief Port of the Colony, and from hence 3 or 400 Sail of Ships have been loaden in a Year, with Lumber, Fish, Beef, Pork, &c. for several parts of *Europe* and *America*. Here the Governour commonly resides, the General Court and Assembly meet, the Courts of Judicature sit, and the Affairs of the Province are transacted. In short, 'tis a very flourishing City, and for the Beauty of its Buildings, and the Greatness of its Trade, gives place to few Towns in *England*.

The Market at *Boston* is kept every Thursday.

The Fairs on the first Tuesday in *May*, and on the first Tuesday in *October* every year, &c.

The History of New-England.

Every year to hold three Days each. And, The County Court the last Tuesday in *April, July, October, and January*, in every year.

Dorchester is the next Town to *Boston* for bigness. 'Tis built at the mouth of two little Rivers near the Sea-side: It has two Fairs; one on the fourth Tuesday in *March*, and another on the last Wednesday in *October* every year: *Roxbury* is noted for its Free-school. The Town of *Weymouth* is the most ancient in the Province; but is not of so much consideration as 'twas in the Infancy of the Colony. Here are no great Rivers in this Shire, but many little ones, which render it so pleasant and fruitful, that a famous Author says it may not unworthily be term'd Paradise. To the Westward of this and *Middlesex* Counties, bordering on the Colony of *Connecticut*, from whence 'tis only separated by the River of the same Name, lies,

Quam hu-
jus Tra-
ctus Para-
disum
haud im-
merito
dixeris,
Del. 1

Hamp-
shire.

Hampshire, in which are,	Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
	Deerfeild,	Mr. John Williams.
	Enfeild,	
	Hatfeild,	Mr. W. Williams.
	Hadley,	
	Northampton,	Mr. Solomon Stoddard.
	Springfeild,	Mr. Daniel Brewer.
	Southfeild,	Mr. Benjamin Ruggles.
	Westfeild,	Mr. Edward Taylor.

This County being within Land, and hilly, is not so fruitful as those that lie on the Rivers nearer the Coasts. Its chief Towns are *Northampton*, where the County Court is kept the last Tuesday in *March*; and *Springfeild*, where 'tis held the last Tuesday in *September*.

We must now proceed to the next, but eldest Colony in *New-England*.

Plymouth
Colony,
Extent.

Plymouth Colony, which runs along the Coast about 100 Miles, from *Cape Cod* in *Barnstable* County, to *Manchester* in *Bristol* County; and in Breadth, from *Monument Bay* in *Barnstable* County, to *Scituate* in *Plymouth* County, near 30 Miles. It contains the following Shires; that of

Plymouth, in
which are,

The
the *Cape
England*
and con

The
Scituate
the *Me*
upon he
whereas
three si
Soil, is
And pa
we mu
on the C
the *Pro*
the *Con*
most in
from th
also cal

Barnstable Coun-
ty, in which are,

Opp
Monum
Marth
and in
Minist
besides

Towns Names.		Ministers Names.
Plymouth, in which are,	Bridgewater,	Mr. James Keith.
	Duxbury,	Mr. Wiswul.
	Marshfield,	Mr. Edward Thompson.
	Middlebury,	Mr.
	Plymouth,	Mr. John Cotton.
	Scituate,	Mr. Jeremiah Cushing.
		Mr. Deodate Lawson.

Plymouth County.

The chief Town of this County is *New-Plymouth*, the Capital of the Colony, and the oldest in *New-England*. 'Tis situated on the great Gulph of *Patuxet*, and contains 3 or 400 Families.

The next Town to this in Bigness was formerly *Scituate*; but tho *Plymouth* has the Honour of being the Metropolis of the Province, *Scituate* has grown upon her so much lately, that she has two Churches, whereas *Plymouth* has but one. There are two or three small Rivers in this Shire; which, as to its Soil, is much of the same nature with that of *Suffolk*. And passing by Sea, from this County to the next, we must weather *Cape Cod*, the highest Promontory on the Coast, and the most Northerly Point of Land in the Province. The Country about it is barren; but the Convenience of Fishing renders it as populous as most in *New-England*. The Shire takes its Name from the Town of *Barnstable*, lying in a Bay which is also call'd *Barnstable*.

Towns Names.		Ministers Names.
Barnstable County, in which are,	Barnstable,	Mr. John Ruffel,
	Eastham,	Mr. Sam. Treat.
	Manimoy,	Mr. Nash. Stone.
	Rochester,	Mr. Arnold.
	Sandwich,	Mr. Rowland Cotton.
	Yarmouth,	Mr. John Cotton.

Barnstable County.

Opposite to the South Bay of this Shire, call'd *Monument Bay*, lies two Islands; one of 'em is nam'd *Martha's Vineyard*, where Capt. *Gosnold* first landed, and in which is now the Parish-Church, with two Ministers, Mr. *Ralph Thatcher*, and Mr. *Denham*, besides several Indian Preachers, the Island being inhabited

The History of New-England.

habited mostly by Indian Converts, as is the other Island *Nantucket*, where there are no English Preachers, but Indian Pastors. The Streights between *Martha's Vineyard*, and the Continent, call'd *Malabar*, are a very dangerous Passage.

The next Shire to this is *Bristol County*, in which are,

*Bristol
County.*

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
<i>Bristol,</i>	Mr. <i>John Sparhawk.</i>
<i>Swanscy,</i>	
<i>Taunton,</i>	Mr. <i>Sam. Danforth,</i>
<i>Little-Compton,</i>	Mr. <i>Adams.</i>

Swanscy, situated at the Mouth of *Providence River*, is a Town of some note in the Country; but *Bristol* is the place of most Trade, and the chief of the County, of which *Rhode Island* is reckon'd a part. In this Isle there are two Churches, at

Newport and *Portsmouth,* } Mr. *Nathaniel Clap* Minister.

Elizabeth Island, at the Mouth of *Monument Bay*, was one of those that Capt. *Gosnold* landed on.

Providence and *Patuxet Rivers*, are the principal of this Shire, but are neither of them very big. The *Narragansets*, the most formidable Nation of all the Indians, inhabited the South West Parts of it. There is nothing in this County so extraordinary or different from the rest, as to deserve to be mention'd.

*Connecti-
cut and
Newha-
ven Pro-
vinces.
Extent.*

The other Two Provinces, which are now the Joint Colony of *Connecticut* and *Newhaven*, are in length from *Stoniton* in *New-London County*, to *Rye* in *Fairfield County*, on the Borders of *New-York*, 70 Miles, and in breadth from *Saybrook* in *New-London County*, to *Windsor* in *Hartford* about 50. The first County we meet with in them on the Coast, is

New-London County, in which are,

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
<i>Stoniton,</i>	Mr. <i>James Noyes.</i>
<i>Saybrook,</i>	Mr. <i>Thomas Buckingham.</i>
	<i>Preston,</i>

*Preston,
Dan,
Nor,
New,
Lym,
Leba,
Killin*

The E
fruitful,
which occ
Saybrook
seated on
is on the
very larg
navigable
Land.

New-L
the first
Glas River
the third
small, tha
There's a
at *Manche*
ty; next

*Tow
Farn
Glas
Had*

*Har
Mia
Sims
Wat
Wea
Win
Far
Win*

Preston,
Dartmouth,
Norwich,
New-London,
Lyme,
Lebanon,
Killingworth,

Mr. Sam. Tread.
Mr. Joseph Mers.
Mr. Ja. Fitch.
Mr. Gordon Saltonstall.
Mr. Moses Noyes.
Mr. Abraham Perison.

New-
London
County.

The Eastern Parts of this Shire are pleasant and fruitful, the Western Swampy and Mountainous, which occasion'd a great Trade for Furrs and Lumber. Saybrook is the oldest Town in the County, and is seated on the South side of Connecticut River, as Lime is on the North, at the Mouth of it. This River is very large, divided into several small Branches, and navigable as high as Hartford, 60 Miles within Land.

New-London is seated on a River call'd the Thames; the first Branch of which River goes by the Name of Glass River, the next Branch by that of Russel's Delight, the third by that of Indian River, and the rest are so small, that they are not thought worthy of a Name. There's another small River, which falls into the Sea at Manchester; and these are all that are in this County; next to which within Land, is

Hartford County, in which are,

Towns Names.

Ministers Names.

Farmington,

Mr. Sam. Hooker,

Glastenbury,

Mr. Timothy Stephens,

Hadham,

Mr. Jeremiah Hobart.

Mr. Timothy Woodbridge.

Hartford,

Mr. Tho. Buckingham.

Middle Town,

Mr. No. Russell.

Simsbury,

Mr. Dudley Woodbridge.

Waterbury,

Mr. Jer. Peck.

Weathersfield,

Mr. Stephen Mix.

Windsor,

Mr. Sam. Mather.

Farm,

Mr. Tim. Edwards.

Windham.

Mr. Sam. Whiting.

Hartford
County.

Hart.

The History of New-England.

Hartford is the most considerable Town in this Shire: It has two Parish Churches in it, Old Church and New Church; the People of *New-England* not distinguishing their Churches by Saints Names. Near *Hadham* is an Island in *Connecticut* River which waters the Northern Bounds of the County: This Island is call'd *Thirty Mile Island*, being that distance from the River's Mouth. In the Western Parts are several Ridges of Hills, and thick Forrests, which afford plenty of Game and Traffick.

The Two next Counties make the Colony of *New-haven*, and both of them are Maritime Provinces.

In *New-haven* County are,

New-haven
County.

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
<i>Brainford</i> ,	Mr. <i>Sam. Russell</i> .
<i>Derby</i> ,	Mr. <i>John James</i> .
<i>Guilford</i> ,	Mr. <i>Tho. Ruggles</i> .
<i>Milford</i> ,	Mr. <i>Sam. Andrews</i> .
<i>New-haven</i> ,	Mr. <i>Ja. Pierpoint</i> .
<i>Wallingford</i> ,	Mr. <i>Sam. Street</i> .

Near *Brainford* there is a small Iron-work on a Branch of a little River that runs into the Sea there; the Place is from thence call'd *Iron-Mill*. There's another little River which runs into the Sea at *Milford*, and another at *Guilford*.

The Capital Town of this Province was *New-haven*, which was first built; then *Guilford*, then *Milford*, then *Stamford*, and then *Brainford*. The next County to it is

Fairfield County, in which are,

Fairfield
County.

Towns Names.	Ministers Names.
<i>Danbury</i> ,	Mr. <i>Seth Shore</i> .
<i>Fairfield</i> ,	Mr. <i>Joseph Web</i> .
<i>Fairfield Village</i> ,	Mr. <i>Charter Chauncy</i> .
<i>Greenwich</i> ,	Mr. <i>Jos. Morgan</i> .
<i>Norwalk</i> ,	Mr. <i>Stephen Buckingham</i> .
<i>Rye</i> ,	Mr. <i>Bowers</i> .
<i>Stamford</i> ,	Mr. <i>John Davenport</i> .
<i>Stratford</i> ,	Mr. <i>Israel Chauncy</i> .
<i>Woodbury</i> ,	Mr. <i>Zachariah Walker</i> .

There's

There's
which falls
deserving
but it does
above 15 or
are built u
no great r
parts of N
pulous, no
and other
so great pl
land Coun
all Hills and
Rivers and
Merrimack

or 1000 Sa
Islands, th
Woods are
series for b

Having g
graphical C
Soils in eac
ral, We co
New-Engla

We shall
Fish, which
Food and T
As Cod,
Salmon, I
Smelts, E
Whales, a

Some y
New-Engla
call *Trump*
Mouth at a
Trunk, an
which ran
remainder
out, whic
Whales w
and *New-T*
Months in

The W
than 'tis no

There's no navigable River in this County; that which falls into *Hudson's* River below *Newark*, not deserving the Name, tho' 'tis broad at the Mouth; but it does not hold so above 5 or 6 Miles, nor run above 15 or 20 into the Country. Most of the Towns are built upon Creeks in *Hudson's* River, and are of no great note for Trade or Bigness; the Northern parts of *New-England* being the richest and most populous, not but that there is good Corn, Beef, Pork, and other Provisions, in the Southern, tho' not in so great plenty as in *Massachusetts* Colony. The Inland Country Eight or Ten Miles from the Shore is all Hills and Swamps, and un-inhabited. Some of the Rivers and Harbours we have mention'd, as those of *Merrimack* and *Boston*, are capable of containing 500 or 1000 Sail of Ships, and are shelter'd by about 200 Islands, that break the Winds and the Seas. The Woods are every where stor'd with all sorts of Necessaries for building.

Having gone over the four Provinces in their Geographical Order, and given an Account of the several Soils in each County, as also of the Climate in general, We come now to the Product and Animals of *New-England*.

We shall begin with the latter, and speak first of the Fish, which is here excellent, and in abundance, both for Food and Traffick, as well in the Rivers, as in the Sea. As Cod, Thornback, Sturgeon, Porpus, Haddocks, *The Fish.* Salmon, Herrings, Mackerell, Oysters, Mussels, Smelts, Eels, Lampreys, Sharks, Seals, Crampus, Whales, and others small and great.

Some years since, there stranded on the Coast of *New-England* a dead Whale, of the sort which they call *Trumpe*, having Teeth like those of a Mill, its Mouth at a good distance from and under the Nole or Trunk, and several Partitions in the Nose, out of which ran a thin Oily Substance, which candy'd; the remainder being a thick fat Substance, was scrap'd out, which is said to be the *Sperma Ceti*. These Whales were to be met with between *New-England* and *New-York*, where they might be caught 8 or 9 Months in the Year.

The Whale Fishery was more common formerly than 'tis now; and the *Newfoundland* Trade engrosses that

Low-
thorp's
Philosoph.
Transact.
Abridg.
Vol. 2.
p. 844.

that of Cod in a great measure; but there is still vast Quantities of that and other Fish taken, salted and sent to the Sugar Islands, for the subsistence of the White Servants and Negroes.

Asello-
rum ma-
jorum he-
lecum.

Ibid. p.
833.

Beasts.

The Sea is always full of Fish on the Coasts of *New-England*, whether in fair Weather or foul, but the best time for fishing is in *March, April, May*, and part of *June*. Captain *Smith* relates, that in his time there were Alkermes taken worth 30 or 40 l. which is now very rarely known, and few of 'em to be met. As is the *Stellar Fish*, of which 6 or 7 were taken near the Shoals of *Nantucket*; and Mr. *Winthrop* Governour of *Connecticut* Colony, gave the Royal Society an account of this elaborate Piece of Nature, that divides it self into no less than 81920 small parts by Branchings, and is one of the most wonderful Works of the Creation.

Captain *Smith* speaks of several sorts of Beasts, as well as Fish, which are seldom or never found in *New-England*, such as Lyons, Musk-Cats, &c. but there are Bears, Foxes, Rackoons, Otters, Beavers, Deer, Hares, Rabbits, as also that admirable Creature the Mose; of which we cannot give a better Description, than what Mr. *Josselyn* has transmitted to us among his *New-England Rarities*; 'Tis about 12 Foot high, with fair Horns, and broad Palms; some of 12 Foot from the Tip of one Horn to that of the other.

Another Author speaking of the manner of Hunting this Creature, says, They commonly hunt it in the Winter, and sometimes run it down in half a day, sometimes they are a whole one about it; the Ground being then generally cover'd with Snow, the Beast sinks very heavy every Step he runs, breaking down Trees as big as a Man's Thigh. When the Sportsmen get up with him, they dart their Launces at him, and he walks slowly after he's wounded, till spent with loss of Blood, he falls like a ruin'd Building, making the Earth shake under him. His Body is about the bigness of a Bull's; his Neck resembles a Stag's, his Legs are short, his Tail longer than a Buck's, and his Flesh very grateful; he shoots his Horns every four years.

Ib. p.437.

The Beasts in *New-England* us'd to produce a profitable Traffick with the Indians for Peltry, which is since mightily decreas'd, as is that Trade in general, occasion'd by the dis-use of Beaver and other Skins,

ne-

necessary in
abundance
Sheep, Goats
of the kind, no
very hardy

ted to the
for Draught
Leather thi
Beef, as has

Of Creep
other Place
snake is the

There are
troublesome
swarm of a
some years a
Trees for 2

of Holes in
Flies, with
the Tree,
Sting.

There is
Variety of
land; as
Geese, Her
ons, Dopp
which lead
dian Corn;
ther in Eur
and English
and Bisket,
Flax and
or Germany
Grain that

The Indi
in this Cou
English can
scribe the C
to the Roy

The Nat
parts of An
Maize. T
of Grain on
Ground, a

necessary in the Fell-mongers Manufacture. There's abundance of all sorts of European Cattle, as Cows, Sheep, Goats, Hogs and Horses; the latter are a little kind, not much larger than that of *Wales*, but are very hardy and serviceable; many of them are exported to the *Leward* Islands for Saddle-Horses, and some for Draught. The *New-England* Merchants also send Leather thither, and vast Quantities of Pork and Beef, as has been before mention'd.

Of Creeping things, besides those in common with other Places on the Continent of *America*, the Rattlesnake is the most noted and dangerous.

There are also several kinds of Flies, which are very troublesome to the Inhabitants. There was such a swarm of a certain sort of Insects in *New-England* some years ago, that they poison'd and destroy'd all the Trees for 200 Miles together. They broke forth out of Holes in the Ground like Maggots, and turn'd to Flies, with a Tail or Sting, which they stuck into the Tree, and so kill'd it with the Venom in the Sting.

There is no Country almost where there is greater Variety of Fowl, wild and tame, than in *New-England*; as Pheasants, Partridges, Turkeys, Ducks, Fowl. Geese, Herons, Storks, Cormorants, Swans, Widgeons, Doppers, Black-birds, and Barndoor Poultry; which leads me to the Grain of the Country, as Indian Corn; and in a word, all Grains that grow either in *Europe* or *America*. They send their Indian and English Wheat, Oats, Pease and Beans, Flower and Bisket, to *Bardadoes* and the *Caribbee* Islands. Flax and Hemp grow there, as well as in the *Baltick* or *Germany*; and there is hardly any advantagious Grain that they cannot and do not cultivate.

The Indian Corn being that which is most planted in this Country, and which was only us'd before the English came there, it will not be improper to describe the Culture of it, as we find it communicated to the Royal Society by Mr. *Winthrop*. lb. 630.
The Cul-
ture of
Indian
Corn.

The Natives call'd it *Weachin*, and in some Southern parts of *America*, 'tis known by the Name of *Maizis* or *Maize*. The Ear is a Span long, compos'd of 8 Rows of Grain or more, according to the Goodnets of the Ground, about 30 Grains in a Row. 'Tis of various

Co-

Colours, as red, white, yellow, blew, olive, greenish, black, speckl'd, strip'd, &c. sometimes in the same Field, and the same Ear; but the white and yellow are the most common. The Ear is defended from the Cold and Storms by strong thick Husks; the Stalk grows 6 or 8 Foot high; that of *New-England* is not quite so tall as that of *Virginia*; and at *Canada* 'tis shorter than at *New-England*; 'tis jointed like a Cane, is full of sweet Juice like the Sugar Cane, and a Syrup as sweet as Sugar may be made out of it, as has been often try'd. At every Joint there are long Leaves or Flaggs, and at the Top a Branch of Flowers like Rye-blossoms. 'Tis generally planted from the middle of *April* to the middle of *May*. In the Northern parts the *Mohawk* Corn is not planted till *June*, and yet is ripe in season; the Stalks of this sort are short, the Ears near the Bottom, and are of several Colours. The manner of planting Maize, is in Rows at equal Distance every way, about 5 or 6 Feet; the Earth is open'd with a How 4 Inches deep, and 4 or 5 Grains are thrown in it, at a little distance from one another, in the breadth of a How; then they are cover'd with Earth: If 2 grow, the Crop will answer: the Corn is weeded at a hands length, and the Earth is loosen'd about it with a How; this Labour must be repeated as the Weeds come up; when the Stalk begins to grow high, a little Earth should be drawn about it, and on putting forth the Ear, so much as to make a little Hill, like a *Hop*hill. 'Tis ripe about the middle of *September*; it must be stripp'd as soon as gather'd, unless 'tis laid thin, to prevent its growing mouldy or sprouting; the common way is to move the Ear together in long *Traces*, by some parts of the Husk left thereon, which is call'd *Tracing*: These *Traces* are hung upon Bearers within doors; and will keep so all Winter good and sweet. The Indians thrash it as they gather it, dry it well on Matts in the Sun, and bury it in Holes in the Ground, lin'd with Moiss or Matts, which are their Barns: The English lately plant it with the help of the Plow; they turn up single Furrows 6 Feet distant, then plow a-cross at the same distance, throw in the Corn where these meet, and cover it with a How, or run another Furrow over it with the Plough.

The

The In
with Fil
they bruil
ual way
sially as t
they sift a
they eat
mix it into
ake all D
which is r
Corn is w
the bigne
Milk, or
wholesome
Beer of it
When the
and Blade
nient time
Garden-Fie
the Ground
Earth; wh
sprouts, wh
ken up, the
and dry'd
that Beer, v
brown Col
durable, an
cut the Bro
marsh and
mitting Ho
Besides
Shrubs, of
the Wood
Elm, Ash,
Beech, Fir
Among
Vulgaris, o
Hills, a spo
mudas, is t
Worms th
Flies, feedi
found a Co
chineal Fli
ceeding it.

The Indians boil it till it becomes tender, and eat it with Fish or Vennison instead of Bread; sometimes they bruise it in Mortars, and so boil it: The most usual way is to parch it in Ashes, stirring it so artificially as to be very tender, without burning; this they sift and beat in Mortars into fine Meal, which they eat dry, or mix'd with Water. The English mix it into a stiff Paste, make Bread of it, which they bake all Day or all Night. The best sort of Food which is made of it is call'd *Samp*; to make it, the Corn is water'd half an hour, beaten in a Mortar to the bignets of Rice, sifted, boil'd and eaten with Milk, or Butter and Sugar, which is a very pleasant wholesome Diet. The English have also made good Beer of it, by malting it, or making it of Bread: When they malt it, it must chil both ways, Root and Blade; to do which, they heap it up at a convenient time, then take away the top of the Earth in a Garden-Field 2 or 3 Inches deep, after which they cover the Ground with the Corn, and the Corn with the Earth; when the Plot is green all over with the Corn-sprouts, which will be in about 10 days, it must be taken up, the Earth shaken from it, and dry'd, then wash'd and dry'd again in a Kiln: This makes the Malt and that Beer, which will be pleasant, wholesom, and of a brown Colour. The Beer made of Bread is more durable, and altogether as pleasant: To do it, they cut the Bread into great Lumps as big as a Man's Fist, wash and manage it as they do Malt, adding or omitting Hops, as is desir'd.

Besides Garden and Orchard Fruit-trees, and Shrubs, of which there's scarce any sort wanting, the Woods and Swamps here abound with Oak, Elm, Ash, Cypress, Pine, Chesnut, Cedar, Aspin, Beech, Firr, Sassafras, and Sumach.

Among the Rarities of *New-England*, is the *Sabina Vulgaris*, or common Savin, found very often in the Hills, a spontaneous Plant; Here, as well as at *Bermudas*, is that Berry to be met with, which breeds Low-Worms that turn to Flies, bigger than *Cochineel* thorp's Flies, feeding on the same Berry; in which has been found a Colour not at all inferiour to that of the *Cochineal* Flie, and as to Medicinal Vertue much exceeding it.

The History of New-England.

A certain Tree grows in the Eastern Parts of *New-England*, on the Bark of which are little Knobs, wherein is a liquid Matter like Turpentine, of a very sanative Nature. The Dwarf Oak grows wild here, and was sent hence into *England* to be cultivated.

But the Treasure and the Glory of their Woods is the Monarch Oak, the Spruce and Firr Trees, by which the Navy of *England* might be supply'd from hence with all manner of Naval Stores, at a cheaper rate than they are now imported from the *Baltick*. Pitch and Tar are made here, and as good in its kind as any from the *North*; and more Ships, as has been hinted, built in this Province, than in all the other parts of the *West Indies* belonging to the English, or perhaps to all the European Nations.

'Tis easy to imagine, that the Advantage of so many English Hands thus employ'd, is of much more Service to the Crown, than they would be in *England*, where there are already too many thousands that are useless. Industry is necessary for Life in *America*, where 'twas impossible for a lazie Person to live at the first Settlement of the Colonies; but there being no such necessity in *England*, we have so many idle insignificant People, that 'twou'd be well if they were all in those Parts of the English Empire, where their Hands must provide for their Mouths, and I have no Notion of any more Difference between *Old-England* and *New*, than between *Lincolnshire* and *Somersetshire*; neither can I see, why the English in *America* shou'd not be suffer'd to cultivate their Ground, and improve it as they think fit, any more than that feeding and grazing shou'd be prohibited in *Somersetshire* for the Advantage of *Lincolnshire*.

The People of *New-England* deal as much with *Old-England* as either of those Counties in proportion to their Numbers; and by their assisting the *Leward* Islands with Provisions, are rather a Service to the Publick Interest than a Prejudice; for without help from them, the *Sugar* Plantations cou'd not maintain three hundred thousands Mouths, Whites and Blacks, as they do at least, Provisions cou'd not be sent them from *England* with that Ease, Speed and Certainty, as from this Colony.

Trade.

The Advantage of it.

From exchange Boards, Provision go and home C land.

They very good for all for whence t mingham- they have selves wit yet they ther Mer Commer ment.

The M there, do hop'd they then most from hence provement since we ge servation v ons that for Minds of strious Pee Tillage, Fift intents and merly much Colonies wi ditie, as Foreign Ma Interest I sh kind of hone low'd, that ploy'd, for i other Colonie the like way be neglected that rivals o a total Indep

From

From the Islands, the *New-England* Men receive in exchange for their Lumber, by which is meant Boards, Masts, Pipe-staves and Hoops; and their Provisions, Sugar, Melasses, Rum, Ginger, Indigo and Cotton, more than enough to supply their home Consumption; the rest they ship for *England*.

They have several Still-houses in *Boston*, and make very good Spirits there; but the main of their Trade for all sorts of Necessaries is with *Old-England*, from whence they have their Stuffs, Silks, Linnen, *Birmingham-Ware*, Tools for Mechanicks; and tho they have many Conveniencies of furnishing themselves with most sorts of wearing Apparel at home, yet they import such Quantities of that and other Merchandise from *England*, as renders their Commerce very beneficial, and worthy Encouragement.

The Mines of Iron and Copper which are found there, do not produce so much as was expected, 'tis hop'd they will in time turn to a better account: Till then most of their Iron and Copper-Wares will come from hence; and we cannot but to envy them the Improvements they make of their Pasture and Tillage, since we get so much by them otherwise: Which Observation will, we believe, remove any ill Impressions that some late Arguments may have made on the Minds of many, to the Disadvantage of this industrious People; Because, says a known Trader, by *Sir Dalby Thomas* Tillage, Fishing, Manufactures, and Trade, they to all intents and purposes imitate *Old-England*, and did formerly much, and in some degree do now supply the other of the *W. India* Colonies with Provisions, in Exchange for their Commodities, as Tobacco, Sugar, &c. which they carry to *lonies*. Foreign Markets. How conveniently for the Nation's Interest I shall not determine, being no Enemy to any kind of honest Industry: But this cannot chuse but be allow'd, that if any Hands in the Indies be wrong employ'd, for Domestic Interest, it must be this and those other Colonies, which settle with no other Prospect than the like way of living; therefore if any, such only should be neglected and discourag'd, who pursue a Method that rivals our Native Kingdom, and threatens in time a total Independency thereon.

We cannot omit doing so much Justice to the Colony of *New-England* as to repeat what we mention'd above, That they ship for *England* the Commodities they import from the *Sugar Islands*; and do not carry them to Foreign Markets; which, with what was said before, is, we hope, a sufficient Answer to this invidious Paragraph. Tho' for want of Current Coin, sufficient for the Trade of the Country, the *New-England* Men are forc'd to barter Goods, and exchange one Commodity for another, yet they have Money coin'd in *New-England* at *Boston*, where there is a Mint; and the Master or Warden of it is oblig'd to coin the Money of good Silver, of the Allay of New Sterling English Money. And there is enough of this and other Silver, to answer all Persons Occasions in a Retail Trade.

C H A P. III.

Of the Inhabitants, English and Indian; Their Religion, Laws, Customs, Manners, Language, Strength and Numbers: With a short History of the University in New-England.

OF the many Nations of Indians mention'd by Capt. Smith and Mr. Delaet, there are now few left, and of these scarce any go by the Names they gave them. In those Authors we find the Indian Kingdoms of *Segetago*, *Pahriuntanuck*, *Pocossun*, *Taughtanaguet*, *Wabiggan*, *Nassaque*, *Maschecosqueek*, *Wawrigweck*, *Moshoquen*, *Wackcogo*, *Passaranack*, and their Confederates *Autocisco*, *Acoominticus*, *Passataquac*, *Aggwan*, *Massachusetts*, *Naemkek*. Of all whom only the two latter are mention'd by the Modern Historians. The former Nations lay to the Eastward; and the English settl'd in the Southern Parts of *New-England*, where Captain Smith did not trade.

Naemkek is that Country which now makes the County of *Essex*; and the next to it was the *Massachusetts*,

chusset,
New-E
Parts
Middle
ther In
liz'd tha
Comme
to trade
off their
As t
Manner
also diff
the same
we find
dwelt a
Pocassets
Stable Co
who in
dence a
who dw
and *Wap*
at Wars
about 20
rahast fur
of the C
rigons to
ets betwe
don; the
Westwar
thers Ea
more ger
those of
ry Sachem
3 or 10
Kingdom
Segamores
niors of
Governm
River or
tive in t
Priests an
ans, were
was despo
had no q

chissets, which gave name to the chiefest Colony in New-England: The People who inhabited those Parts that are now the Counties of *Suffolk* and *Middlesex*, were the most Populous of any of the other Indian Nations; they seem'd to be more civiliz'd than the rest, which might be occasion'd by their Commerce with European Nations; for all that came to trade there generally dealt with them, and fish'd off their Coasts.

As they differ'd very much in their Language, Manners and Customs from the other Indians, so they also differ'd in some measure from one another; and the same did the Nations more to the South, of which we find many mention'd, as the *Massasoits*, who dwelt about *Mount Hope* in *New-Bristol* County, the *Pocassets* in *Plimouth* County, the *Manimoyes* in *Barnstable* County, the *Nansetts*, *Mattachisets*, *Namasketts*, who inhabited the Inland-Country between *Providence* and *Merrimack* Rivers; the *Narragansetts*, who dwelt about *New-London* County; the *Pequots* and *Wapenokes*, with whom they were almost always at Wars; the *Marchicans*, the *Sequems* in *Hampshire*, about 20 Miles from the Coast, the *Navassies* and *Horakassies* further within Land; all these were Inhabitants of the Country about *Connecticut* River; the *Moranigons* to the Westward of the *Massasoits*; the *Patuxets* between the Counties of *New-Bristol* and *New-London*; the *Maquas* towards the Lake of the *Iroquois*, Westward of *Connecticut* River; the *Menequas*, and others Eastward. These particular Nations had one more general Name, that of the *Armonchiquois*; and those of *Norembegua* were call'd *Etechemins*. But every *Sachem* or *Segamore* who was Lord of a Territory 8 or 10 Miles in length, erected his Lands into a Kingdom, and gave a Name to his Nation. These *Segamores* were their Captains, elected out of the Seniors of their Noble Families. The Extent of the Government of each was commonly bounded by some River or Bay. The Vote of the *Segamore* was definitive in their Publick Assemblies; sometimes their Priests and Wizzards, who were also their Physicians, were consulted; the Power of their *Segamores* was despotick: Valour made a Man noble, and they had no other Distinction among them, but the Men

The Massasoits.

Other Indians.

Their Government.

Cloathing,
&c.

of Courage and Poltroons. They were cloath'd with Bear-skins, Wolf-skins, and the Skins of their wild Beasts; which they threw off in Summer, and put on again in Winter. Their Food was Maize, Fish and Fowl; their Weapons were Bows and Arrows, sharpen'd with Fish-bones instead of Knives; their Boats were Canoo's wrought out of the Trunks of Trees, made hollow by Fire: Some of 'em had no settl'd Dwelling, but liv'd eight or ten Families together in a moveable Tent, for the Convenience of Fishing *alamode des Tartares*, from whom 'tis said they are descended: But this is only a Guess, made from a small Agreement in the Manners between these barbarous People and those, which is harder to be prov'd, than how *America* came first to be inhabited. Some of them had settl'd Habitations or Wigwams in Towns, built with Posts and Matts, and cover'd with the Bark of Trees, large enough for several Families to cohabit, they being great Lovers of Society, and not quarrellsom.

Religion.

They had no Notion of Religion or God, they worship'd a certain Devil, but not with Solemnity or regular Rites as the Negroes do; they were then, and still are crafty, timorous, fickle, quick of Apprehension, revengeful, they have as many Wives as they can maintain, their Women supporting the Pains of Child-bearing without the least Groan.

Their Flesh is smooth, and their Complexions good; but they spoil the latter, by painting themselves with certain Juices and Oils that render them tawny.

Since their Commerce with the English they are not quite so barbarous as before: Instead of Bear-skins, &c. they wear Mantles of Cloth. Some of their *Segamores* and principal Men have Houses built after the English Fashion; and many hundreds of them have been converted to the Christian Religion: Mr. Mayhem, Minister of *Martha's Vineyard*, and the famous new English Missionary Mr. John Elliot, were very instrumental in propagating the Christian Faith among them.

But before I enter upon that Subject, it may not be improper to let the Reader know the present State of these Barbarians, as to the several Manners, Customs,

Forms

Forms
abstrad
Tho
Nation
Limits
Langua
withsta
occasio
on of
Words
Sun in
Pum, P
fible, i
would
of Ton

glin

Ther
ples, to
rity of
Thei
are abse
sometim
themsel
nion de
or grea
vern as
ways de
as are d
virtue o
claim a
nions,
who are
Foreign
manry.
Furrs,
their di
Author
these K

Forms of Government, Dress, Diet, and Language, abstracted from an Author who dwells among them.

Tho these People are divided into so many several Nations, that there are above 20 of them within the Limits of this Settlement, yet they seem by their Language to be originally of one Extraction, for notwithstanding they can't understand each other, 'tis occasion'd more from the variety of the Pronounciation of their Languages, than the difference of the Words. *Nuppaw, Duppaw, Ruppaw*, signifying the Sun in three several Dialects. *Winnit, Wirrit*, Good; *Pum, Pumme, Pim*, Oil. Their Language, if possible, is more barbarous than their Manners; and one wou'd think has not been refin'd since the Confusion of Tongues at *Babel*. For instance,

Nummatchekodsantamoonganunnonash; is in English, *Our Lusts*. Language.

Noowomantammoqonkanunnonash Our Loves. Cot. Mat. lib. 3. p. 193.
Kummogkodonattoottumnaoociticaongannunnonash . . . Our Question.

There certainly will be occasion of no more Examples, to convince any reasonable Person of the Barbarity of the Indian Language. Cot Mat. l. 4. p. 51. Govern- ment.

Their Government is a little more polite; their Kings are absolute Monarchs, yet they consult their Nobles sometimes, and whenever they do so, they behave themselves with a becoming Majesty: Their own Opinion decides all Matters of Council. The Emperors or greater Kings have their Lieutenants, who govern as arbitrarily as their Masters; the Crown always descends to the Eldest Son; their Nobles are such as are descended from their Princes, or enjoy Lands by virtue of Grants from them: They have *Teomen* who claim a natural Right of living in their Prince's Dominions, and a common use of their Land; and *Villains*, who are known to be descended from Strangers and Foreigners, and are in some measure subject to the Yeomanry. The Prince's Revenues are Presents, Wrecks, Furrs, First Fruits; in time of War the People are at their disposal: They have a Contempt of the limited Authority of the English Governours; and one of these Kings visiting Mr. Mayhew, Priest and Gover-

son of *Martha's Vineyard*, desir'd something of him, which *Mayhew* promis'd to do, adding afterwards, if the *Inhabitants* consented; the *Barbarian* reply'd, *What I promise or speak is always true, but you English Governors cannot be true, for you can't make your Words and Intentions true, but mine are always true, for I make 'em true.*

Money.

Their Money they call *Wampam*, and is Beads made of the Shells of Fish. Their Houses are a few Mats ty'd about Poles fasten'd in the Earth. They lie a-nights round a fire without any Covering, but the Turt or Bark on their Houses. Their Cloathing is a Beast's Skin upon their Backs, with an Apron hanging before those Parts that Decency among Savages requires to be conceal'd. Their chief Diet is *Nokehick*, parch'd Meal and Water boil'd up to a Consistency, and the Flesh of Deer, Bears, Mole and Rackoons; Fish and Fowl, when they can catch it. Their Physick is some few odd Specificks, a Hothouse, or Charms us'd by their Priests. The Men are lazy; their Wives do all the Drudgery, plant, dress, house, and thrash their Corn, and build their Wigwams. The Men hunt in Companies of Scores, and sometimes Hundreds together. They divide the Time by *Sleeps*, *Moons* and *Winters*. They believe there are many Gods, that every remarkable Creature has a God in it, or about it; they sacrifice to the Devil; and Dancing is one of their Religious Ceremonies: They are great Dancers, and will spend whole Days, like so many monstrous Scaramouches. Those of 'em that are converted, conform themselves as near as may be to the English in every thing.

And now 'tis time to speak of these Indian Christians, of whom the first that embrac'd Christianity, was one *Jacoomes*, a Mean Man of *Martha's Island*, whom *Mr. Mayhew* perswaded to renounce Idolatry, which he did, and profess'd the Christian Religion before the Sachems of his Country, telling them, *The God they worship'd had great Power, but limited and subservient to the God he had now Chosen.*

Indians converted.

In 10 or 12 years time this Minister converted several hundreds, and reduc'd them into the Form of Churches, over whom Indian Pastors were in time set; after him, " *Mr. Elliot*, Minister of *Roxburgh*,
" about

" about
" ry W
" the Bi
" nity, a
" he for
" tuk, ba
" Supper
" 10 year
" afterw
" Massac
" At
" Church
" Jacoom
" now be
" admitt
" The
" ans not
" Indians
" Congre
" more,
" Mr. T
" them c
" Island
" which
" At
" Church
" ing Joh
" mes, an
" meet r
" pore w
" Minist
" Doctri
" Reason
" Minist
" no Hol
" ignor
" him;
" use En
" God,
" and the
" There
" of Indian
" Pastors,
" Tongue;

" about a Mile from *Boston*, undertook the mission-
 " ry Work, learn'd the Indian Tongue, translated
 " the Bible, and several Treatises of Practical Divi-
 " nity, and Catechisms, in and about the year 1670.
 " he form'd an Indian Church in a Town call'd *Nan-*
 " *tuk*, baptiz'd them, and first administer'd the Lord's
 " Supper to them. The Minister of that Church
 " 19 years ago, was one *Daniel* an Indian. Mr. *Elliot*
 " afterwards form'd four Churches of Indians in
 " *Massachusetts* Colony.

Abstract of
 a Letter
 from Inc.
 Mather to
 Dr. Leus-
 den, Heb.
 Prof. at
 Utrecht.

" At *Mashpang*, 50 Miles from *Boston*, another
 " Church of converted Indians was establish'd, and
 " *Jacomes*, whom we have mention'd before, being
 " now become a Man of Piety and Knowledge, was
 " admitted to be Pastor of it.

" There are 5 Assemblies more of Indian Christi-
 " ans not far from *Mashpang*, the Preachers being all
 " Indians. At *Saconet* in *Plimouth* County, is a great
 " Congregation; and near *Cape Cod* six Assemblies
 " more, among whom there are six Indian Preachers.
 " Mr. *Treat*, Minister of *Eastham*, preaching to
 " them often in their own Language. At *Nantucket*
 " Island is another Indian Church, the Minister of
 " which is an Indian Convert.

C. M. l. 3.
 p. 195.

" At *Martha's Vineyard* is the two most famous
 " Churches of Indian Christians; the Ministers be-
 " ing *John Hiacoomes*, the Son of the former *Hiaco-*
 " *mes*, and *John Tockinosh*, a converted Indian. They
 " meet twice every Sunday; the Pastor prays extem-
 " pore with them, then they sing Psalms, then the
 " Minister expounds a Chapter in the Bible, gathers
 " Doctrines from it, proves them by Scriptures and
 " Reasons, and infers Uses as the English Presbyterian
 " Ministers do, by whom they were taught. They have
 " no Holidays, but Fast-days. The Barbarians being
 " ignorant of the true God, had no word to express
 " him; wherefore in their Prayers and Sermons they
 " use English Words and Terms, as *Jehovah*, or
 " God, or Lord. They teach their Children *Perkins's*
 " and the Assembly's Catechism.

There are four and twenty Churches and Assemblies
 of Indian Christians in *New-England*, as many Indian
 Pastors, and four English, who preach in the Indian
 Tongue. They have Apartments at *Harvard* Col-
 dents.

lege for the Indian Students, of which there are, or were lately between 20 and 30.

At *Nantucket* Island there were 500 Indian Christians about 10 years ago, who were wholly under the English Government, having 3 distinct Courts, with Power to hear and determine all Causes below 400 l. in value. They choose their own Magistrates, and appeal from them to the English. They are ambitious of knowing and following the English Laws, and keep Records as the English do. They put their Children to learn to write and read.

lib. 6. p. 60.

Within the Liberties of *Eastham* there were 305 Christian Indians 12 years ago, who had four Indian Pastors, as many School-masters, and six Justices of the Peace. Their Deportment, Converse and Garb, are more Manly and decent than any other Indians. 214 Converts were about *Sandwich*: At the same time a new Church of 'em was erected at *Albany*, in the Province of *New-York*.

Christians
oppos'd
by their
Kings.

Their Kings and Powaws oppos'd the Progress of Christianity to the utmost of their power, but they durst not make many Martyrs for fear of the English, to whom the Christian Indians in all times of Difficulty prov'd very faithful.

The French
misrepres-
ent
the English
Religion.
C. M.
l. 3. p. 201.

Of these Indians there are about 15 or 1600 in *Martha's Vineyard*, the whole Island being Christian; and in all, 'tis computed, that the Number of Indian Converts and their Children may amount to about 4000; of whom *Japhet*, the Indian Pastor at *Martha's Vineyard*, is a very famous Person for making Converts, tho not as the French do at *Canada*, by preaching up Heaven as a sort of Mahometan or Earthly Paradise, and Hell as an horrible kind of a Dwelling, accommodating both to the Pleasure and Terror of their Senses. They tell the *Hurons* that the English murder'd our Saviour, and endeavour to make Converts for their own Interest, more than the Good of the Indians. Thus the Catholick Indians to the Eastward of *New-England* have not got much by changing their Religion.

As to the English Inhabitants of this Colony, who they were that went first thither, we shall best be inform'd of by Persons who liv'd in those days. The lib. p. 135. Lord Digby, a famous Confessor for the Cause of King Charles

Charles I. Science we and Sir the King's but seeing farther we many into not hear the a Reproach But the Ministers England by get they ces; for v there, pre approve the propagate the main e out, Sir y Fish. How very busie and establi of Godline whether it

The first tional; sev afterwards, among the greement several Sch the Hier Swansey and up the In gainst the a most banish'd.

The broach'd, threaten'd ver all D sort of C and Disci fying, we der, if he Mather's

Charles I. said in Parliament, *That Men of the best Conscience were ready to fly into the Wilderness for Religion*; and Sir Benjamin Rudyard, *That a great multitude of the King's Subjects striving to hold Communion with us, but seeing how far we were gone, and fearing how much farther we wou'd go, were forc'd to fly the Land, very many into savage Wildernesses, because the Land wou'd not bear them. Do not they that cause these things cast a Reproach on the Government.*

But tho' 'tis certain, many of those Gentleman and Ministers who first went thither, were driven out of *First Eng-land by persecuting Rulers of high-flown Principles, list Inhabi-* yet they were not all of them of such nice Consciences; for when a Minister, soon after their Settlement there, preaching to his Congregation, *Urg'd them to approve themselves a Religious People, by endeavouring to propagate the Gospel, or otherwise they wou'd contradict the main end of Planting.* One of the Assembly cry'd out, *Sir you are mistaken, Our main end was to catch Fish.* However, it appears by their History they were very busie in settling Churches, summoning Synods, and establishing a Church there, which had the Form of Godliness; and it does not become us to judge whether it was without the Power.

The first Churches were *Independents* or *Congregational*; several *Presbyterian* Ministers coming over afterwards, there happen'd frequent Jars and Disputes among them, till at last they sign'd Articles of Agreement as to Matters of Discipline. They have had several Schisms, as they term them, among them, as the *Hierarchal Church* at Weymouth, the *Anabaptists* at Swansey and Boston, Mr. Roger Williams's, who preach'd up the Invalidity of King Charles's Patent, and against the Sin of taking the Indians Lands from them, a most pernicious Doctrine, for which he was banish'd.

The *Antinomian* and *Familistical* Tenets were broach'd, and a dreadful Confusion in Church-Affairs threaten'd to ruin the Infant Colony, but they got over all Difficulties, and settl'd their Church in some sort of Order, drawing up Articles of Worship and Discipline; which being more tedious than edifying, we shall not set down here, but refer the Reader, if he has any Curiosity to know them, to *Cotton Mather's History of New-England.*

The *Independents* and *Presbyterians* having agreed on a *Comprehension*, are the *Establish'd Church*, and the *Church of England*, *Anabaptists* and *Quakers* the *Tollerated Dissenters*. Their *Synods* have reserv'd to themselves so much Power, that the Government has little left it in Ecclesiastical Cases, and the Ministers of every Town are like so many Governours within their Precincts.

Civil Government.

The Civil Government was at first by Governours, Deputy Governours, and Major Generals, chosen by the *General Court*, who were the Deputies of the Towns, like our *Burgesses* in Parliament; but now those Officers are commission'd by the King. As to their Power, and that of the General and Inferiour Courts, their ways of raising Taxes, and making Laws, we refer the Reader to the *Laws of New-England*, in the *Abridgment* so often cited in this Treatise.

Their Strength.

The Strength of these three confederate Colonies consists in the number of their Militia and Inhabitants; it being computed, that in all *New-England* there are above 160000 Souls, and of them 50000 fighting Men; whereas the Indians, were they collected into one Body, could not make an Army of 10000 Men; but as they are divided into above 20 several Kingdoms, differing in Language, Manners and Interests, 'tis impossible for them to enter into such a Confederacy, as to be able to do the English any considerable Damage; and the latter, when they please, can dispossess them of the small Territories they enjoy in their Neighbourhood; but either thinking it their Interest that they shou'd live as they do, to furnish them with *Peltry*, and help to till the Ground, or that 'tis an Injustice to turn the right Owners out of their Possessions, or being afraid that the French, jealous of the Growth of the English Empire in *America*, wou'd join with them, they let them alone, and are in no great danger of receiving much Disturbance by them.

The way of Living of the Inhabitants.

The People of *New-England*, in their way of Living, Manners and Appearance, resemble their Brethren in *Old-England*, excepting that they are more formal, precise, morose, and not so sincere as the English Dissenters. They are very severe in their

Laws

we against if they tho t in the Ex underness ha re.

The most co ademy, and milies being rite and read have a Gra nt be qualify rich they be ll sett'd in t In the year wards buildi out 7 or 8 M ending the C mbridge; but we gone far in ed, Minister on after, and rork, as we r Colonies g and private of succeeding hole Colonies The College ur of their g ward Colle olen Presiden cruel in his was expell'd on which he ngland; wh ngland, was r, after the ator of Ne surfes, and dy In the year ole Mr. Hen ge, to which d made it a Fellows and a Governour,

g agreed
urch, and
makers the
eserv'd to
ment has
Ministers
rs within
vernours,
chosen by
es of the
but now
g. As to
Inferiour
making
of New-
d in this
Colonies
abitants,
there are
ing Men;
one Body,
ut as they
differing
impossible
as to be
age; and
less them
ir Neigh-
erest that
em with
'tis an In-
Possibili-
us of the
as, would
are in no
pance by
way of
ple their
they are
sincere as
e in their
Laws

ws against all forms of Immorality, and so much;
if they thought Pleasure cou'd not be innocent;
t in the Execution of those Laws, there is suitable
nderness had to the Infirmities of Humane Na-
re.

The most commendable thing among them, is their
ademy, and their Schools, every Township of 50
amilies being oblig'd to have a School, to teach to
rite and read; and every Town of 100 Families,
have a Grammar-School; the Master of which,
st be qualify'd to fit his Scholars for the *University*,
hich they began to establish as soon as they were
all settl'd in the Country.

In the year 1630. the *General Court* advanc'd 400 l.
wards building a College at *Newton* in *Middlesex*,
out 7 or 8 Miles from *Boston*; and the Town on the
standing the College there had its Name chang'd to

Cambridge; but the small Sum of 400 l. would not
ve gone far in such a Design, had not Mr. *John Har-*
vard, Minister of *Charles Town* near *Boston*, dy'd
n after, and left almost 800 l. to carry on the
ork, as we have already mention'd. Then the o-
er Colonies gave some small Contributions towards
and private Persons finding there was a Probabili-
of succeeding in it, contributed much more than
ole Colonies.

The College being built and endow'd, was in ho-
ur of their great Benefactor Mr. *Harvard*, call'd *Harvard*
Harvard College; and Mr. *Nathaniel Eaton* was *College*.
osen President: He was a Man of Learning, but *Mr. Nath.*
cruel in his Nature, and lewd in his Morals, that *Eaton*
was expell'd the *University*, and excommunicated. *President*.
on which he went to *Virginia*, and from thence to
gland; where he conform'd to the Church of
gland, was made Minister of *Biddisford* in *Devon-*
re, after the Restoration became a violent Per-
utor of Non-conformists, continu'd his wicked
ourses, and dy'd in Jail for Debt.

In the year 1640. The Magistrates and Ministers 1640.
se Mr. *Henry Dunstar* to be President of the Col- Mr. Hen-
ge, to which the *General Court* granted a Charter, ry Dun-
d made it a Corporation, consisting of a President, star Pres.
fellows and a Treasurer. The Governour, Depu-
Governour, and the Magistrates of the Colony
being

The College being appointed to be the *Visitors*. The Income *Revenue*. *Charleston Ferry* was settl'd upon it, and its Revenue in a little time were sufficient to maintain the College, with a very small Assistance from the Treasury of the Colony.

'Tis observable that *Sir George Downing*, who was often employ'd by the *Rump*, and afterwards by *King Charles II.* as their Envoy Extraordinary to *Holland*, was the second Person that was entered Student in this College: *Sir Henry Mildmay* sent his Son *William Mildmay*, Esq; the Elder Brother *Henry Mildmay* Esq; of *Shawford* in *Hampshire*, to study here, as did *William Soughton* Esq; late Lieutenant Governour of the Colony, and Founder of *Soughton-Hall* in this University, *Joseph Dudley* Esq; the present Governour, and many other Gentlemen of the Province, who are of principal Note in this History.

Mr. Dunster was a Person very well skill'd in the *Oriental Tongues*, and a Man of as much good Learning as ever visit'd the *American Shore*, but inclin'd to the *Baptist* Opinion: The rigid *Presbyterian* and *Independent* Party got him turn'd out, after he had been serviceable to them in helping their Ministers to translate *David's Psalms*.

'Tis true 'tis a very mean Performance, and unworthy the Spirit and Harmony of that Divine Poem, but Musick and Eloquence are not to be expected in *New-England*; and till they throw off that wretched Affectation which we commonly call *Cant*, and which is of no manner of use, unless to deceive Fools, and amuse Hypocrites, we cannot see what great use the Academy will even be to them, for 'tis the main end of Learning to please and instruct; and how formal Nonsense and miserable Jargon, tho' 'tis larded with hundreds of learn'd Quotations, can have any Effect on a reasonable Mind, is beyond Reason to comprehend.

The *History of New-England* written by *Cotton Mather*, a Man of Fame in his Country, as appears by the barbarous Rhimes before it in Praise of the Author, is a sufficient Proof, that a Man may have read hundreds of Latine Authors, and be qualify'd to construe them, may have spent his Youth in a College, and be bred up in Letters, yet have neither Judgement

and. The Income
its Revenue
tain the B
in the Tre
ing, who
afterwards
raordinary
was enterb
ildmay sent
er Brother
Hampshire,
Esq; late L
d Founder
Joseph Dun
y other Ge
ncipal Note
ill skill'd in
ch good La
but inclin
resbyterian
after he h
ir Ministr
chance, and
at Divine Po
be expected
that wretch
nt, and wh
ive Fools, a
great use th
the main end
d how form
is larded w
e any Effect
comprehens
ten by C
ry, as appe
a Praise of
Man may ha
be qualify'd
outh in a C
neither Jud
me

ent to know how to make a Discourse perspicuous,
Eloquence to express his Sentiments so that they
may please and persuade, the easiest way to Convict
; for of all the Books that ever came from the
els with the venerable Title of a History, 'tis im-
possible to shew one that is so confus'd in the Form,
trivial in the Matter, and so faulty in the Expres-
sion, so cramm'd with Punns, Anagrams, Acrosticks,
Miracles and Prodigies, that it rather resembles
School Boys Exercises Forty Years ago, and Romish
Legends, than the Collections of an Historian bred
in a Protestant Academy.

The Reader will excuse this Digression, which
hardly can be call'd so properly, it serving to give an
idea of the use the *New-England* Men make of their
University, and to shew how far an Humour or Affec-
tion may prevail to the Prejudice of the most useful
and reasonable things.

That History of *Cotton Mather's* is enough to give
a Surfeit of Letters, if all the Schools in the
World were like *Harvard-College*; for that the
eloquence and Elegance of all that School is the same
with the Historians, will appear from his Father
C. Mather's Letter to the Church of *Cambridge*, and *C. M. p.*
thousand Quotations of other *New-England* Authors 159.
atter'd up and down in the History:

This is not said to reflect on the Design of their
University, but if possible to make them see their
error in the Execution of it, that they may leave off
mean Cant, which was in Fashion a hundred years
ago, add the Purity of Language to that of Doctrine,
and let the Scoffers see that Religion needs no little
shifts and Arts to support its self, and that the Force
and Harmony of the Divine Truths are never so con-
vincing and moving on reasonable Souls, as when they
are express'd in elegant and apt Phrases, free from the
poverty and Tautology of the present *New-England*
fiction; let their own Dr. *Bates* instruct them bet-
ter in his best Pieces, if they think themselves too
stupid to learn of our *Tillotson* and *Calamy*.

There was a Press set up at *Cambridge*, and the
Bibles first Printed there, about the time of Mr.
Winthrop's being elected President.

David's
Psalms
translated
and printed
in New-
This England.

This Version, tho' tis abominable as to the Matter, has the Commendation of keeping closer to the Text than any. The Excuse the Translators gave C. M. *th* their bad Verses, *That God's Altar need not our 3. p. 100. offerings*, is of the same strain with their other Arguments, as if they had affected to be flat and round and cou'd have done better, or that we ought not sing the Creator's Praise in our best Language and sweetest Melody, according to the Example of a Holy Psalmist whom they pretended to translate. If they wanted a faithful Translation, why did they not do it in Prose; for among all their Gifts, they might with a little Modesty have seen that they were not endow'd with that of Poesy.

In Mr. Dunstar's time the Library was set up *The Libra- Harvard College*, and several Gentlemen of *ry there.* and New-England contributed to it, as Sir Kenelm Digby, Sir John Maynard, Mr. Baxter, Mr. Hill, and Mr. Gale: And many others became Benefactors to the College Revenues, as Alderman Ashurst, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Edward Hopkins, Esq; and the Most Reverend Arch-Bp. Usher.

Their De- gres. The Students began to take Degrees of Bachelor and Master of Arts; but tho' the College have Right to bestow that of Doctor, they never exercised it, except in the Case of the President Mr. Increase Mather, as will be shewn in its due place. Mr. Dunstar having been 14 Years their President, notwithstanding all his Learning and Merit, was expelled by his Brother Non-conformists, for not conforming with them in all things; and Mr. Charles Chauncy (born in *Hartfordshire*) Minister of Scituate, was elected President in his place.

Mr. Chauncy President.

He had been Greek Professor at Cambridge in England, was skill'd in the Oriental Languages; and, for my Author, the Historian so often quoted, wrote a *Witty Latin Poem* on the Death of Queen Anne, Wrote to King James I. Printed in the *Lachryma Cantabrigiensis*. He was intimately acquainted with Dr. Usher and a Man of good Sense and Learning according to the Times, but was forc'd to retire to New-England for not coming up to Bp. Laud's Heights in Matters of Ceremony.

He govern'd and Judg'd succeeded by who had h which he tr of Physick Daughter, was elected Men in the scholars, c very disobe life, that a resign'd his

While he Subscription scrib'd and 100 l. With built, that i vent by the dmitted in own Preside Degree was bers have p eated here Mr. Uria ridge, was born in Old New-Englan where he to This Man, after the wa ave had he Station he liv'd six y On his D Ministers of Congregation; and Mr. his Father c Years old Harvard Co of good Nat In his time he Ground,

He govern'd *Harvard College* with Piety, Care and Judgment seventeen Years, and then dying, was succeeded by Dr. *Leonard Hoar*, the first President who had his Education in the same College. After which he travel'd to *England*, and commenc'd Doctor of Physick in *Cambridge*. He marry'd the *Ld. Lisle's* Daughter, and returning with her to *New-England*, was elected President of the College; but some great Men in the Country taking a disgust to him, the Scholars, countenanc'd by those Gentlemen, were very disobedient, and made him live such an uneasy Life, that after he had been President four Years he resign'd his Office.

While he govern'd the College there was a new Subscription taken to enlarge it, and near 200 l. subscrib'd and paid, of which Sir *Thomas Temple* gave 100 l. With this Money there were so many Edifices built, that it look'd like a new College, which still went by the Name of the Old. Several Indians were admitted in the time of his Predecessor, and in his own Presidency. The first who took his Batchelours Degree was Mr. *Caleb Cheeschaumuk*: Since that, others have proceeded as far; and many Indians educated here, are Preachers to Indian Churches.

Mr. *Urian Oakes*, Minister of the Town of *Cambridge*, was chosen to succeed Dr. *Hoar*. He was born in *Old-England*, but brought over young to *New-England*, and educated in *Harvard College*, where he took his Batchelour and Master's Degree. This Man, excepting that he was very religious after the way of the Country, does not seem to have had any extraordinary Qualities worthy the Station to which he was advanc'd, and in which he liv'd six years.

On his Death Mr. *Increase Mather*, one of the Ministers of *Boston*, was elected President, but his Congregation refusing to part with him he declin'd; and Mr. *John Rogers* was chosen into that Place: his Father came to *New-England* when he was about 10 Years old; he ow'd what Learning he had to *Pres. Harvard College*, and is commended for abundance of good Nature.

In his time the College was like to have been burnt to the Ground, but was prevented by his accidental shortening

1675.
Mr. Urian
Oaks Pres.

1682.
Mr. John

tening his Prayer; it being the Custom of the President of the College to pray in the Publick Hall with the Scholars. Mr. Rogers, like the rest of his Brethren us'd to be somewhat long; but on the Day that the College took Fire he was shorter than ordinary, and the Scholar in whose Chamber it was, return'd time enough to have it put out.

1684.
Mr. Inc.
Mather
Pres.

He dy'd after he had enjoy'd his Office two Years and the present Rector Mr. Increase Mather, was chosen in his Place, to which he was now promoted with the Consent of his Congregation. This Mather was the first President who was born in New-England whither his Father Mr. Richard Mather was driven by Persecution in 1635. His Son is the Author of the *New-England* History; and the Father, when he was in *England* to sollicite the Affairs of the Country as their Agent, preach'd often in the Dissenting Meetings; his Stile being more affected and quaint than those of the *Non-conformist* Teachers who are most famous in that way, and wou'd confirm all that has been of the *Harvard* Eloquence, if any of his Sermons had been Printed.

On the taking of the Charter from this Colony, Col. Dud'y, whom the King had made President of *New-England*, chang'd Mr. Mather's Title of President into that of Rector.

Mr. Leve-
ret and
Mr. Brat-
tle.

1692.

While Mr. Mather was in *England*, Mr. Leve-
ret and Mr. Brattle, two of the Fellows, govern'd the College; and when he return'd with the New Charter granted by King William and Queen Mary, the University had a New Charter granted them also by the Government of *New-England*.

Stough-
ton Hall.

After this the Academy began to thrive, *Harvard* College or Colleges being too little for the Students, Mr. Stoughton built a New one, with more Expence than the Benefactor of *Harvard* was at; it is from him call'd *Stoughton* Hall, and in both of them there are near 400 Students English and Indians.

This University has produc'd several Writers, who have publish'd Sermons and other Discourses in *New-England* and *Old-England*, but they have had no great Currency or Reputation, tho it must be confess'd that some of the Authors seem to be what is generally understood by the Phrase *Good Schollars*; and we know no reason

son why
Advantage
other Uni
ev'ry Nat
and which
the Geniu

In return
done the
England,
for a Doct
the Univer
had to do

Quum g
Philos
confer
a sum
dum
illis
quoni

Notwith
William an
mour and
a Charter
Doctor's D
Mr. Mather
the Univer
it on any
count of
List of all
dation of

A List o

Mr. Na
Mr. He
Mr. Cha
Dr. Leo
Mr. Ur
Mr. Joh
Dr. Inc.

son why they shou'd not be so, having the same Advantages of Books and Brains, as other Men in other Universities; but 'tis in Stile, as in Painting, ev'ry Nation has a Manner, by which 'tis known, and which will be more or less Polite, according to the Genius of the People.

In return for the Services Mr. Inc. Mather had done the Country and College by his Agency in England, the latter presented him with a Diploma, for a Doctor's Degree, Sign'd by the Fellows, with the University-Seal annex'd to it. The Power they had to do it appears by the Words of the Diploma,

Quum gradus Academicas, tam in Theologia quam in Philosophia, pro more Academicarum in Anglia, conferendi Potestas, ab amplissimo Gubernatore, & a summa Massachusettensis Provincia Curia, secundum Sereniss. Regis ac Regina Gulielmi & Mariae, illis concessum Diploma sit ad nobis commiss. & quoniam vir clarissimus, &c.

Notwithstanding that the Charter granted by King William and Queen Mary had impower'd the Governour and General Court of Massachuset-Colony to grant a Charter to the College, with Power of conferring Doctor's Degrees, as is exprest in the Diploma; yet Mr. Mather himself never made use of the Title, nor the University before nor since thought fit to bestow it on any other Man. We shall conclude this Account of New England, and its University, with a List of all the Presidents and Fellows from the Foundation of Harvard College to the year, 1698.

A List of the Presidents and Fellows of Harvard College.

Mr. Nath. Eaton, President, expell'd.	1630.
Mr. Henry Dunstar, President, turn'd out.	1640.
Mr. Charles Chauncy, President.	1654.
Dr. Leonard Hoar, President, resign'd.	1671.
Mr. Urian Oaks, President.	1675.
Mr. John Rogers, President.	1681.
Dr. Inc. Mather, President and Rector.	1684.

Years in which they took their Bachelors Degree.

1643.	Mr. Samuel Mather,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Samuel Danforth,	
	Mr. Jonathan Mitchel,	} Fellows.
1647.	Mr. Con. Star,	
	Mr. Samuel Eaton,	} Fellows.
1649.	Mr. Urian Oaks,	
	Mr. John Collins,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Michael Wigglesworth,	
1651.	Mr. Thomas Dudley,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Thomas Shepherd,	
	Mr. Samuel Nowell,	} Fellows.
1653.	Mr. Samuel Hooker,	
	Mr. Samuel Bradstreet,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Joshua Moody,	
	Mr. Nehemiah Ambrose,	} Fellows.
1655.	Mr. Gershom Bulkley, Fellow.	
	Mr. Increase Mather,	} Fellows.
1656.	Mr. Thomas Graves,	
	Mr. Zachariah Symms,	} Fellows.
1657.	Mr. Zachariah Bregden,	
	Mr. Samuel Shepherd, Fellow.	} Fellows.
1658.	Mr. Samuel Willard, Fellow.	
1659.	Mr. Samuel Elliot,	} Fellows.
1660.	Mr. Peter Bulkley,	
	Mr. Nathaniel Chauncey,	} Fellows.
1661.	Mr. Joseph Whiting,	
1662.	Mr. Solomon Stoddard, Fellow.	} Fellows.
	Mr. Alexander Nowell,	
1664.	Mr. Joseph Pincho,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Joseph Brown,	
1666.	Mr. John Richardson,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Nehemiah Hobart, Fellow.	
1667.	Mr. Daniel Gookin, Fellow.	} Fellows.
1669.	Mr. Ammis Ru-Orbet, Fellow.	
1670.	Mr. Isaac Foster,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Samuel Sewall,	
1671.	Mr. Samuel Danforth,	} Fellows.
	Mr. Peter Thacker,	
	Mr. Samuel Andrew,	} Fellows.
1675.	Mr. Nathaniel Gookin,	

Mr. John
Mr. John
Mr. Cotton
Mr. John
Mr. William
Mr. Samuel
Mr. Neh
Mr. John
Mr. Paul
Mr. Benj.
Mr. Ebene
Mr. Jabez
Mr. James
Mr. Charles

The two last
taught Acad
was forc'd to
in the late R
'Twas imp
with that E
being oblig'd
merica than
this Treatise
Year, 1708.

We left C
ment; and
vigorously en
side: He fit
and order'd t
whom they t
New-Englan
ful, took 3
fore this Co
Esq; present
Her Majesty
of the Provin
There has
ting to this C
his Post, and
cil of Massac
Charter, cho
not procure
transmitted t

Mr.

The History of New-England.

115

Mr. John Danforth, Fellow.		1677.
Mr. John Cotton,	} Fellows.	1678.
Mr. Cotton Mather,		
Mr. John Leverat,	} Fellows, Vice Presi-	1680.
Mr. William Brattle,		
Mr. Samuel Mitchell, Fellow.	} dents.	1681.
Mr. Neh. Walter, Fellow.		
Mr. John White, Fellow.		1684.
Mr. Paul Dudley,	} Fellows.	1685.
Mr. Benj. Wadsworth,		
Mr. Ebenezer Pemberton, Fellow.		1690.
Mr. Jabez Fitch, Fellow.		1691.
Mr. James Allen,	} Fellows.	1694.
Mr. Charles Morton,		

The two last were bred in *England*, and Mr. *Morton* taught Academical Learning at *Newington*, before he was forc'd to fly to *New-England*, by the Persecution in the late Reigns.

'Twas impossible to publish a Work of this Nature with that Expedition as was expected, the Author being oblig'd to stop longer for Informations from *America* than he at first imagin'd; by which means this Treatise has remain'd unpublish'd till the present Year, 1708.

We left Colonel *Dudley* in Possession of the Government; and he began the Exercise of his Power with vigorously entering into the War with *France* on that side: He fitted out 4 Sloops, put 200 Men aboard, and order'd them to cruise on the *French Coast*; from whom they took 9 Vessels; and at the same time, the *New-England Privateers*, who have been very successful, took 3 Ships bound for *Canada*. Sometime before this *Constantine Phips*, Esq; and *Wil. Vaughan*, Esq; presented a very loyal Address, to congratulate Her Majesty's Accession to the Throne, in the Name of the Province of *New-Hampshire*.

There has happen'd no material Events since relating to this Colony; the same Governour continues in his Post, and we should have added a List of the Council of *Massachusetts*; but the People, by Virtue of their Charter, choosing the Members themselves, we could not procure their Names, which are not regularly transmitted to *England*. It seems the Province of *East*

or *New Hampshire*, which we have spoken of, deliver'd up their Rights entirely into the Hands of the King; who by the new Charter that was granted to it, reserv'd to the Crown the Power of naming the Council. Tho *New Hampshire* is incorporated with the Government of *New-England*, yet the Counsellors are not elected by the Inhabitants, as those of *Massachusetts*, but nam'd by the Government in *England*. Being at present,

Colonel *Joseph Dudley*, Governour.

John Usher, Esq; Lieut. Governour.

Wil. Partridge, Esq;

Peter Coffin, Esq;

Robert Elliot, Esq;

John Gearish, Esq;

Wil. Vaughan, Esq;

Sam. Penhallow, Esq;

John Plaisted, Esq;

Richard Waldron, Esq;

Winthrop Hilton, Esq;

Joseph Smith, Esq;

} Counsellors

THE

An Ac
Rev
Tim
Inha

they call
drian B
who, th
pear th
the Con
Captain
them a
without
by the
by ther
Holland

THE
HISTORY
OF
NEW-YORK:

CONTAINING

An Account of its Discovery, Settlement,
Revolution, and all other Events, to this
Time ; Of the Climate, Soil, Trade,
Inhabitants, *English* and *Indians*,

THIS Country was at first call'd *Novæ Belgia*; and the *Dutch*, who pretended to the Propriety of it, included *Martha's Vineyard*, and *Elizabethtown-Island*: The former of which they call'd *Henry Christen's Island*; and the latter, *Adrian Block's*, from the Name of two Masters of Ships, who, they say, discover'd them: But it does not appear they had any Right to those Isles, or indeed to the Continent on *Hudson's River*, till they bought it of Captain *Hudson*, who discover'd it, and sold it to them about the Year 1608. which Sale being without the King's Licence, was excepted against by the *English*; but there were no Attempts made by them to settle here themselves, or hinder the *Hollanders*.

The *English*, who sail'd from *Holland* to the *West-Indies*, and settled *Plimouth-Colony*, intended to take Possession of the Territories lying on the Coast of the Bay form'd by *Newhaven Colony*, and *Long-Island*; but the Master of the Ship being a *Dutchman*, was brib'd by some of his Countrymen to betray them, and land them further *Eastward*; which he did accordingly, and prevented their settling in *Nova Bel-*

The Dutch *gias*, where the *Hollanders* had begun to plant, but *Settlement* had been driven thence by Sir *Samuel Argall*, Governour of *Virginia*. They then apply'd themselves to King *James I.* who gave them leave to build some Cottages, for the Convenience of their Ships touching there for fresh Water and Provisions, in their Voyage to *Brazil*. Under this Pretence, they incroach'd by little and little, so much, that they built Towns, fortify'd them, plant'd, and became a flourishing Settlement.

They built the City of *New Amsterdam*, in an Isle call'd *Manahattan*, at the Mouth of *Hudson's River*; to which they gave the Name of the *Great River*; and the Bay to the East of it, they call'd by that of *Nassau*. They built a Fort about 80 Miles up the River, which they nam'd *Orange Fort*; and from thence us'd to drive a profitable Trade with the *Indians*, who came over Land as far as from *Quebec*, to deal with them. *Henry Christian*, and after him, *Jacob Elkin*, were the first *Dutch* Governours here, for the *West-India Company* in *Holland*; to whom the States General had granted this Country.

Its Bounds. The first Bounds of *New-York*, were *Maryland* on the South; the Main Land, as far as could be discover'd, *Westward*; the *Great River* of *Canada*, *Northward*; and *New-England*, *Eastward*. It now is reduc'd into a much narrower Compass; for King *Charles II.* having given this Tract of Land to the Duke of *York*, by a Charter, dated the 12th of *March*, 1664. the Duke made a Grant of part of it to Under-Proprietors, who call'd it *East* and *West-Jersey*; which are now its Limits in the *West* and *South*: On the *North* 'tis bounded by *Long-Island*; and on the *East* by *New-England*: *Hudson's River* divides it from the *Jerseys*; and a Line drawn between *Rye* and *Greenwich*, separates it from *New-England*: So

So that the
bove 20 Miles
was properly
and a half,
Latitude.
of *New-Engl*
Bushel of *H*
which was
fire it.

According
Wars after
had bestow'd
Men of War
mand of Sir
arriv'd there
ded 3000 Miles
directly to *N*
Town was
the Service of
unexpected
knowing the
prevail'd upon
Robert Car,
that all who
should be re
zens of *New*
outed of their
the Govern
could not ha
had brought
Place fell into
somerly built
ver'd with
high, it affo
tors at a Dis
remain'd, an
of *England*.
ry off their
ply'd by *En*
the meanest
Strength an
pare with a
Mayor, Rec
Council, C

So that the whole Province on the *Continent* is not above 20 Miles over, but 'tis 120 in Length; and what was properly call'd *Nova Belgia*: It lies between 40 and a half, to 42 Degrees, 30 Minutes, Northern Latitude. The Climate is more temperate than that of *New-England*, and the Soil so fruitful, that one Bushel of *English* Wheat has produc'd a Hundred, which was a fair Temptation for the *English* to desire it. The Climate and Soil.

Accordingly in the Beginning of the first *Dutch* Wars after the *Restoration*, King *Charles the 1st*, who had bestow'd it on his Brother, sent a Squadron of Men of War, and some Land-Forces, under the Command of Sir *Robert Car*, to recover it. Sir *Robert* arriv'd there in the latter End of the Year 1664. landed 3000 Men upon *Manhattan* Island, and march'd directly to *New-Amsterdam*. The Governour of the Town was an old Soldier, and had lost a Leg in the Service of the *States*; but being surpriz'd at the unexpected Attack of a formidable Enemy, and not knowing the certain Numbers of the *English*, he was prevail'd upon by the Inhabitants to surrender. Sir *Robert Car*, by Order from the King, had proclaim'd, that all who submitted to the Crown of *England*, should be receiv'd into his Protection; and the Citizens of *New-Amsterdam* fearing to be plunder'd, and outed of their Possessions, if they resisted, perswaded the Governour to deliver up the Town; which they could not have defended against the Besiegers, if they had brought their Artillery to bear: And thus this Place fell into the Hands of the *English*! 'Twas handsomely built by the *Dutch*, of Brick and Stone, cover'd with red and black Tile; and the Land being high, it affords an agreeable Prospect to the Spectators at a Distance. Above half the *Dutch* Inhabitants remain'd, and took an Oath of Fidelity to the King of *England*. Those that remov'd, had Liberty to carry off their Effects, and their Places were soon supplied by *English*. There are now above 800 Houses, the meanest worth 100 *l.* in this City, which for the Strength and Pleasantness of its Situation, may compare with any in the World. 'Tis govern'd by a Mayor, Recorder, Alderman, and Sheriff, Common Council, Constables, and other inferiour Officers, in

The English reduce it.

1664.

The Town of New-York.

Imitation of the Government of the Corporations in England. It has but one Parish Church, but that is large and beautiful; and the Minister has 100 l. a Year settled on him. The Council-House is a fair Edifice. *James-Fort* is a strong, regular Fortification, and commands the River. Besides this, it has a Wall to the Land, mounted with Ordnance, and seems to defy the Power of *French* or *Indians*. There is a Printing-Press in this Town. The Island it stands in, is 14 Miles long, but is not of a proportionable Breadth. It was inhabited by a Nation call'd the *Manhattes*, who were more fierce and barbarous than the other *Indians*.

These the *Hollanders* dispossessing, had an Appearance of Right to succeed them; but Arms decided the Dispute much more to the Advantage of the *English*; who 13 Days after the Surrender of *New-Amsterdam*, to which City was now given the Name of *New-York*, march'd under Colonel *Nicholls*, up the Country to *Orange Fort*, which stood on *Hudson's River*, 5 Miles below where the Eastern Branch parts from the Southern, and runs up almost to the Lake of the *Iroquois*, 200 Miles within Land. This Fort Colonel *Nicholls* easily reduc'd, and call'd it *New Albany*, the Duke of *York's Scotch Title*. Here is always a Garrison of two Companies of Soldiers.

About 50 Miles above *New-York* is *Kingston*, a very pretty Town, containing 200 Families, *English* and *Dutch*. 'Tis well-built, and popular for its Bigness.

Twenty Miles above *Albany*, is *Schenectada*, a Town seated in one of the finest Vales in the World, not unlike the pleasant Valley, which the *Trent* waters, in *Nottinghamshire*, to which it has been often compar'd. Here are near 100 Houses. The Inhabitants are part *English*, and part *Dutch*. This Place was destroy'd in the beginning of the late War with *France*, by the *French Indians*, who massacred the People, sparing neither Age nor Sex; since which there's a Fort built to prevent a Surprise.

Indian Nations.

Between this Fort and *New-York* several Indian Nations dwelt; as the *Mackentowami*, the *Pachami*, the *Wooran*, the *Mankikam*, and next them, the *Maquas*, Westward of *Fort Orange*. The Country all along is very fruitful. The *Indians*, who are not very

very industr
Western
no Planta
and C
On the C
which are t
East-Chester,
Stonebrook,
Town and Pa
reduc'd all o
in the Town
Castle, on t
Staten Island
Long Island,
Thus the En
where to the
nour of the
ded a Leagu
dians.

Before we
Colony, 'twi
Island, whic
Miles long,
English, befo
James having
Earl of *Sterl*
habitants of
streighten'd
Consent of
they made a
plant and se
100 Familie
and began t
the *Dutch* o
bance, that
settled at the
and Civil Co
little Colon
Southampton
Province of
English reco
adjacent Co
Bridge-Ham
the Island i

very industrious, possess it all, except *Sopors-Kill*, on the Western Shoar of *Hudson's River*. And the Dutch have no Plantations there, as the *English* have since, tho' the Land and Country is still thin of Settlements.

On the Coasts is the County of *West-Chester*, in which are the Towns and Parishes of *West* and *East-Chester*, *Tonkers*, *De Cham*, the Parish of *Rye*, *Stonebrook*, *Mumerenock* and *Bedford*. The County Town and Parish of *Richmond*. Sir Robert Car having reduc'd all on the East Side of *Hudson's River*, took in the Town and Fort of *Arasapha* and *Delaware-Castle*, on the West Side, without losing a Man. *Staten Island*, at the Mouth of *Raritan River*, and *Long Island*, follow'd the Fate of the other Towns. Thus the *English* oblig'd the Dutch to submit every where to them. Col. *Nicholls* was appointed Governor of the Province of *New-York*, and he concluded a League between the Inhabitants and the

Before we enter further into the History of this Colony, 'twill be requisite to say something of *Long Island*, which is part of the Settlement. 'Tis 100 Long Miles long, but 12 broad, and was inhabited by the *English*, before Sir Robert Car came thither; for King C. Mat. James having made a Grant of it to *William Alexander*, Earl of *Sterling*, Proprietor of *New-Scotland*, the Inhabitants of *Lyn* in *New-England*, finding themselves streighten'd in Ground, resolv'd to remove thither by Consent of the Lord *Sterling*; with whose Agents they made an Agreement, for a Part of the Island to plant and settle in. They then went thither, about 100 Families in all, with Mr. *Pierston* their Minister, and began to plant at the West End of the Island; but the Dutch of *New Amsterdam* gave them such Disturbance, that they deserted their first Plantation, and settled at the East End, entering into an Ecclesiastical and Civil Combination, for the Government of their little Colony. They built a Town, and call'd it *Southampton*; where it remains still, and is part of the Province of *New-York*, being annex'd to it when the *English* recover'd the Dominion of this Island, and the adjacent Continent. Out of *Southampton* the Parish of *Bridge-Hampton* was lately taken. The West End of the Island is now *Queens County* in this Province.

The

The Town and Parish of *Jamaica*, the Town and Parish of *Hempsted*, *Constable Town*, *Utrecht*, and others of less Note, belong to *Queens County*.

The whole Island is furnish'd with convenient Harbours; and off the Coast, particularly the *Eastern*, lie several Islands, but none of them inhabited. *Saaten Island*, at the West End, is 10 Miles long, and 3 or 6 over. The chief Plantations upon it are *Billops*, at the South End; and *Palmers* at the North: On the *Eastern Point* is *Dover*, another small Settlement.

In *Long Island* there were also some *French* Inhabitants; but now they are either remov'd, or subject to the *English* Government. The *Dutch* made as good Earthen Ware here as they do at *Delft*; and some write, that it did not fall short of *China*; but the *English* do not come up to them in that Manufacture.

The Trade. The Trade driven by them, is Furs, Skins, Tobacco, as good as that of *Maryland*; Horses, Beef, Pork, Oil, Pease, Wheat, and all sorts of *English* Grain, which they sow, and have very good Increase of it. All other Fruits and Herbs thrive there, together with Flax, Hemp, Pumpkins, Melons, &c. The Soil being most of it very good. Towards the Middle of the Island lies a Plain 16 Miles long, and four broad; where there grows very fine Grass, which makes extraordinary good Hay, and is excellent Pasture for Sheep or other Cattel. There is no manner of Rubbish, Stick or Stone to be found upon it; and the Place is so fit for Races, that twice a Year the best Horses in the Island are brought thither to try their Speed, and the Prize is a Silver Cup to the swiftest.

There are two or three other small Plains of about a Mile square, which are very beneficial to the neighbouring Towns..

On the South Side of *Long Island*, in the Winter lie Store of *Whales* and *Grampusses*, which the Inhabitants catch in their small Boats, and drive a considerable Trade with the Oil. An infinite Number of *Seals* lie all the Winter on some broken Marshes, Beaches and Bars of Sands. They make an excellent Oil, and wou'd be very advantageous to the People of the Country, if they fell into an easier way of coming at them.

The *English*, and deal with Deer, Bears, Beavers, Furs; and Venison, her Trade is in Horses, Bees, Return, Sugar, a very profitable Trade and the which they lardandy; and tade in all the small Ship impward from Nove 3000 l. in adventure was n Voyage.

The Producte the same with the peculiar to it self to that *History* cher, and the trees more to the Winter, and he an Countries The Animals, keeping *Vermont* *New England*, a s needful to cause every M ing or other; ose of *New-Yo* That their La *New England* Inc ncles, as, The Neck, N A Lyon, *Synq* Speech, there ference of th ese *Indians*, t mb'd. By dyin air Complexi ur is black.

The *English*, and others, on the Continent of *New-York*, deal with the *Indians* for the Skins of Elks, Deer, Bears, Beavers, Otters, Raccoons, and other Furs; and in Summer are supply'd by them, with Venison, Fish and Fowl very cheap. Their other Trade is to *Barbadoes* and the *Sugar Islands*, with Horses, Beef and Pork, for which they receive, in Return, Sugar, Melasses, Rum, &c. They also have a very profitable Commerce from *New-York* to *Madera* and the *Azores*, with Pipe Staves and Fish, which they load their Ships back with Wine and Brandy; and there is scarce a more advantageous Trade in all the *English* Commerce. I have known a small Ship employ'd in this Voyage, backward and forward from *New-York* to *Madera*, clear the Owners above 3000 *l.* in less than two Years; when the first Adventure was not a sixth Part of the Neat Proceed of the Voyage.

The Productions of the Soil of this Country are the same with that of *New England*. It has nothing peculiar to it self, and we shall therefore refer the Reader to that *History* concerning this Article. The Soil is *Soil*. richer, and the Climate milder; lying 2 or 3 Degrees more to the South; but 'tis here also colder in Winter, and hotter in Summer, than in the European Countries of the same Latitude.

The Animals, Beasts, Birds, Fish and Fowl, the *Animals*. creeping Virmin and Insects, are the same as those in *New England*, and the Savages so little different, that it is needless to repeat the Description of them, but because every Nation of the *Indians* vary in some-Indians. thing or other; we shall give a short Account of some of *New-York*.

That their Language is as barbarous as that of the *New England* Indians will appear by the following Examples, as,

The Neck, *Nequoykangen*,
A Lyon, *Syquoumackvggh*, &c. And of this dreadful Speech, there are several Dialects, according to the difference of the Kingdoms. As for the Persons of these *Indians*, they are generally handsome and well built. By dying or painting their Skin, they spoil their Complexions, which are all Tawny. Their hair is black. They are bold and dextrous in handling

ling their Bows and Arrows, which are their chief Arms. They keep a friendly Correspondence with the *English*, whom *Pere Hennepin*, owns they love much better than the *French*; and never gave them any such Disturbance, as our Countrymen have met with in *New England* and *Virginia*. They are apt to learn all things, and willing to be instructed in the *Christian Religion*, but their *Pawaws*, or Priests, who live by Idolatry, hinder them from embracing it, as much as possible; and by Perswasions and Threats keep 'em in their Diabolical Worship. As to their Wives, no People in the World make themselves so easie in Wedlock, if a Man dislikes his Wife, he turns her off for the least Offence that is, and takes another. The Woman, in Revenge, carries away her Children with her, and the House is rid at once. The Wife while she lives with the Husband, may Cuckold him without Crime or Scandal; but then she must acquaint her Husband, or her Parents, that she has been Gallant. They have a very indifferent sort of Manners among them, it being lawful and reputable enough for their Virgins to be as generous to Mankind as they please, before Marriage, provided they keep constantly to one Man after it. When a Woman is with Child, she never admits of the Conjugal Embrace till she is deliver'd, and never while she gives suck. *Belle Costume*, says a *French Author*, *On auroit bonne grace de Vouloir prescher cette doctrine aux femmes de L'Europe. Comme on en seroit Escoute?* Which because it reflects on our European Ladies in this Matter, I shall leave in the Language I found it.

The *Indians* pay a great Respect and Obedience to their Kings: They believe the Transmigration of Souls, and know as much, and talk as learnedly of the Creation of the World, as their Neighbours. They are everlasting Dancers, given to all manner of *American Sports* and Gaming, and will play away all they have at Cards. They have certain Festivals, and Times set apart for their Pastimes. They don't take much Care in their Dress, in which they differ little from the *New-England Indians*. Their Lodgings and Way of Living, are very homely. They are almost always at War. They seldom give any Quarter but to Women and Children, whom they keep for Slaves.

is a bloody F
ld; and a mi
its fit to bear
orce 1000 Indi
thereas there a
ust now give a
om its Infancy
Colonel Nich
e Year 1683,
e shall have off
Successor.
easing with it
riving Plantat
this Day. C
edros, in the
gentleman was
e Ild put him
aving been long
at gave him
inder'd his b
er in King J
efore the late
nsented that F
Canada, and h
ey could in th
ey came; but
o be gone, sayin
th and their Al
rench Religion
rove them ou
omplain'd of h
leas'd; and 'tis
is Governmen
ad not been
afterwards Ea
reland. Ther
is Time: For
Disturbance, t
and disturb the
After the Re
eing inconsist
employ Popish
arts almost as
ad French, and

is a bloody Battle with 'em, if 8 or 10 Men are
 ill'd; and a mighty Prince who has a hundred Sub-
 jects fit to bear Arms, of which there are, in all,
 scarce 1000 *Indian* Men in the Territory of *New-York*,
 whereas there are 7 or 8 times as many *English*. We
 must now give an Account how the Colony advanc'd
 from its Infancy to its present Maturity.

Colonel *Nicholls* continu'd Governour, till about *Sir Ed-*
mund Andros, of whom we shall have often Occasion to speak, was appointed *Governour*.
 His Successor. The Reputation of this Settlement en-

creasing with its Trade, it became a populous and
 thriving Plantation, in which Condition it remains
 to this Day. Col. *Dungan* succeeded *Sir Edmund*

Col. Dun-
 gan Go-
 vernour.

Andros, in the Government of *New-York*. This
 Gentleman was a *Roman* Catholick, and King *James*
 the 2^d put him into this Place: He was an old Soldier,
 having been long in the King of *Spain's* Service, and
 that gave him such an Aversion to the *French*, as
 hinder'd his betraying the Province to them, ei-
 ther in King *James's* Reign, or after the *Revolution*.
 Before the late King abdicated the Government, he
 consented that *French* Priests should come from *Quebec*
Canada, and have free Leave to make what Converts
 they could in the Province of *New-York*: Accordingly
 they came; but Col. *Dungan* immediately order'd them
 to be gone, saying, *Their Design was to gain over the Eng-*
lish and their Allies to the French Interest, and not to the
French Religion; wherefore, like a Man of Honour, he
 drove them out of his Province. The *French* King
 complain'd of him to King *James*, who was highly dis-
 pleas'd; and 'tis thought, Col. *Dungan* would have lost
 his Government, if his Highness the Prince of *Orange*
 had not been declar'd King. This Governour was
 afterwards Earl of *Limerick*, and is still living in
Ireland. There happen'd nothing extraordinary in
 his Time: For the *Indians* giving the Inhabitants no
 Disturbance, there were no Wars to create Action,
 and disturb the peaceable Commerce of the People.

After the Revolution, Col. *Dungan* was recall'd, it
 being inconsistent with a Protestant Government to
 employ *Papish* Officers. The War broke out in those
 Parts almost as soon as in *Europe*, between the *English*
 and *French*, and their Confederates. We find mention
 made

made of an Expedition, undertaken by the *English* against the *French*, by *La Montan*; but that Author has not done us Justice; neither must we expect that the *French* will own they were beaten: He says, the *English* came within a Day or two's March of *Quibec*, and then return'd without doing any thing. The Truth of the Fact is: In the Year 1690. Col. *Peter Schuyler*, with 300 *English*, and 300 *Indians*, march'd from Fort *Albany* up to *Quibec*, 400 Miles from *New-York*, and the *French* Governour oppos'd him with less than 13 Companies of regular Troops, and as many *Indians*: Notwithstanding the Inequality of their Numbers, Col. *Schuyler* charg'd the Enemy with equal Bravery and Success, routed them, kill'd 30 Officers and 300 Soldiers with little or no Loss; but being not strong enough to attempt the Forts, he contented himself with his Victory, and retreated. A full Relation of this Action was printed at *New-York*. The *French* also made an Expedition against the *English*, surpriz'd *Schenectada*, burnt the Town, and murder'd the Inhabitants.

Colonel
Fletcher
Governour.

King *William* appointed Col. *Fletcher* to succeed the Earl of *Limerick* in this Government, and he held it several Years. He had a Garrison of regular Troops in the City of *New-York*, to prevent any Surprize from the *French* and their Confederates the *Hurons*.

In his Time, A. D. 1696, the Count de *Frontenac* Governour of *Canada*, having a Design against *Schenectada* and *Albany*, in this Province, and intending to draw off the five Nations of *Indians*, inhabiting the neighbouring Parts, from the Friendship they liv'd in with the *English*, left *Quibec* about the 10th of June, and coming to *Mount-Real*, met there 3000 *French* and *Canada* *Indians*, and being provided with Canoes, Stores of all sorts, and other Necessaries for this Expedition, he advanc'd by the River of the *Iroquois* towards *New-York*. After a long March of above 100 Leagues, he came into the Country of the *Oranogues*, one of those five Nations, and surpris'd them with so great a Power, destroy'd one of their Castles, burning their Corn and Provisions. Colonel *Fletcher*, having Notice of this Invasion, march'd with the *English* Soldiers, then in Garrison at *New-York*, a Body of the Militia, and some of the *Indian* Allies, to

The
put a Stop to the
de *Frontenac* he
great. Upon w
the *Indians*, F
coming to their
several of the
pointed in the
The *Iroquois* w
his Invasion,
Chief of their
with them, for
mon Enemy, a
de *Frontenac*
Fletcher's Succ
'Twas in the
to use that W
Governments,
Office, withou
was of the Fac
Zealous for the
Pretences neve
the Magistrates
were equal, at
maintain'd the
procur'd Remo
from them to A
able to get his
deed, seem'd y
will ever think
assumes it with
Merit, be wha
his great Friend
in securing the
with the King's
Stratagem, le
and order'd th
holding the For
his Men; he
Judges and Jur
ning them, and
and executed as
ur, proceeded
no doubt wou
perhaps serv'd
put

English Author that says, the English, Friends to the English, who were coming to their Relief, attack'd his Rear, and kill'd several of the French, who were not only disappointed in their Project, but suffered a great Loss. The Iroquoise were all exasperated against them, by this Invasion, and desir'd Col. Fletcher to meet the Chief of their Nations at Albany, to concert Measures with them, for carrying on the War against the Common Enemy, and revenge themselves on the Count de Frontenac for invading their Country. Col. Fletcher's Successor was Col. Slaughter.

Twas in the *Interregnum*, if we may be allow'd to use that Word, between this and Col. Fletcher's Governments, that Col. Lestey took on him that Office, without any Commission from England. He was of the Faction that always pretend to be more Zealous for the publick Good than others. And such Pretences never want Partizans. The Number of the Magistrates of this Province, who sided with him, were equal, at least, to the other; and cou'd he have maintain'd the Power he had usurp'd, till he had procur'd Remonstrances and Addresses, to be sent from them to England, he doubted not he should be able to get his Authority confirm'd. His Hopes, indeed, seem'd vain and chimerical. For no Prince will ever think that Person worthy of Power, who assumes it without his Consent, let his Cause, or his Merit, be what they will. Mr. Jacob Milburn was his great Friend in this Affair, and very instrumental in securing the Fort. But when Col. Slaughter arriv'd with the King's Commission, he got into the Fort by a Stratagem, seiz'd Lestey the Governour, and Milburn, and order'd them to be try'd for High Treason, for holding the Fort out against him, and killing one of his Men; he being the King's Lieutenant. The Judges and Jury made no great Difficulty of condemning them, and they were accordingly condemn'd, and executed as Traytors. The Governour, Slaughter, proceeded a little too hastily in this Affair, and no doubt would have been sent for to England, and perhaps serv'd as Lestey was, had he not dy'd in New-York.

Joseph
Dudley
Governour.

York, where his Faction was but too much encouraged, especially after the Lord C---'s Arrival. *Slaughter* dying, *Joseph Dudley*, Esq; of *New-England*, held this Government till the Arrival of the Earl of *Bellmont*, whom his Majesty King *William*, had made Governour of *New-England* and *New-York*. The Lord *Bellmont* intended to reside at *New-York*, it being the pleasantest City in the *English America*; but when he arriv'd at *New-England*, the Affairs of that Province requir'd his Presence, and he appointed Col. *Dudley* to be his Deputy at *New-York*, and after him Mr. *Nanfan*.

Mr. Nan-
fan, De-
puty Go-
vernour.

In the Year 1700, the Deputy-Governour set up a Post-Office in *Long Island*, which runs twice a Week from *Northfleet* to *Nettlebed*, *Egerton*, *Ashford*, *Huntington*, *Oyster Bay*, *Flushing*, *Newton* and *Bedford*, where the Mail is carry'd over in the Passage-Boat to *New-York*. He also appointed a Packet-Boat to go from *Northfleet* to *Stoniton*, in *New-England*, very convenient for the Trade and Correspondence between the two Colonies. About the same Time, a number of the *Scots*, who had settled at *Darien*, put into *New-York*, and took their Passage Homewards, after they had abandon'd that Settlement, but the Deputy Governour refus'd to assist them, pretending he could not do it in the Absence of the Earl of *Bellmont*, who was then at *Boston*. A Library was erected, this Year, in the City of *New-York*: And the *Dutch* Inhabitants built Mills to saw Timber; one of which would do more in an Hour, than 50 Men in 2 Days. The Earl of *Bellmont* sent over a very Loyal Address from this Province, which was presented to the King by Col. *Byard*, their Agent, in *London*, who had the Honour to kiss the King's Hand. His Majesty, in June, 1700, appointed *William Atwood*, Esq; to be Chief Justice of the Province of *New-York*; and he held that Office till the Arrival of the Lord *Cornbury*, Son of the E. of *Clarendon*, who was made Governour of this Province, on the Death of the Earl of *Bellmont*.

In the Year 1701, His Lordship remov'd thither with his Lady and Family, and has resided there ever since. He remov'd Mr. *Atwood* from being Chief Justice, and made other Alterations in the Government. The Party that espous'd Col. *Lesley*'s Cause continu'd still, and Mr. *Atwood* fell in with them, and

indeed did man-
with favouring
Enemies with t
we will not en
great deal of
land. The Lo
roughly enoug
This Lord wa
Jersey, for he
he receiv'd Adv
fers from the
one inclos'd fro
rections to proo
done with grea
His Lordship w
Mayor, Aldern
Gentlemen and
Day having als
Anne, to be G
the Water to s
My Lord cont
vinces to this D
It was impo
al Places we v
hod we propo
the Writing t
reiv'd further
good Credit, y
ter.

The City of
1000 Houles,
Great Church
Fletcher being
tributions of h
Virginia, and
Church is ded
are also a *Dutch*
heran Church;
ed by the pre
English Church
City has a C
Province of *Ne*
of them, viz. *A*
County, are i

indeed did many good *Englishmen*. They were charg'd with favouring the *Dutch*, and they charg'd their Enemies with the same Partiality for the *French*; but we will not enter into this Dispute, which caus'd a great deal of Trouble both in *New-York* and *England*. The Lord *Cornbury* treated all *Lesley's* Friends roughly enough, and carry'd it with a high Hand. This Lord was afterwards Governour of *New-Jersey*, for he had not been long at *New-York* before he receiv'd Advice of King *William's* Death, and Letters from the Lord Commissioners of Trade, with one inclos'd from the Privy Council, containing Directions to proclaim her present Majesty, which was done with great Solemnity the 18th of *June*, 1702. His Lordship was, on this Occasion, attended by the Mayor, Aldermen and Common Council; the Clergy, Gentlemen and Merchants of *New-York*; and the next Day having also receiv'd a Commission from Queen *Anne*, to be Governour of the *Jerseys*, he went over the Water to see the like Proclamation made there. My Lord continues in the Government of these Provinces to this Day.

It was impossible at this distance from the several Places we write of, to keep exactly to the Method we propos'd to our selves; and having, since the Writing the above Account of *New-York*, receiv'd further Information from a Gentleman of good Credit, we now communicate it to the Reader.

The City of *New-York* is thought to contain near 1000 Houses, most of them very well built. The Great Church was built in the Year 1695. Col. *Fletcher* being Governour, by the charitable Contributions of himself, Col. *Nicholson*, Governour of *Virginia*, and other well-dispos'd Christians. This Church is dedicated to the Holy Trinity. There are also a *Dutch* Church, a *French* Church, and a *Lutheran* Church; and a Free-school procur'd to be erected by the present Governour. The Minister of the *English* Church is the Reverend Mr. *William Vesey*. The City has a County belonging to it. For the whole Province of *New-York* is divided into 10 Counties; five of them, viz. *Albany*, *Ulster*, *Dutchess*, *Orange*, and *King's* County, are inhabited by the *Dutch*, and Persons

of Dutch Extraction. The five other Counties are, *Queen's County, Suffolk County, Chester County, Richmond County, and New-York.*

The Walls before-mention'd in the Description of this City were standing when 'twas call'd *New-Amsterdam*, but its chief Defence now is *Anne Fort*, and two new Batteries, one on each Side of the *Narrows*, to secure the Place by Sea. The Fort is in good Order; and there are now two Companies of Foot in Garrison in it, the Governour's and Captain *Peter Matthews's*.

We have before made mention of the Town of *Albany*. There is a strong Stone Fort begun by the Lord *Cornbury*, in the room of the Old Fort, which was only stockado'd. The Town of *Albany* is mostly inhabited by the *Dutch*; it is near 150 Miles from *New-York*. The Province being above 170 Miles in Length, our former Computation was too short. Her Majesty has been graciously pleas'd to send a Minister here; and the Representatives for this County in the Assembly, desir'd they might have a Church of *England* Pastor there, tho the Inhabitants are generally *Dutch*. Here the Governour often has Conferences with the *Indian Kings*; and a famous one was holden in the Year 1702. my Lord *Cornbury* being present, as also Col. *Peter Schuyler*, Major *Dirk Wessels*, Commissioners for treating with the *Indians*, *John Bleacher*, Esq; Mayor of *New-York*, *J. Abeel*, Esq; Recorder, *John Rooseboom*, Esq; Alderman, *David Schuyler*, Esq; Alderman, *John Schuyler*, Esq; Alderman, and Mr. *Richard Livingston*, Secretary for *Indian Affairs*. *Hilletie van Olinda*, an old *Dutch* Woman, was Interpreter. The first that had Audience were 2 *Sachems* of the *Canada Indians*, five *Sachems* of the *Twightwights* and *Tionondade Indians*, then the *Sachems* of the five Nations, in Confederacy with the *English*, the *Oneydes*, the *Onontages*, the *Cayouges*, the *Sinnekes*, and the *Maquaas*; where mutual Presents were made, and Affairs of Trade settled. Here are two Companies in Garrison, Lieutenant Governour *Richard Ingoldsby's*, and Captain *Weems's*; and the Garrison is often reforc'd by Detachments from *New-York*.

At *Schenectady* is an old Fort, the Walls are very rotten.

Albany. Before the Frontiers were settled, the *Savattoge*.

Indeed the Defence of this powerful Empire. Expedition to the *Frontiers* against *Tork*: For the Governour, a *War* was suffer'd to be order'd to be to the *Country* were in such very glad that been put to should have as they would.

We must to expect that we have been favourably of we shall not affront my pleasure to

We have Account of *Ultrapation* ment, and succeeded Col. to *Chronology* of such as *us*. We spar'd World will from whom not have been

Kingston the West-side except about in the *Country*

At *Schenectada*, of which we have already spoken, is an old Fort, out of Repair, and the Pallisadoes very rotten. The Garrison here is Part of that at *Albany*. This Place is much more populous than before the *French* destroy'd it. Other Forts are on the Frontiers, as the *Half-moon*, *Nestigaun*, and *Saratoge*.

Indeed the *English* cannot be too careful of the Defence of their Frontiers here, considering what a powerful Enemy they have at *Canada*; and 'tis said the Expedition lately undertaken by Monsieur *Herberville* against *Nevis*, &c. was intended against *New-York*: For when Mr. *Nansan* was Deputy Governour, a *French* Man of War, as we are inform'd, was suffer'd to enter the Harbour, which the Captain order'd to be founded, and gave Information of it to the Court of *France*. The Stores at *New-York* were in such a Condition, that the Inhabitants were very glad they had no want of any; for had they been put to the Trial, they doubted whether they should have been able to have made so good a Defence as they would otherwise have done.

We must desire the Gentlemen of *New-York* not to expect that we should espouse their Factions: If we have been betray'd by some Persons to speak too favourably of *Lesley's* from their Misrepresentations, we shall not rake into the Ashes of the dead, and affront my Lord *Bellomont's* Memory, out of Complaisance to others.

We have been inform'd, since the first Part of this Account of *New-York* was written, that Col. *Lesley's* Usurpation happen'd before Col. *Fletcher's* Government, and consequently that my Lord *Bellomont* succeeded Col. *Slaughter*; but the Fact is true, and as to Chronology, if we sometimes err, 'tis the Fault of such as undertook to furnish us with Memoirs: We spar'd no Pains to have the best; and the World will see, by the Names of the Gentlemen, from whom we had our Informations, that we could not have better Authorities.

Kingston lies between *Albany* and *New-York*, on the West-side of the River. The Houses are stragling, except about 100, which compose the main Town. In the County of *West-Chester*, we must note one

The History of New-York.

Parish at least, that of *Decham*, is not yet laid out, and perhaps the Name is mistaken. There's but one Church in this County, at *West-Chester Town*, but there's a settled Maintenance for two Ministers, at 50 *l.* yearly each; one for *West-Chester*, of which Mr. *Barton* is Rector, and one for *Rye*.

We have nothing more to say of *Richmond County* and Town, but that it has an Allowance for a Minister at 40 *l.* a Year.

If we take another View of *Long-Island*, we must correct an Error in its Situation, which is a Print-Fault, for 'tis South-East from *New-York*, as *New-England* is North-East. The Island is 150 Miles long, and contains *Queen's County*, *Suffolk County*, and *Richmond County*. 'Tis sometimes call'd *Nassau-Island*. In *Queen's County* are two Churches, supply'd with Incumbants. *Jamaica*, of which the Reverend Mr. *William Urquhart* is Minister, he has 50 *l.* a Year, by Subscription, from the *Yorkshire* Clergy, and 15 *l.* for Books. The Town consists of about 40 Houses. The other Church is at *Hempstead*, of which the Reverend Mr. *John Thomas* is Rector, who has the same Income from *England*, rais'd by the Society for propagating the Gospel, as Mr. *Urquhart* has, and both of them are allow'd 60 *l.* a Year a piece in *New-York*.

'Tis in the Plain near this Town, call'd thence *Hempstead Plain*, that the Races are generally run; and the Breed of Horses being famous here, the Militia Regiment in this County is Horse.

Suffolk County has two Towns in it. *Oyster Bay*, where are 50 Houses; and in *Huntington* as many, but no Church built. There are abundance of Dissenters, *Independants* and *Quakers*.

Having nothing more to say of the History of *New-York*, we shall proceed to that of the *Jerseys*, having first given a List of the Chief Officers, Civil and Military.

The Right Honourable *Edward Lord Viscount Cornbury*, Governour,

Th

Peter Schuyler
William Gerard
Rip van
Caleb H.
Thomas
William
Roger M.
John B.
Adolphus

Chief Justice
 Second Judge
 Attorney General
 Secretary, Clerk

The

Stephen de L.
Henry Beekman
Thomas Gar
Mynderp Sch
Thomas Codr
John Jackson
Matthew H
John Abeel
Evert Bank
 Clerk of

The Militia

New-York C
Suffolk Coun
King's Coun
Albany Cou
Queen's Cou

Regular
 1 Company
 2 Company
 3 Company
 4 Company
 En

Peter

Peter Schuyler, Esq;
William Lawrence, Esq;
Gerardus Beckman, Esq;
Rip van Dara, Esq;
Caleb Heathcot, Esq;
Thomas Wenham, Esq;
Willian van Ranstau, Esq;
Roger Mompesson, Esq;
John Barbarie, Esq;
Adolphus Phillips, Esq;

Counsellors.

Chief Justice and Judge Advocate, *Roger Mompesson, Esq;*
 Second Judge, *Robert Milward, Esq;*
 Attorney General, *Sampson Shelton Broughton, Esq;*
 Secretary, *George Clark, Esq;*

The Names of the ASSEMBLY.

William Nicolls, Esq; Speaker.

<i>Stephen de Laucey, Esq;</i>	<i>Kilian van Rensselaer, Esq;</i>
<i>Henry Beekman, Esq;</i>	<i>John Stillwell, Esq;</i>
<i>Thomas Garton, Esq;</i>	<i>Abraham Lakeman, Esq;</i>
<i>Mynderp Schuyler, Esq;</i>	<i>Josiah Hunt, Esq;</i>
<i>Thomas Codrington, Esq;</i>	<i>Joseph Purdy, Esq;</i>
<i>John Jackson, Esq;</i>	<i>William Willet, Esq;</i>
<i>Matthew Howel, Esq;</i>	<i>Daniel Whitehead, Esq;</i>
<i>John Abeel, Esq;</i>	<i>John van Cortlandt, Esq;</i>
<i>Evert Banker, Esq;</i>	

Clerk of the Assembly, *Mr. Gabriel Ludlow.*

The Militia Regiments are commanded by the following Colonels.

New-York County, Col. W. Paretree, Mayor of the City.
Suffolk County, Col. Smith.
King's County, Col. Beekman.
Albany County, Col. Schuyler.
Queen's County, a Regiment of Horse, Col. Willer.

Regular Troops, 4 Companies, 100 Men each.

- 1 Company, commanded by the Lord Cornbury.
- 2 Company, by the Lieut. Govern. *Ric. Ingoldsby, Esq;*
- 3 Company, by Cap. *Weems.*
- 4 Company, by Cap. *Peter Matthews.*
 Engineer, *Mr. Reldknap.*



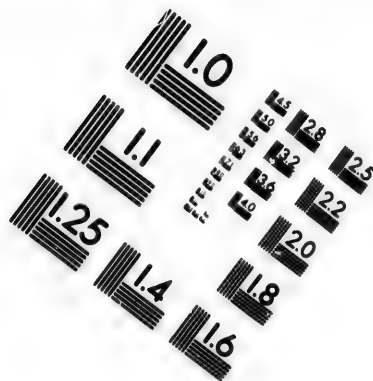
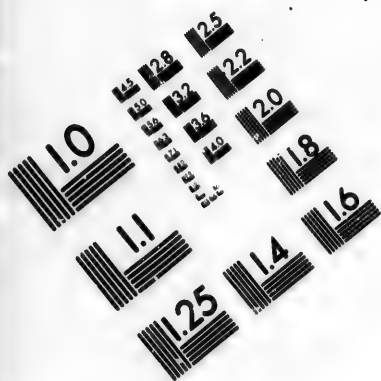


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)

1.5 28 2.5
1.8 32 2.2
2.0 2.0
1.8

11
10
01

THE HISTORY OF NEW-JERSEY.

THIS Country, before the Surrender made by the late Proprietors of the Government, into Her present Majesty's Hands, was divided into two distinct Provinces, but as 'tis now under one Governour, and one Council; so we give it but one Name.

The first Discoverers of this Country were the *English*; and the first of them Captain *Hudson*. 'Tis included in *Nova-Belgia*, by Mr. *Delast*. The *Indigena*, or first Inhabitants of this Territory, were the *Naraticongi*, on the North Side of *Raritan* River: The *Minguaas*, the *Capitanasses*, the *Gacheos*, and the *Senneas* on the South. The latter inhabited the Country up almost as high as the Falls of the River. The first *Europeans* that settled here were the *Swedes*, who had three Towns, *Christina*, call'd by *Indians*, *Audostoka*, *Elfsinburgh* and *Gottemburg*. Their Settlements were chiefly on the South side of the River, and on the Frontiers of *Pennsylvania*, opposite to which Province there's a Place, to this Day, call'd *Fort Elfsinburgh*. But the *Swedes* made very little of their Plantation. And the *Dutch*, always industrious in their Trade, work'd them so far out of it; that *Berghen*, the Northern Part of *New-Jersey*, was almost entirely planted by the *Hollanders*. King *Charles II.* who, like his Predecessors, look'd upon the Continent

Del.

Robbi.

ot Am
incerte
of York
settled
Maryla
vested
George
Charter
Lord Be
divide t
Jersey,
to Sir Ge
which b
But befo
two Pro
graphica
have a be
New-J
Words o
Hland and
ed on the
son's River
as far as
and to the
the said B
and 40 M
a freight
nitude; u
Caesaria,
has the m
to the W
Land to t
of North
the Sea
Miles; a
est. W
vinces di
The b
Jersey, v
along th
Egg Har
is in 41
ward an
Line of

The History of New-Jersey.

135

of America, from Canada to Florida, to be his Right, inserted this Tract in the Grant he made to the Duke of York, the 12th of March, 1664. But the English never settled to the South of Hudson's River, on that side Maryland, till several Years after the Duke had invested this Province in John Lord Berkly, and Sir George Cartarett, by the Name of Nova Casarea; their Charter bears Date the 24th of June, 1664: The Lord Berkly's Assignee, Sir George Cartarett agreed to divide the whole Country into two Parts. East New-Jersey, or that Part which borders on New-York, fell to Sir George Cartarett; and West-Jersey, or that Part which borders on Pennsylvania, to the Lord Berkly. But before we enter farther into the History of these two Provinces, it will be convenient to give a Geographical Description of them, that the Reader may have a better Idea of the Places we speak of.

New-Jersey contains all that Country, to use the Words of the Patent, lying to the Westward of Long-Island and Manhattas-Island, or New-York, and bounded on the East, Part by the main Sea, and part by Hudson's River, and extended Southward to the main Ocean, as far as Cape May, at the Mouth of Delaware River; and to the Northward, as far as the Northernmost Branch of the said Bay or River of Delaware, which is 41 Degrees and 40 Minutes of Latitude, and crossing over thence in a straight Line to Hudson's River, in 41 Degrees of Latitude; which said Tract of Land was then call'd Nova Casaria, or New-Jersey, by all; and thus we see it has the main Sea on the South East, the River Delaware to the West, Hudson's River to the East, the main Land to the North, and lies between 39 and 40 Degrees of North Latitude: It extends it self in Length on the Sea Coasts, and along Hudson's River about 120 Miles; and is almost as broad as long where 'tis broadest. We must now take some Notice of the two Provinces distinctly.

Bounds.

The biggest and best inhabited of these was East-Jersey, which extended Eastward and Northward, all along the Sea Coast and Hudson's River, from Little Egg Harbour to that Part of Hudson's River, which is in 41 Degrees of Northern Latitude; and Southward and Westward is divided from West-Jersey by a Line of Partition, passing from Egg Harbour to Cross-wick

East-Jersey.

wick River, Stony Brook, and the South Branch of Raritan River. It extends in Length along *Hudson's River*, and on the Sea Coasts 100 Miles. In Breadth 'tis very unequal, being in some Places crowded by *West-Jersey*; but 'tis however the most valuable Part of this Country. It was divided into Counties; as *Bergen County*, on *Hudson's River*; *Essex County*, *Middlesex County*, on the North Side of *Raritan River*; and *Monmouth County* on the South. We shall begin with

**Berghen
County.**

Berghen County. It lies on *Hudson's River* over against *New-York*, and was the first planted of any part of this Tract. This, as well as the other Parts of the *Jerseys*, is extremely well water'd with Rivers; besides that of *Hudson*, there are *Hackinsack River*, *Passaick River*, and several less Streams. The chief Town is *Berghen*, and indeed the only Town in the County, for the rest of it is *Out-Plantations*. Within the Precincts of this Township, are 10000 Acres of Land cast out; that is, assign'd over by the Proprietors to Tenants in Fee; and in the County are 10000 Acres cast out. The Town is not very large, however it has 250 Inhabitants, most of them *Dutch*, who have been settled there above 40 Years. In the County are reckon'd a like Number of Inhabitants, by which we understand Men, Women, and Children. *Berghen Town* stands on the Western Point of the Neck of Land, which, with *Staten Island*, forms a *Sound*.

**Essex
County.**

Essex County is of Note for *Elizabeth Town*, which lies three Miles within a Creek, opposite to the West End of *Staten Island*. Here the *English* settled first, and this Place has thriv'd most, notwithstanding the Endeavours that have been us'd to make a Capital of *Perth*. It has 250 Families in it, and 40000 Acres of Ground cast out. Here the Proprietors have a Plantation, which goes by the Name of their *Farm*, the Government of the Provinces manag'd, Courts kept, Assemblies held, and the greatest Part of the Trade of the Colony carry'd on.

Newark is the most compact Town in the *Jerseys*; it lies 6 or 7 Miles Northward from *Elizabeth Town*, consists of about 100 Families, and has 10000 Acres of Land laid out to be cultivated. The Western Part of this County is water'd by *Ramsey River*; upon which

which is a Mountain
ty, is
Middle
its Out Pl
Perth City
the Name
vince are
Piscatta
River. In
Land cast
Woodbr
form'd by
Families,
tations.
water'd by
pleasant a
Dockwra
ful Invent
considering
der'd their
procure In
Town kept
serve.

Perth A
Earl of P
'Tis a sw
the Moun
dyhook B
frozen.
were to s
vide it in
upon. Th
three Ac
according
very indu
House w
40 House
given the
three of
the Tow
good Ro
But not
that Ship

which is a Saw-Mill; and Northward is a Ridge of Mountains, call'd the *Blew Hills*. The next County, is

Middlesex, the most populous and flourishing for its *Out Plantations*, tho the Capital of the Country, *Perth City*, which stands in it, does hardly yet deserve the Name of a Village. In this Division of the Province are two Towns:

Piscataway, which lies about 6 Miles up *Raritan* River. It has 80 Families, and 40000 Acres of Land cast out. Seven or eight Miles from hence is

Woodbridge, a good Town on a Creek within the *Sound*, form'd by *Staten* Island and this County. It has 120 Families, and 30000 Acres of Land laid out for Plantations. The Western Part of *Middlesex* County is water'd by *Milstone* River, which runs thro' a very pleasant and fruitful Country, belonging to Mr. *Will. Dockwra* of *London*, to whom that City owes the useful Invention of the Penny-Post. The Proprietors considering the happy Situation of *Perth City*, order'd their Agents to use their utmost Endeavours to procure Inhabitants to remove thither; but *Elizabeth* Town kept them, as we shall hereafter again observe.

Perth Amboy takes its Name from *James Drummond*, Earl of *Perth*, and *Amboy* Point, on which it stands. 'Tis a sweet, wholesome, and commodious Place, at the Mouth of the River *Raritan*, which runs into *Sandyhook* Bay, able to contain 500 Ships, and is never frozen. According to the Proprietors Project, they were to set out such a Spot of Ground there, and divide it into 150 equal Shares, for Purchasers to build upon. They reserv'd 4 Acres for a Market-Place, and three Acres for publick Wharfage. A Town was accordingly set out, and the *Scots* Proprietors were very industrious to have it built. The Governour's House was one of the first, and there are now about 40 Houses more scatter'd up and down; to which is given the pompous Name of *Perth City*. Two or three of these are Stone Houses. The whole Plan of the Town consists of 1070 Acres; and there are two good Roads from it to *Piscataway* and *Woodbridge*. But notwithstanding 'tis so commodious for Trade, that Ships in one Tide can come up to the Port, and lie

Mon-
mouth
County.

lie at the Merchants Doors, tho of 300 Tun Burthen; yet we do not find that *Perth* City deserves that Name better than *St James* City in *Virginia*, which is not so big as *Kentish Town* in *Middlesex*, in *England*. 'Twas intended there should have been a Market here, but there is now no Occasion for one. All along the River *Raritan*, the Country is thick of Plantations; the chief of which were set out to two of the Proprietors, Mr. *Robert Barclay*, and Mr. *Will. Dockwra*. From hence we cross the River, and come to *Monmouth* County: Where we first meet with *Middleton*, a pretty good Town, consisting of 100 Families, and 30000 Acres of Ground, in what they call here *Out-Plantations*. 'Tis about 10 or 12 Miles over Land, to the Northward of *Shrewsbury*, and 26 Miles to the Southward of *Piscataway*. Not far off, the Shoar winds it self about like a Hook; and, being sandy, gives Name to all the Bay.

Shrewsbury is the most Southern Town of the Province, and reckon'd the chief Town of the Shire. It contains about 100 Families, and 30000 Acres of *Out-Plantations* belong to its Division. 'Tis situated on the Side of a fresh Water Stream, thence call'd *Shrewsbury* River, not far from its Mouth. Between this Town and *Middleton* is an Iron Work; but we do not understand it has been any great Benefit to the Proprietors. Col. *Morris* is building a Church at the Falls. There's a new Town in this County, call'd,

Freehold, which has not been laid out, and inhabited long. It does not contain as yet above 40 Families; and as to its *Out-Plantations*, we suppose they are much the same in Number with the rest, and may consist of about 30000 Acres.

We have not divided the Counties into Parishes, and that for a very good Reason, there being none, nor indeed a Church in the whole Province, worthy that Name. But there are several Congregations of Church of England Men. as at *Shrewsbury*, *Amboy*, *Elizabeth* Town, and *Freehold*, whose Minister is Mr. *John Beak*, his Income is 65 *l.* a Year; and a Church is building at *Salem*. As for,

West-
Jersey.

West-Jersey, We can only give a general Account of it; for it is not divided into Shires, as *East-New-Jersey* is; tho Dr. *Cox*, when he was Proprietary, order'd

T
er'd seven
Country, Sa
is Successor
West-Jersey
anted and
reeks rend
the other.
ome of the
The most
ape-May, a
gainst Susse
and betwe
ides East an
ape-May C
here is now
our'd with
Here are
and, the c
et no Town
een, there
ay, on this
ape-May is
y: 'Tis the
Cohenzy, a
small Craft.
Cohenzy Tow
Maurice Riv
ay and Riv
outh, and
Plantations,
ave assum'd
at Bay and
Antioch is
elonging to
Delaware Ri
Creek; and
and over ag
t formerly
er Salham fa
bout half w
whence it tal
y, and con
Counties, la
from this P

er'd seven Counties to be laid out; as *Cape-May* County, *Salham* County, *Gloucester* County, &c. but his Successors did not go on with his Project. Tho' *West-Jersey* has not so many Towns, nor is so well planted and inhabited, the Number of its navigable Creeks renders this Province as commodious for Trade as the other. They lie at a convenient Distance, and some of them run up a good way into the Country.

The most Easterly Point of Land in *West-Jersey*, is *Cape-May*, at the Mouth of *Delaware* Bay, and over against *Sussex* County, in *Pennsylvania*. The Tract of Land between this and *Little Egg Harbour*, which divides East and West *New-Jersey*, goes by the Name of *Cape-May* County; but we do not understand, that there is now any other Division of this Province honour'd with the Name of a County.

Here are several stragling Houses on this Neck of Land, the chief of which is *Cox's Hall*; but there's not no Town. Most of the Inhabitants are Fishermen, there being a Whalery at the Mouth of the Bay, on this as well as the opposite Shoar. Next to *Cape-May* is *Maurice River*, between that and *Cohensy*: 'Tis the biggest in all the Country. Next to it is *Cohensy*, a small River, but deep and navigable for small Craft. Ten or twelve Miles up this River, is *Cohensy Town*; where are about 80 Families. From *Maurice River*, the next Stream to *Cape-May*, the Bay and River of *Delaware* waters all the South-East, South, and South-West Part of *West-Jersey*. The Plantations, some of which are so close, that they have assum'd the Name of a Town, lie all along on that Bay and River, and most of them on Creeks.

Antioch is a sort of a Town, and has a little Creek belonging to it. Next to it, nearer the Mouth of *Delaware* River, is *Gibbon's Creek*; next, *Alloway's Creek*; and then *Fort Elsinburgh*, at the River's Mouth, and over against *New-Castle* County, in *Pennsylvania*; it formerly belong'd to the *Swedes*. Near it the River *Salham* falls into the *Delaware*. There's a Town about half way up this River towards its Head, from whence it takes its Name. 'Tis 20 Miles from *Cohensy*, and contains about 120 Families. One of the Counties, laid out by the former Proprietary, was from this Place call'd *Salem*.

The History of New-Jersey.

Fins's Point and Town, if it may be so call'd, lie over against *New-Castle Town*. Next to it is *Namack Creek*, then *Raccoon Creek*, then *Almon Creek*, *Long Island*, and *Wasi Creek*; the latter opposite to *Chester* in *Pennsylvania*; then *Great Manto Creek*, then *Woolberry River*, *Green Bank*, and then *Gloucester Creek*, and *Cooper's Point*, over against *Philadelphia* on the *Delaware*. *Gloucester* is a good Town, and gave Name to a County in the above-mention'd Proprietary's Division of the Province. It contains near 100 Houses; the Country about it is very pleasant. Above this is *Pantano Creek*, then *Northampton* or *Rancocas River*; and the *Burlington Town*, the Capital of this Province; above thirty Miles from which there are few or no Plantations. In this Town the Courts and Assemblies of *West Jersey* us'd to be kept. It contains about 200 Families, and has an answerable Number of Acres, laid out by the Proprietary to the Under-Servants. The Houses here are well built, and almost all of Brick. The Market affords Plenty of all sorts of Provisions. It gave Name to one of the seven before-mention'd Counties. Above this Town is another, call'd *Madenhead*, below the Falls also, containing 40 or 50 Families; 'tis built on Dr. *Cox's* Lands: And there's another small Town above the Falls. About 40 Miles higher is the Country of the *Minisinks*, an *Indian* Nation. The Soil being very fertile thereabouts, 'tis expected this Tract will be next inhabited, it bordering upon *New-York*, and has Communication with it by Means of the River *Esopus*; which having water'd it, flows into *Hudson's River*, near *Kingston*. This Province has also an easy Communication with *Maryland*, there being a River within its Limits which runs not above eight Miles from the Bottom of *Chesapeake Bay*; and there was once a Project on Foot to cut thro' that eight Miles, but *Virginia* and *Maryland* oppos'd it so vehemently, that it did not succeed.

The Trade of *West New-Jersey*, and *East-Jersey*, and also the Soil and Conveniences of Rivers and Creeks, are much the same; except that *West-Jersey*, by its Situation on *Delaware River*, abounds more in the latter.

The

Both these
ve a near
also to i
y yields P
habitants
at they w
d given
ere neede
nly very
f of any
is was tow
dians that
er a Help
ith their N
e so numer
it was i
rft not offe
they migh
omputed, th
nglish in t
en fit to

'Twill be n
e Products
id, it has f
ions are the
ported to
urs, Skins,
d Oil, Fiss
ain, and t
heap and co
ngland carr
e rest of t
Continent of
kely to be
rels has n
ing.

New-York
age of it f
eed *New Y*
elling any c
ort.

We have
g Forge t

Both

Both these Provinces, as to the Soil and Air, *The Soil,*
 have a near Relation with that of *Pensylvania*; *Trade, &c.*
 also to its Trade and Products. The Coun-
 try yields Plenty of all sorts of Grain; and the
 inhabitants are said to have been so scrupulous,
 that they would not enter upon it, before they
 had given the *Indians* some Satisfaction: But
 were needed not so much Nicety; for 'tis cer-
 tainly very lawful for any Man to possess him-
 self of any Land that is desert and uninhabited, as
 this was towards the Sea-Coast especially. The few
Indians that are to be met with in the *Jerseys*, are ra-
 ther a Help than an Injury to the Inhabitants, who
 with their Number was much greater. The *English*
 are so numerous in comparison of the *Indians*, that
 it was in the Nature of the latter, they
 must not offer the least Injustice to the New-Comers,
 or they might soon be extirpated by them, it being
 computed, that there are 10 or 12000 Souls of the
English in this Province, and of these about 2000
 are fit to bear Arms, and not 200 *Indians* in
 all.

'Twill be needless to enter into the Particulars of
 the Products of these Provinces, since, as we have
 said, it has so much Relation to *Pensylvania*. Pro-
 visions are the chief Trade here, which are thence
 exported to the *Sugar Islands*. They have also some
 Furs, Skins, and Tobacco, for an *English* Market;
 and Oil, Fish, and other Provisions for *Portugal*,
Main, and the *Canaries*. Ships may be built here
 cheap and conveniently at *Perth Amboy*: But *New-*
England carries away that beneficial Trade from all
 the rest of the *English* Colonies, on the Northern
 Continent of *America*. This Place was at first as
 likely to be soon inhabited as any, but its Pro-
 spects has not been as promising as its Begin-
 ning.

New-York and *Pensylvania* have much the Advan-
 tage of it for Populousness and Trade; and in-
 deed *New-York* is its best Market, for buying or
 selling any considerable Quantities of Goods of any
 sort.

We have already hinted concerning the Smith-
 ing Forge that is set up near *Middleton*. 'Tis cer-
 tain

tain, Iron has been made there; but that Project has lately fail'd; and notwithstanding all that is said of the Iron and Copper of *New-England*, and the Minerals all over that Continent, we do not find that any of the Mines of *America* have been worth working, except those of *Mexico* and *Peru*. We shall now return to the Historical Events relating to the Beginning, Progress, and present State of *New-Jersey*.

History.

The Lord *Berkley*, about twelve Years after the Duke granted this Province to him and Sir *George Cartarett*, assign'd his Right to

The first Proprietary in *Jersey*, under the Lord *Berkley* who were,

Will. Pen, Esq;
Mr. Gawen Laurie, of *London*, Merchant;
Mr. Nicholas Lucas, and
Mr. Edward Byllyng,

These not long after agreed upon the Partition of the Province with Sir *George Cartarett*: And this Proprietary dying, the Earl of *Bath*, and others his Executors, with the Consent of his Widow, the Lady *Cartarett*, assign'd over his Share, which was the Northern Division, *Feb. 2. 1681.* to

First Proprietaries
 in East
Jersey.

The First Proprietaries of *East-New-Jersey*.

* <i>Will. Pen</i> , Esq;	<i>Mr. Thomas Wilcox</i> .
<i>Rob. West</i> , Esq;	<i>Mr. Ambrose Rigg</i> .
* <i>Mr. Tho. Rudyard</i> .	<i>Mr. Hugh Hartsbork</i> .
<i>Mr. Samuel Groom</i> .	* <i>Mr. Clement Plumsted</i> .
* <i>Mr. Tho. Hart</i> .	* <i>Mr. Tho. Cooper</i> .
* <i>Mr. Rich. Mew</i> .	<i>Mr. John Hayward</i> .

And from this Time the two Provinces have had their distinct Governours. The Proprietaries soon after sold Shares of *East-New-Jersey* to the Persons following, viz.

James, *Earl of Bath*,
John Drum,
Sir George,
Rob. Barclay,
David Barclay,
Robert Gould,
Mr. Robert,
Mr. Peter,
don, *Me*,
Mr. James

Who, with the second generation of *Tork*, dated were invested which the or indeed, Brother his that all the or *West-New-Jersey*, not procure on the contrary over each of *New-Jersey* dated the *Laurie*, Esq;

The Scots their Religion Head of the *England*, the mily.

We must inhabitants in them *Quakers* generally indu if they are office to own new-discovered shunning the Want. Th out of *Eng*

James

James, Earl of Perth.
John Drummond, Esq;
Sir George Mackenzy.
Rob. Barclay, 2 of Vry,
David Barclay, 3 Esqrs.
Robert Gourdon, Esq;
Mr. Robert Burnet.
Mr. Peter Sonmans, of Lon-
don, Merchant.
Mr. James Braine.

Mr. Gawen Lawrie.
Mr. Edward Byllyng.
Mr. Will. Gibson.
Mr. Tho. Barker, 2 Mer-
Mr. Walter Benthall, 3 Schs.
Mr. Rob. Turner, 2 of Dub-
Mr. Tho. Narne, 3 lin, Mer.
Mr. Thomas Cox,
Mr. Will. Dockwra.

Who, with the six Proprietaries distinguish'd in the second List by the *Astracisms*, procur'd a Confirmation of their Patent by another from the Duke of York, dated the 14th of March, 1682. by which they were invested with all the Powers and Privileges, which the Duke had granted to Sir George Cartaret; or indeed, which the King had granted to his Royal Brother himself. And we by these Lists perceive, that all the *Patentees* of the Lord Berkley's Division, or *West-New-Jersey*, were Proprietaries of *East-New-Jersey*, except Mr. Nicholas Lucas; yet they did not procure any Conjunction of the two Provinces; on the contrary, separate Governours were appointed over each of them; and the first Governour of *East-New-Jersey* was Robert Barclay, Esq; by Commission, dated the 17th of July. His Deputy was Gawen Lawrie, Esq;

The Scots were at that time as much persecuted for their Religion as the *English*; and Mr. Barclay, the Head of the *Quakers* in that Kingdom, and also in England, thought fit to remove hither with his Family.

We must note, that most of the first *English* Inhabitants in this Country were *Dissenters*, and most of them *Quakers* and *Anabaptists*. These People are generally industrious: Be their Hypocrisy to themselves if they are Hypocrites; but we must do them the Justice to own, that they are the fittest to inhabit a new-discover'd Country, as professing Industry, and shunning those publick Vices which beget Idleness and Want. Their Enemies drove great Numbers of them out of England, and the *Jerseys* had their Share of them:

them: The People here are for this Reason *Dissenters* to this Day, there being but two Church of *England* Ministers in both the Provinces; and this may be one Reason why there are no Parish Churches, which the Inhabitants may be afraid to build, lest it might be a Temptation for more Orthodox Divines to come among them.

A Gentleman asking one of the Proprietaries, *If there were no Lawyers in this Country?* Was answer'd, *No*: And then, *If there were no Physicians?* The Proprietary reply'd, *No*: Nor *Parsons*, adds the Gentleman? *No*, says the Proprietary: Upon which the other cry'd, *What a happy Place must this be, and how worthy the Name of Paradise!* We do not perhaps differ more from this Gentleman than we agree with him.

The Proprietors, in the same Year, made Mr. *Geo. Lockhart* Marshal, and Mr. *William Dockwra* Register and Secretary, in which Office he continues to this Day; and 'tis to him the Writer of this *History* owes, in a great measure, the Memoirs relating to this Colony.

The Proprietaries made a Deed amongst themselves to prevent Survivorship, and agreed upon *Constitutions*, or general *Concessions*, for the Management of the Province, as to laying out Land^s for *Counties*, *Tribes*, *Towns*, and *Parishes*. They reserv'd one part in seven for themselves, and resolv'd to dispose of the rest on the following Terms: Every Master of a Family was to have 50 Acres of Land set out, and 25 for his Wife, and each of his Children and Servants, paying 12 d. a Head to the Register, or his Deputy, for registering them as soon as landed. Servants, when their Times expir'd, were to have 30 Acres. All Persons to pay 2 d. an Acre Quit-Rent; or purchase their Freeholds at 50 s. for every Lot of 25 Acres so taken up, and so in proportion for a greater or less Number of Acres. All Persons were oblig'd to settle in some Township, and to have Land assign'd there for House and Garden, every one being oblig'd by the Concessions to build a House in seven Years time. The Rate of any Parcel of Land was ten Pounds for 100 Acres; and none were to purchase above 1000 Acres: But this Part of the Constitution has not, we suppose, been punctually kept; neither

neither ha
Acres; for
20 s. an A
the 100 Ac
Trade, an
Mr. Ba
Jersey, had
thron the
over inimed
by his Dep
al nominat
it seems he
or not it w
Jersey, he
should thri
the Orders
for the Adv
by us; but
icle, which
the Province
wrote to M
Seat of Gov
Town to A
their Presen
with City,
antages pro
ay so comm
did not dou
ould in a
least have
hia. Mr. J
ave those
art of Per
East-New-Jer
ave disconti
which was in
es now amo
We find A
ear 1685. w
ampbel, Unc
le, was appo
ish came
school there
d, on Acco

Dissenters;
England
may be one
es, which
it might
s to come

etaries, if
answer'd,
The Pro-
Gentle-
rich the o-
e, and how
ot perhaps
agree with

e Mr. Geo.
ra Register
ues to this
istory owes,
ing to this

themselves
Constitutions,
of the Pro-
es, Tribes,
art in seven
the rest on
Family was
or his Wife,
aying 12 d.
r registering
their Times
Persons to
their Free-
ken up, and
of Acres.
onship, and
arden, every
ld a House
cel of Land
ere to pur-
the Consti-
ally kept;
neither

neither has Land always continu'd at 10 l. the 100 Acres; for 'tis certain, Land has been sold here for 20 s. an Acre, and very often for 60, 70, and 80 l. the 100 Acres, as it lay convenient for Townships and Trade, and as it was in Goodness.

Mr. Barclay, the first Governour of *East-New-Jersey*, had made his Name famous among his Brethren the *Quakers* by his Writings: he did not go over immediately, so the Government was exercis'd by his Deputy, *Gawen Lawrie*, Esq; who had a Council nominated by the *Proprietaries* to assist him: But it seems he did not please his Principals; whether or not it was, that being a *Proprietary* of *West-New-Jersey*, he was not willing the Province he govern'd should thrive too fast, or whether he did not think the Orders he receiv'd from the *Proprietaries* were for the Advantage of the *Colony*, is not determinable by us; but sure we are he disobey'd them in an Article, which was of the last Consequence for the Good of the Province. September 14. 1683. the *Proprietaries* wrote to Mr. *Lawrie* and the *Council*, to remove the Seat of Government, and the Courts from *Elizabeth Town* to *Amboy Point*, and there to settle, that by their Presence People might be encourag'd to build *Perth City*, which was then laid out, and great Advantages propos'd to all such as would inhabit it. It may so commodious for Shipping, that the Concern'd did not doubt, if their Orders were obey'd, they should in a few Years see a City there, which would at least have been a Rival to *New-York* and *Philadelphia*. Mr. *Lawrie*, by disobeying the *Proprietaries*, gave those two Cities an Opportunity to get the Part of *Perth-Amboy* so far, that the Inhabitants of *East-New-Jersey* despairing ever to come near them, have discontinu'd their Building; and this Town, which was intended to be the Capital of this *Colony*, is now among the Number of its *Villages*.

We find Mr. Barclay continu'd Governour till the year 1685. when the Right Honourable the Lord *Neal* The Lord *Campbel*, Uncle to his Grace the present Duke of *Ar-Neal*, was appointed Governour: In whose time *George Campbel* with came over to *East-New-Jersey*, and taught a Governor's school there. He was also appointed *Surveyor General*, on Account of his Skill in the *Mathematicks*;

Gawen
Lawrie
Deputy Go-
vernour.

He staid there two or three Years, and then went to some other American Colony: This is the Man, who, when he return'd to England, renounc'd his *Enthusiastick* Errors, and embrac'd the Orthodox Religion of the *Anglican* Church: After which he became a regular Minister, was presented to a Benefice; and has made himself talkt off by his Disputes with the *Quakers*, and theirs with him; for they have not stuck to charge him with deserting them for a worldly Interest. When he left *Jersey*, Mr. John Reed was made Surveyor General. Since this he was sent over by the Society for propagating the Gospel, as a Missionary to convert the *Indians*, and make Profelytes to the Church of England: 'Tis said in the Society's Paper, That he has brought great Comfort to the Church. There is now a Minister of St. Mary's Burlington, who is Mr. John Talbot, Assistant to Mr. Krich in his Mission. He has so l. a Year from the Society.

Sol. Hamilton
Governor.
Jeremy Basse, Esq;
Governor.
Col. Hamilton
again.
Mr. Basse
again.
Col. Andrew Browne
Governor.

In the Year 1695, Col. Andrew Hamilton was appointed Governour of this Province: In which Post he did not continue long; for in 1697. we find Jeremy Basse, Esq; was sent from England with the same Character, which he also kept but a little while, for Col. Hamilton procur'd Mr. Basse to be recalled, and himself re-instated in his Government; which was of as short Duration as Mr. Basse's, for the latter in a Year's Time or less was restor'd.

His Successor, and the last Governour of East-New Jersey, was Col. Andrew Bowne, who continu'd in that Post as long as the Proprietaries Power lasted. This Office, considering the Cheapness of the Country, was as good as the same in some other Colonies, where the Sallery and Advantages are greater, for the Governour cannot here make fairly above 300 l. a Year of his Government.

This Colony continu'd to thrive under all the Governours; and notwithstanding the Majority of the Proprietaries and Proprietors were *Quakers*, a People who affect a peculiar Tameness of Spirit, and declare against Fighting, yet a Militia has been form'd, and at a late Muster 1400 stout Men appear'd with Arms, Col. Thomas Cox, Son of Dr. Cox, commanding them. The Number of Souls in this Province computed to be 12000, and West-New-Jersey 8000.

We must
that relate
with many,
as they are
Reader.

Governor
about the
ther appoint
first Govern
Esq; one of
Office, A. L.
After which
sold to Dr.
College of P
his own Har
in his Profess
the Profits of
ny always by
Justice dimin
to his Amer
as far as Sal
bark there
by a Friend
to London, f
Thomas Lane
Mincey whic
London for a
nies on the C
charters did w
but we find
of the Colon
to the Queen
except the S
Crown. Th
the same; f
Dockwa, in
Name of the
on her Majes
Sovereignty
panted my
Lord made
his Secretary
The Two
Years, becau

We must now take some Notice of those Events which relate to the latter: 'Tis true, we do not meet with many, and those not very important; but such as they are, we shall communicate them to the Reader.

Governours were settled in this Province much about the same time that the Proprietaries of this other appointed Persons to govern *East-New-Jersey*. The first Governour of *West-New-Jersey* was *Edward Byllyng*, Edward Byllyng, one of the Proprietaries, who was put into that Office, *A. D.* 1683. and continu'd in it several Years. *Esq;* Governor.

After which the greatest part of the Province was sold to Dr. *Daniel Cox*, one of the Members of the College of Physicians, who took the Government into his own Hands; but being then in very great Business in his Profession, he did not think fit to leave it for the Profits of his Province, and govern'd the Colony always by a Deputy. In the Year 1690. his Practice diminishing in England, he resolv'd on a Voyage to his American Territories, and was actually gone as far as *Salisbury*, in his way to *Plimouth*, to embark there for this Country, but he was dissuaded by a Friend from his intended Voyage, and returning to London, sold the best part of his Propriety to Sir *Thomas Lane*, and others, for above 1000 *l.* Sum of Money which has not often been known to be given in London for an Estate in either of the English Colonies on the Continent of America. What these Purchasers did with their Province, we have not heard; but we find they thought it convenient, for the Good of the Colony, to make a Surrender of their Patent to the Queen, reserving all their Rights to themselves, except the Sovereignty, which was restor'd to the Crown. The Proprietaries of *East-New-Jersey* did the same; for on the 22d of April, 1702. Mr. *Will. Dockwra*, in their Name, and Sir *Thomas Lane* in the Name of the Proprietaries of *West-New-Jersey*, waited on her Majesty, and made a formal Surrender of the Sovereignty to her. The Queen immediately appointed my Lord *Cornbury* to be Governour, and this Lord made the late Governour, Mr. *Jeremy Basse*, his Secretary.

The Two Provinces, which had been divided 26 Years, became united, and now goes by the Name of New-Jersey.

The Patents
surrendered.

The Lord
Cornbury
Governor.

The History of New-Jersey.

New-Jersey; the Government being by a *Governour*, *Council*, and *Assembly*: The *Governour* chooses his *Council* out of each, and appoints a *Lieutenant-Governour*. In the Year 1703. Mr. *Sergeant Hook* made a Purchase of 3750 Acres of Land, in *West-Jersey*, upon *Delaware River*, and gave the 10th part of it as a *Glebe* to the *Church*. The Names of the present *Officers* are,

The Right Honourable the Lord Viscount *Cornewall*,
Governour.

Richard Ingoldsby, Esq; Lieutenant-Governour.

Lewis Morris, Esq;

Col. *Andrew Bowne*,

Thomas Ruvel, Esq;

Francis Davenport, Esq;

William Pinhorn, Esq;

George Deacon, Esq;

Daniel Leeds, Esq;

William Sandford, Esq;

Col. *Robert Quarry*, and

Peter Sammons, Merchant,

Counsellors.

'Tis remarkable, that Col. *Robert Quarry*, is not only a Counsellor here, but also at *New-York*, *Pennsylvania*, *Maryland*, and *Virginia*.

Secretary and Register, Mr. *William Dockwra*.
Secretary to the Governour, Mr. *Jeremy Bass*.

H

P E

T

some has the
pulous.

The Pro
Sir William
Conjunction
Rump; who
niola; and
Conduct of
Knighted, v
with equal
fell in with
and comma
in the first
ceiv'd the H
after, was b
the Services
the Ingenio
this Province
of the People

THE

THE
HISTORY
OF
PENNSYLVANIA:

THIS is not the least considerable of our *American* Colonies; and for the few Years that the Tract of Land, which goes by this Name, has been inhabited, we believe none has thriv'd more, nor is more rich and populous.

The *Proprietary, William Pen, Esq;* is the Son of *The Proprietary Sir William Pen*, who commanded the *English Fleet*, in *Conjunction* with other Admirals, in the time of the *Rump*; whom *Oliver* sent with *Col. Venables* to *Hispaniola*; and tho that Expedition fail'd through the ill Conduct of *Venables*, *Mr. Pen*, for he was not then Knighted, was generally said to have behav'd himself with equal Wisdom and Courage. He afterwards fell in with the *Royalists* upon the King's *Restoration*, and commanded the Fleet under the Duke of *Tork*, in the first *Dutch War*, having sometime before receiv'd the Honour of Knighthood; and dying not long after, was bury'd in *Redcliff Church* in *Bristol*. For the Services he had done the King and Nation, his Son, the ingenious *William Pen, Esq;* solicited a *Grant* of this Province; but having declar'd himself the *Friend* of the People in *England*, call'd *Quakers*, he met with

L ;

great

great Difficulties in obtaining this *Patent*; which he at last procur'd, bearing Date the 4th of *March*, 1682. and gave his Name to the whole Country, which is from him call'd *Pensylvania* in the Original *Grant*, by the King's Authority. But before we proceed further in its History, we must give the Reader some Idea of the Province.

Bounds.

Pensylvania consists of all that Tract of Land in America, with all Islands thereunto belonging; that is to say, from the Beginning of the fortieth Degree of North Latitude, unto the forty third Degree of North Latitude, whose Eastern Bounds, from 12 English Miles above Newcastle (alias Delaware-Town) runs all along upon the Side of Delaware-River. So that 'tis bounded on the East by the River and Bay of Delaware, and the Eastern Sea; on the North, by West New-Jersey, or rather New-York, for it goes a great way above the Jersey; on the West, by the Indian Nations about the Heads of *Susquahanna* and Delaware Rivers; and on the South by Maryland; and reaches from *Pensberry*, near the Falls of Delaware River, to Cape *Hinlope*, at the Mouth of Delaware Bay, near 150 Miles: But it runs along like a Strip of Land, being very much crowded in Breadth by Maryland.

We should have made mention of the first Inhabitants of this Country, and the first Discoverers; but what we have particularly to say of either the one or the other, we shall relate in the further Prosecution of this History, and continue our Geographical Description of it.

Rivers.

The River *Delaware* is navigable 300 Miles at least, in small Vessels; so high Mr. *Pen* has gone up it himself, as he was pleas'd to acquaint the Writer of this Treatise. It rises in the Mountains, in the Western Parts of this Continent, near the *Iroquois*, and runs parallel with *Susquahanna* River in Maryland; the latter falling into the Bay of *Chesapeake*, not far from where *Delaware* River discharges it self into the Bay that bears its Name. Some Ships bound for *Pensylvania* sail through *Chesapeake* Bay, the Head falling with in this Latitude. They both divide themselves, near the Falls, into two great Branches; and between them flows the *Schoolkill*, which runs into the *Delaware* at *Philadelphia*. These are the only Rivers of Note in this

this Province, the Southside as well as the North Article.

We do not know this Country, the Falls, is a great one, against *Burlington* small Creek, the Delaware *Mishmenck*, the between which seems for both *Sweat* *Pensylvania*.

the Creeks I have seen. The Dutch place call'd *Oxford*, a congregation, supposing there being no more of about 1500 *Mill-Creek*,

Philadelphia with the Nation, a situation.

Delaware and *Water*; one of the other. The Eastern *Schoolkill*, with Each Front of

long, and two runs along the Mile in length Wharfs and

And as *Philadelphia* there were more than a Years

A. D. 1682. Number of

They are good chards and Corn high and firm and Springs

The History of Pensylvania.

251

this Province; the rest are rather *Creeks* than *Rivers*; the Southside of the *Delaware* abounding with them, as well as the North; of which we have spoken in the last Article.

We do not find any Counties in the *Western* Part of this Country; the first Town we come to below the Falls, is *Newton*; and next to it is *Pensberry*, over against *Burlington*, in *West New-Jersey*. Here's a small Creek, but never a one at *Newton*. This part of the *Delaware* is call'd the *Freshet*. The next Creek is *Meshimenck*, then *Portquessin*, then *Pemunapeka*; between which and *Towcauny*-Creek, is *Frankford*; which seems to be a *Dutch* Village, or a *Swedish*; for both *Swedes* and *Dutch* inhabit several Places in *Pensylvania*. The *Swedes* seated themselves mostly in the Creeks I have been speaking of, about the *Freshet*. The *Dutch* planted near the Bay. This Place is also call'd *Oxford*, and here is a Church of *England* Congregation, supply'd by the Ministers of *Philadelphia*, there being none yet sent to the Town, which consists of about 150 Houses. From *Towcauny*, having pass'd *Mill-Creek*, we come to

Philadelphia, the Capital of this Colony, dignify'd *Philadelph-* with the Name of a City. 'Tis indeed most commo-phia. diqually situated between two navigable Rivers, the *Delaware* and *Schookill*. It has two Fronts on the Water; one on the East-side, facing the *Schookill*; and the other on the West, facing the *Delaware*. The Eastern Part is most populous on account of the *Schookill*, which is boatable 100 Miles above the Falls. Each Front of the City, as it was laid out, was a Mile long, and two from River to River. The Street that runs along the River *Schookill* is three Quarters of a Mile in length. The Houses are very stately; the Wharfs and Warehouses numerous and convenient. And as *Philadelphia* flourish'd so much at first, that there were near 100 Houses and Cottages within less than a Years time, so since the Foundation of this City, A. D. 1682. it has made answerable Progress; the Number of Houses being computed to be 1200 now. They are generally well built, and have large Orchards and Gardens. The Land on which it stands is high and firm, and the Conveniency of Coves, Docks, and Springs, has very much contributed to the Com-

merce of this Place, where many rich Merchants now live; and we have been inform'd, some of them are so wealthy, that they keep their *Coaches*. The Town was laid out, and a Draught taken of it by Mr. *Thomas Holme*, *Surveyor General* of the Province, which lies now before me; it seems to be a very fair Plan, and if it was all built, would make a great and beautiful City; the *Streets* being broad, and so long all of them, that they reach from River to River; a Compass of Ground which is large enough to make a City for all the Inhabitants of the Northern Colonies, perhaps not excluding *New-England*. Ships may ride here in 6 or 7 Fathom Water, with very good Anchorage. The Land about it is a dry, wholesom Level. All Owners of 1000 Acres of Ground and upwards, have their Houses in the two Fronts, facing the Rivers, and in the *High-street*, running from the Middle of one Front to the Middle of the other. Every Owner of 5000 Acres has about an Acre in Front; and the smaller Purchasers, about half an Acre in the backward *Streets*. By which means the least has Room enough for a House, Garden and small Orchard. The *High-street* is 100 Foot broad; so is the *Broad-street*, which is in the middle of the City, running from North to South. In the Center is a Square of 10 Acres, for the State-house, Market-house, School-house, and chief Meeting-house for the Quakers: The Lord Proprietary being of that Profession, 'tis not strange, that most of the first *English* Inhabitants were of the same Opinion. The Persecution rais'd by the *Papish* Faction and their Adherents in *England*, against *Protestant Dissenters*, was very hot when Mr. *Pen* obtain'd a *Grant* of this Territory, and the Quakers flock'd to it, as an *Asylum*, from the Rage of their Enemies. But since the glorious *Revolution*, People have transported themselves to the *Plantations*, to enrich, and not to save themselves from Injustice and Violence at home.

Men of all Principles have settled in this Place, as well as others; and there are so many Orthodox Professors, that there's a great Church in *Philadelphia*, for the Exercise of Religion, according to the Discipline of the Church of *England*; and some of them have clamour'd lately very much for an *Organ*, to the great

great Offence Word out of Church here very to allow the M tary Subscr master has also Patent for the Society before al Meeting-h baptist, and Evans is now Mr. Thomas at least 700 Pe In each Qu to be for the l the Plan ther to Front, p Streets, that of which are that near a te sidering, all Twenty, one High-street an an Inlet of th of the Front, Several Cree Rivers.

Here the kept, and the chiefly manag Key, above 20 may lay her and Mechanic and consider list *America*, rable. It gi the remainin Shires, there ty, as Buck Suffex.

At a little Hill, very w

great Offence of the *Brethren*. We do not use this Word out of Contempt, but to avoid that of *Distinction*, which is too scandalous for a serious History. The Church here is call'd *Christ-Church*, and the Congregation is very numerous. His late Majesty was pleas'd to allow the Minister 50 *l. per Annum*, besides the voluntary Subscriptions of the Inhabitants. The Schoolmaster has also an Allowance of 30 *l. per Annum*. The Patent for them was taken out at the Charge of the Society before-mention'd. Here are besides this several Meeting-houses, as a Quaker's, Presbyterian, Anabaptist, and a *Swedish* Church. The Reverend Mr. Evans is now Minister of *Philadelphia*. His Assistant is Mr. Thomas; Schoolmaster, Mr. Club. There are at least 700 Persons of the Orthodox Church.

In each Quarter of this City is a Square of 8 Acres, to be for the like Uses as *Moorfields* in *London*: And in the Plan, there are Eight Streets, that run from Front to Front, parallel with *High-street*, and Twenty Streets, that run cross the City from side to side; both of which are 30 Foot broad. But we cannot suppose that near a tenth Part of this Ground is taken up, considering all the eight Streets are 2 Miles, and the Twenty, one Mile long, besides the Fronts, and *High-street* and *Broad-street*. The Dock is form'd by an Inlet of the River *Delaware*, at the South Corner of the Front, and has a Bridge over it at its Entrance. Several Creeks run into the City out of the two Rivers.

Here the Assemblies and Courts of Judicature are kept, and the Trade and Business of the Province is chiefly manag'd, as in all Capitals. Here is a beautiful Key, above 200 Foot square; to which a Ship of 500 Tun may lay her Broad-side. Here are most sorts of Trades and Mechanics, as well as Merchants and Planters; and considering 'tis the youngest Capital in our *English America*, 'tis far from being the least considerable. It gives Name to the Country about it; for the remaining part of *Philadelphia* is divided into Shires, there being 3 more besides *Philadelphia* County, as *Buckingham*, *Chester*, *Newcastle*, *Kent*, and *Sussex*.

At a little Distance from *Philadelphia*, is a pleasant Hill, very well Wooded, on the Banks of the *Schoonkill*.

hill, call'd *Fair Mount*. *Wiaco*, half a Mile from the Town, is a *Swedish* Settlement; where the People of that Nation have a *Meeting-house* for religious Worship: They have another at *Tenecum*. But whether these Places are in *Buckingham* or *Philadelphia* County, we have not learn'd. Indeed where there are so few Inhabitants, there's more Vanity and Ostentation in dividing the Country into Shires, than real Use and Necessity; and if we do it, 'tis purely out of Complaisance to the Humour of the People.

Within Land lies *Radnor* or *Welsh Town*, finely situated, and well built, containing near 30 Families. In this Place is a Congregation of Church of *England*-Men, but no settled Minister. In these two Counties are several other Creeks; as *Darby Creek*, &c. *Amorstand* lies between that and another nameless Creek. From whence, passing by *Ridloer*, we come to *Chester* Town, which also gives Name to a County. The Number of Families in this Division, as well as in the others, I have not heard; but by the Computation of the Number of Souls in all the Province, they cannot exceed 200. This Place is also call'd *Uplands*, and has a Church, dedicated to *S. Paul*, with a numerous Congregation of Orthodox Professors, whose Minister is *Mr. Men. Nicholls*; his Income paid by the before-mention'd Society, 50 l. a Year. They are about erecting a School here, dependent on the Minister. There's another little Town at the Mouth of a Creek, call'd *Chichester*. Below that is a great Creek, which we may be sure belong'd to the *Dutch*, by the Name that is given it, *Brandywine*. Here's Room enough to lay up the whole Navy Royal of *England*, there being from four to eight Fathom Water in this Creek. Between *Brandywine* and *Christina*, is an *Iron Mill*. What Advantage it has been to the *Proprietors* we know not, and suppose we should have heard of it, had it been considerable.

Next to *Brandywine* is *Christina* Creek; where, when the *Swedes* inhabited this and the other Side of the *Delaware*, they had a Town which serv'd them instead of a Capital, and the Governour resided, if we may give Credit to *Monsieur Robbe*, in his Account of *La Nouvelle Swede*, which included part of

Country, as *Delaware Creek*; but they had how between this and whence the inhabited for *Bigney* 300 Families, most ly Minister.

Next to it is *Delaware*, and over against the *Delaware*, *Delaware Water*.

Name of a R they are d ame of *North* arch, but 'tis her. Passing come to *Ko* *Murder* is a Church r, *Mr. Thom* id by the Soc here about 7 nify'd with *Sussex County* Creek.

The Villages habiting that per Rivers; *Delaware*, the *Dutch* Progreis in we encreas'd 1000 Souls of umber are below *Lewis's C* *Idea Pennsylvania* enturers we sh d a *Whalery* properly be me ade of the P

from the People of this Country, and part of the *Jersey*. This is a very large Creek; but the Village is inconsiderable. The *Indians* had however a Church here not long ago. Between this and the next Creek is *Newcastle Town*; from whence the adjoining County takes its Name. It is inhabited by *English* and *Dutch*, and is the next way for *Bigness* and Trade to *Philadelphia*, containing 300 Families. Here's a Church built, and a Congregation, most of which are *Wells*. Mr. *Refs* was formerly Minister. The *Dutch* have a Church in this town.

Next to it is *St. George's*, then *Black-bird Creek*; over against it lies a little Island, call'd *Road Island*, in the *Delaware*, where there is in that Place 10 *Fathom Water*. *Apaquamary Creek* is honour'd with the Name of a River. There's another Creek, so call'd, and they are distinguish'd from one another by the Name of *North* and *South*. The Inhabitants have built a Church, but 'tis not endow'd or supply'd with a Minister. Passing by *Bombays Point*, and *Duck Creek*, we come to *Kent County*; in which are *Cranbrook*, *Murder*, and *Mispellville* Creeks. At *Delaware* is a Church of *England* Congregation; the Minister, Mr. *Thomas Cranford*, who has 304, 2 Year, paid by the Society. In the Bay of *Delaware*, which is here about 7 Leagues over, *Cedar Creek* is by some signify'd with the Name of a River. 'Tis the first in *Suffex County*, where we find *Plum Point* and *Low Creek*.

The Villages hereabouts are very thin, the *English* inhabiting that part of the Province that lies on the upper Rivers; and since their Settlements in *Pennsylvania*, the *Dutch* and *Swedes* have made very little or no Progress in their Plantations, whereas the *English* have encreas'd so much, that there are now above 3000 Souls of that Nation in this Colony; and their numbers are yearly augmented. About three Miles below *Lewis's Creek* is the Line of Partition, which divides *Pennsylvania* from *Maryland*. The Society of Adventurers we shall have Occasion to speak of hereafter, and a *Whalery* near *Lewis's Town*, but this will more properly be mention'd, when we come to treat of the Trade of the Place.

We shall avoid needless Repetitions ; and when we have given the Reader an Idea of the *Indians* in one Part of *America*, of the Soil, Climate, and Trade, if that Idea will serve for any other, we shall be glad to save him the Trouble of reading it under another Article. But tho' 'tis probable, the *New-York* and *Virginian Indians* have a great deal of Agreement as to their Language, Manners, and Customs, with those of *Pennsylvania*, as the Climate and Soil of the latter agree with those of *Virginia* and *New-York* ; yet we having a very particular Account of these things written by Mr. *Pen* himself, in a Letter, dated the 10th of *August*, 1683. at *Philadelphia*, 'twill not be unwelcome to the Curious, to see what he has said of this Country. To which we shall add, what others have also written, or told us, as far as we could depend on their Authority.

Climate
and Soil.

We shall begin with the Climate and Soil, and treat first of the Climate. We see by its Latitude that 'tis at a like Distance from the Sun with *Naples* in *Italy*, and *Montpellier* in *France*. The Air is sweet and clear, the Heavens serene, and Mr. *Pen*, who had seen the Southern Parts of *France*, compares the Face of them in *Pennsylvania* to that in those Provinces. The Fall begins about the 24th of *October*, and lasts till the Beginning of *December*, being like a mild *Spring* in *England*. Frosty Weather and extreme cold Seasons have been known there, as in the Year 1681. but the Sky was always clear, and the Air dry, cold, piercing, and hungry. The River *Delaware* was then frozen over, tho' it is near two Miles broad at *Philadelphia*. From *March* to *June* the *Spring* lasts, without Gusts of Wind, refresh'd with gentle Showers, and a fine Sky ; but the Weather there, as well as in *England*, is more inconstant than in the other Seasons. The Heats are extraordinary in the *Summer* Months, *July*, *August*, and *September*, but mitigated by cool Breezes. The Wind is South-West during the Summer, but generally North-Westerly, Spring, Fall, and Winter. If Easterly or Southerly Winds raises Mists, Fogs, or Vapours, in two Hours time they are blown away.

The Soil of this Tract of Land is various : In some Places 'tis a yellow and black Sand, poor and rich ;

The

others, a loam, like the earth, like the Brooks and Rivers, one richer than another, there's also a black loam, as a black loam, the Earth is clear'd, because the Surface is clear'd. We have all the Rivers, the Rivers and Brooks, there are also some manner of these Springs.

The Natural Trees, Fruit, and Note are Chestnut, Poplar, Beech, and Oak, black, Spanish, of all. Hare, Snaker, and Spruce.

The Fruits are White and Red, Plums, several kinds of Grapes, is would make little inferior, it differs in model, and a little in *England*.

Province, and *Newington* Peas. The artificial, Barley, Oats, Water-Melon, Cherries, Apples, Cabbages, Corn, Parsnips, Onions, Indian, which more

others, a loomy Gravel; in others, a fast fat earth, like the *Vales* in *England*, especially by Inland Brooks and Rivers, where the Lands are generally three times richer than those that lye by Navigable Rivers. There's also another Soil in many parts of the Province, as a black Hazel Mould on a Stony bottom. The Earth is not only fruitful and fat, but easy to be clear'd, because the Roots of the Trees lye almost on the Surface of the Ground.

We have already observ'd how *Pennsylvania* abounds with Rivers, the Waters of which are good, both the Rivers and Brooks having gravelly and stony Bottoms. There are also *Mineral Waters*, that operate in the same manner with those of *Barnet* and *North-hall*. These Springs are about two Miles from *Philadelphia*.

The Natural Product of the Country, of Vegetables, *Products*. The Trees, Fruits, Plants, Flowers. The Trees of *Trees*. Most Note are the Black Walnut, Cedar, Cypress, Chestnut, Poplar, Gumwood, Hickory, Sassafras, Ash, Beech, and Oak of several sorts, as Red, White and Black, *Spanish* Chestnut, and Swamp, the most durable of all. Here are some excellent Shrubs, as Shrub, Snakeroot, Sassaparella, *Calamus Arromaticus*, Gallop and Spruce Cranberries.

The Fruits that grow naturally in the Woods, are *Fruits*. The White and Black Mulberry, Chestnuts, Wall-nuts, Plums, Strawberries, Hurtleberries, and Grapes of several kinds. The great Red Grape, call'd the *Red-Grape*, is commended by Mr. *Pow*; and he thinks it would make excellent Wine, if not so sweet, yet little inferior to *Frontinac*; it tastes like that Grape, but differs in Colour. There's a *White* kind of *Muscadel*, and a little *Black* Grape, like the Cluster-Grape in *England*. Peaches are prodigiously plentiful in this Province, and as good as any in *England*, except the *Newington* Peach.

The artificial Produce of the Country is Wheat, *Corn*. Barley, Oats, Rye, Pease, Beans, Squashes, Pumpkins, Water-Melons, Mus-Melons, Apples, Pears, Plums, Cherries, Apricocks, Carrots, Turnips, Parsnips, Cabbiges, Colworts, Potatoes, Radishes as big as parsnips, Onions, Cucumbers; as also Quinces, Currants, *Indian* Corn, Hemp, Flax, and Tobacco, of which more hereafter. As

As to the Fertility of the Soil, this Instance of it is sufficient to prove it: One Mr. *Edward Jones*, who Plantation was on the *Schoolhill* in the Infancy of the Colony, had, with ordinary Cultivation, for one Grain of English Barley, seventy Stalks and Ears of that Corn: 'Tis common from one Bushel sown here to raise 40, often 50, and sometimes 60. Three Pecks of Wheat sows an Acre.

Animals.

Of Living Creatures, Fish, Fowl, and Beasts in the Wood, there are divers sorts, some for Food & Profit, and some for Profit only. For Food as well Profit, are the Elk, as big as a small Ox, Deer bigger than ours in England, Beaver, Raccoon, Rabbit, Squirrels; and some eat young Beary and commensurate it, but 'tis likely their Taste are as barbarous as the Food. Here's Plenty of Oxen, Cows, and Sheep, in such that some Farmers have 3 and 400 in a flock. The Creatures for Profit only, by Skin or Fur, or for Carriage and Sale, are the Wild-Goat, Panther, Otter, Wolf, Fox, Fisher, Mink, Muskrat, and, to name the noblest last, Horses, for very good and shapely enough, which are exported to Barbadoes, and is one of the best Merchandise ship'd off from hence for that, or the other Sugar Islands.

Fowl.

Of Fowl. Here is the Land-Turtle, (40 or 50 Pound Weight) Pheasants, Heath-Birds, Pidgeons, Partridges, and Black-Birds in such Flocks, that they even darken the Air. A certain Inhabitant of this Province writes, That Pidgeons settle in such prodigious Multitudes, they make the large Arms of Trees bend ready to break, and more have been kill'd at Shot, than there were Corns of Shot in the Peices. Of Water-Fowl, here are Swans, Geese, White and Grey Brants, Ducks, and Teal, Snipe, and Curlews in great Numbers; but the Duck and Teal excel any of their kind in other Countries.

See Will.
Bradford's
Letter,
printed in
1685.

Fish.

This, as well as other American Provinces, abound with Fish, which the Bay and River of Delaware most plentifully supply them with. Sturgeon, Herrings, Roch, Shat, Catshead, Sheepshead, Ele Smelts, and Pearch are caught in Abundance in the Bay, and in the River below the Freshes; and Trout in the Inland Rivers. Oysters, Crabbs, Cockles,

Conks,

Conks, and M
are 6 Inches
Oysters, with
the Lab
Virtue of
very rare. W
by the Society
Price: A Con
ought, and C
long Continua
uncertain.
There are
Barn
very pleasant
The Wood
both for
riety.
The ancient
next to be
tail, straight,
Of Complex
in England.
Clarify'd; and
Weather, th
little and bla
The thick Lip
Indians and B
tern as comeli
Sakes, as on b
lection has no
if several of
Their Lan
and Emphasi
Sweet, as O
Poquessin, all
Then for Sw
Jissimus Broth
Pone Bread,
to come. T
Names of P
Matta ne ba
As to their
Children in
often in the

Cocks, and Muscles are plenty here. Some Oysters
are 6 Inches long, and Cockles as big as Stewing-
Oysters, with which a rich Broth is made; but we
value the Labour, Temperance, Continnence, Health
and Virtue of this People render the use of such Broth
very rare. Whale-Fishing has been attempted here
by the Society, of which I shall say more in its due
time: A Company of Whalers were employ'd, Whales
caught, and Oyl made; but that Trade was of no
long Continuance, it being found to be expensive and
uncertain.

There are divers Medicinal Plants to cure Sweet Plums.
Rings, Burnings, Cuts, &c. and several that smell
very pleasantly, as the Wild Mirtle and others.

The Woods are adorn'd with Flowers, excel Flowers.
both for Colour, Greatness, Figure, and Va-
riety.

The ancient Inhabitants of this Territory come Indians.
next to be treated of. The Indians are generally
tall, streight, well-built, and of singular Proportion,
Of Complexion black, but by Design, as the Gypsies
in England. They anoint themselves with Bears Fat
clarify'd; and using no Defence against the Sun or
Weather, their Skins are swarthy. Their Eye is
little and black. As to their Faces, Mr. Pen says,
The thick Lip and flat Nose, so frequent with the East-
Indians and Blacks, are not common to them; for I have
seen as comely European-like Faces among them of both
Sexes, as on our Side the Sea; and truly an Italian Com-
plexion has not much more of the White, and the Nose
of several of them have as much of the Roman.

Their Language is lofty, yet narrow; the Accent
and Emphasis of some of their Words are Great and
Sweet, as Octorockon, Ramocas, Oriton, Shakameron,
Poquessin, all Names of Places, and very sounding.
Then for Sweetness, there are their Anna Mother,
Issimus Brother, Netap Friend, Usque Oret very good,
Pone Bread, Mese Eat, matta no, hatta to have, paya
to come. Tamare, Secane, Menanse, Secatereus, the
Names of Persons. Their Phrase for I have not, is
Matta ne hatta, not I have.

As to their Manners and Customs, they wash their
Children in Water as soon as born, and plunge them
often in the Rivers while they are young, to harden
them.

them. They wrap them up in a Clout, and lay them on a streight thin Board, a little more than the Length or Breadth of the Child, which they swaddle fast on the Board to make it streight: This is the Reason that all *Indians* have flat Heads. Thus they carry them at their Backs. At nine Months End the Children commonly go. They wear only a small Clout round their Waist, till they are big. The Boys fish till they are fifteen, then they hunt; and having given some Proofs of their Manhood by a good Return of Skins, may marry, else 'tis a Shame to think of a Wife. The Girls live with their Mothers, help hough the Ground, plant Corn, and carry Burthens; and, says my Author, *They do well to use them so that young, which they must do when they are old; for the Wives are the true Servants of the Husbands, otherwise the Men are very affectionate to them.* Women marry at 13 or 14, Men at 17 or 18. Their Houses are Matts, or Barks of Trees set on Poles, like an *English* Barn, out of the Power of the Winds, for they are hardly higher than a Man. They lye on Reeds or Grass. When they travel, they lodge in the Woods, about a great Fire, with the Mantle of Duffils they wear by Day wrapt about them. Their Food is *Indian* Corn, which they dress several ways, Beans and Pease, Flesh and Fish out of the Woods and Rivers. They treat the *Europeans*, who come among them, very civilly, and give them the best Place and first Cut. They sit mostly on the Ground, close to their Heels, their Legs upright; and after having saluted their European Visitors or Visiter with an *Itah*, or *Good be to you*, perhaps say not a Word more, but observe all Passages. They are pleas'd if you give them any thing, but never beg; and if they are not ask'd to eat, go away sullenly.

They conceal their Resentments as much as they can, and are suppos'd to do it on Account of the Revenge that has been practis'd among them; for in both their Resentments and their Revenge they are not exceeded by the *Italians*; an Instance of which happen'd while Mr. *Pen* was in the Country: A King's Daughter thinking her self slighted by her Husband, in suffering another Woman to lie down between them, rose up, went out, pluck'd a Root out of the

Ground,

Ground, and
dy'd. Her
died accord
Liberty of
Husbands
dy'd a nat
aton'd, the
young Wo
age, to rais
are marry'd
their Husba
In the Mo
Stick, left t
bands till th

May not
rians; and
another ba
They are ve
gives any o
twenty Han
est Creature
ally. Weal
all Parts pa
Property.

little. If th
also know
Fishing, and
their Subliss
and Evening
Ground. T

Europeans, and
When they
on of some
Flesh, it mu

They have a
ings: An Inf
very extraor

question'd;
was the ver
Year 1683.

make Disco
Captain Ger
such an Off
commands

Ground, and eat it, upon which she immediately dy'd. Her Husband made an Offering to her Kindred according to Custom, for an Atonement, and Liberty of Marriage. At the same time two other Husbands did it to the Kindred of their Wives that dy'd a natural Death: For till Widowers have thus aton'd, they must not marry again. Some of the young Women sell their last Favours before Marriage, to raise Money for a Portion; but after they are marry'd, they remain chaste, and never admit their Husbands's Embraces when they are with Child. In the Month they touch no Meat, and eat with a Stick, lest they should defile it, nor admit their Husbands till that Time is expir'd.

May not some *European* Wives learn of these *Barbarians*; and is it not Vanity in any one People to call another barbarous, because their Customs differ? They are very liberal, insomuch that if an *European* gives any of them a fine Gown or Coat, it may pass twenty Hands before it sticks. They are the merriest Creatures living, feasting and dancing perpetually. Wealth circulates like Blood among them; all Parts partake; yet they are exact Observers of Property. They covet little, because they want but little. If they are ignorant of our Pleasures, they also know nothing of our Pains. Their Hunting, Fishing, and Fowling feed them, and their Sports are their Substantance. They eat twice a Day, Morning and Evening. Their Seats and Tables are on the Ground. They have learnt Drunkenness of the *Europeans*, and are wretched Objects when drunk. When they are sick they drink a Teran, or Decoction of some Roots in Spring-Water; and if they eat Flesh, it must be of the Female of any Creature. They have a great Opinion of *Cold Baths* and *Sweatings*: An Instance of which we shall report, it being very extraordinary, and the Truth of it is not to be question'd; for the Gentleman who told it to us, was the very Person that saw it. Mr. Pen, in the Year 1683. travelling into the *Back* Countries, to make Discoveries, came to a Wigwam, where the Captain General of that Nation liv'd; for they have such an Officer, besides their Sachem or King, who commands the Army, and leads them to Battle:

The Captain General happen'd to be at that time ill of a Fever, and was about to try their usual Remedy to cure himself. His Wife to that end had prepar'd a little Bagnio upon the Ground, without Doors, into which he crept. This Bagnio was like an Oven, and his Wife, to heat it, put several great hot Stones on each side of it, which gave the Man an extreme Sweat, while he sat or lay along in this Oven or Bagnio. She made a Hole through the Ice of the River, it being frosty Weather, and the Bagnio on the River's Bank. This Hole or Passage she dug with an Axe, the Ice being very thick. When the Passage was prepar'd, the Man came out of his Oven, the Drops of Sweat running down his Face and Body, leapt into the River, and duckt himself twice. He then crept through his Oven, and so went to his Wigwam, where laying himself down by a Fire, he gradually cool'd himself, and was afterwards as well as ever.

Thus far we have told this Story, to shew what Opinion the *Indians* have of *Sweating and Cold Baths*: The remaining part of it is to give the Reader an Idea of their Manners and Understanding; and being assur'd by Mr. *Pen* himself, that the following Relation is true, we recommend it as such to the World, for we cannot have better Authority.

While the Captain General was in the Bagnio, he first sang all the Acts of the Nation he was of, to divert him from the Troublesomeness of the Heat; then those of his Ancestors, who were Nobles and Generals in the Country; and last of all, his own. After which he fell into this Rhapsody: *What is the Manner with us Indians, that we are thus sick in our own Air, and these Strangers well? 'Tis as if they were sent hither to inherit our Land in our steads; but the Reason is plain, they love the great God, and we do not.* A Reflection very surprizing in a Barbarian; but Mr. *Pen* heard it, and attested it to be Matter of Fact to the Historian.

If they die, they are bury'd, Men or Women, with their Apparel; and the nearest of Kin throw some valuable Thing into their Graves, as Tokens of their Love. Their Mourning is blacking of their Faces, which they continue a whole Year. They

are nice in for, lest the the Grass t God and In who made the Southward o thier, whe

Their W They feast the *European* Entertainme der shady T hot Cakes o they make v Those that sent in their made of the is Gold, the Wampum.

Their G chose by Suc yet no Wo for this way be spurious. of all the old haps is two taken, be it sick, withou with the yo Author, to low they mo those Monar ment are m much for th the People. chies give u than all tha mous Suppo Sophistical A

Their Jus evil Fact, be and Presents to the Qualit of the Sex

are nice in the Choice of the Graves of their Dead ; for, lest they should be lost by Time, they pick off the Grass that grows upon them. They believe a God and Immortality, saying, *There is a great King, who made them, who dwells in a glorious Country, to the Southward of them ; and the Souls of the Good shall go thither, where they shall live again.*

Their Worship consists of *Sacrifices* and *Songs*. They feast one another in Harvest-Time, and invite the *Europeans* sometimes. Mr. Pen was at one of their Entertainments, on a green Bank by a Spring, under shady Trees. There were 20 Bucks kill'd, with hot Cakes of new Corn, Wheat and Beans, which they make up in a square Form ; then they dance. Those that go to these Feasts must carry a small Present in their Money ; it may be six Pence, which is made of the Bone of a Fish: The Black is with them as *Gold*, the White as *Silver* ; and they call it all *Wampum*.

Their Government is by Kings or Sachems, and chose by Succession, but always of the Mother's side, yet no Woman inherits. The Reason they render for this way of Descent, is, that their Issue may not be spurious. Every King has his Council, consisting of all the old and wise Men of his Nation, which perhaps is two Hundred. Nothing of Moment is undertaken, be it War, Peace, selling of Land, or Traffick, without advising with them ; and which is more, with the young Men too. *'Tis admirable, says my Author, to consider how powerful the Kings are, and how they move by the Breath of their People.* And in those Monarchies where the true Ends of Government are maintain'd, no Power will be thought too much for the Prince, nor no Privileges too great for the People. The Simplicity of these Indian Monarchies give us a better Idea of the Origin of Power, than all that the *Filmsers*, the *Lesseys*, and the infamous Supporters of Tyranny have shewn us in their *Sophistical* Arguments.

Their Justice is pecuniary ; in case of any wrong or evil Fact, be it Murder it self, they atone by *Feasts* and Presents of their *Wampum* ; which is proportion'd to the Quality of the Offence, or Person injur'd, or of the Sex they are of: For in case they kill a Wo-

man, they pay double; and the Reason they render, is, *That she breeds Children, which Men cannot do.* This Argument is as false as simple; for she could not breed them if a Man did not get them, and his Life is therefore as valuable as the Woman's. They seldom fall out if sober; and if drunk, they forgive it, saying, *It was the Drink, and not the Man that abus'd them.*

Mr. Pen believes them to be of *Jewish Race*, but that Supposition is too chimerical, and we should not much mend the Matter, if we repeated the Arguments that some make use of to vindicate this Conjecture.

Their Way of living is simple, but nasty; and we should wonder if they had learnt any Delicacy of the *New Comers*. They have been very civil and friendly to the *English*, who never lost Man, Woman, or Child by them; which neither the Colony of *Maryland* nor that of *Virginia* can say, no more than the great Colony of *New-England*. This Friendship and Civility of the *Pennsylvanian* Indians are imputed to Mr. Pen, the Proprietary's extream Humanity and Bounty to them, he having laid out some Thousands of Pounds to instruct, support and oblige them. There are 10 Indian Nations within the Limits of his Province; and the Number of Souls of these Barbarians are computed to be about 6000.

We have met with very few Events relating to this Colony: They have had no Wars either with the *Indians* or *French*, and consequently little Action has happen'd here. Mr. Pen having obtain'd the before-mention'd Patent, invited several Persons to purchase Lands of them, as he, it seems, purchas'd of the *Indians*. The *Swedes*, who had encroach'd upon the *Dutch*, the first Planters here, as well as at *New-York*, settl'd upon or near the *Freshes* of the River *Delaware*. The *Fins*, or Inhabitants of *Finland*, were part of the *Swedish* Colony, and they apply'd themselves chiefly to Husbandry: The King of *Sweden*, to protect his Subjects in these Parts, appointed a Governour here, who had often Disputes with the Governour that presid'd over the *Dutch*. The latter apply'd themselves mostly to Traffick, living upon or near the Bay; and by the Neighbourhood of *New-York*

7
were too po
cou'd not m
stronger Ne
Swedish Gov
Country,
for the State
continu'd s
drove the
York; and
easy to Mr.
them: For
vernment.

There we
man sent ov
tent; thei
ham his Ne
submitted;
thither him
England;
People, y
or Propa
rather to
The India
nishing th
Furs, for
are a Peo
have fine
'tis rare to
Boys, and
eight Son
and labor
of *Swedish* o
Souls. Mr
sold 20000
Moor, Mr
others; wh
Street, laid
Acres of L
erected a
Whalery.
Officers we
Secretary,
gions, Fac
ters, Butch

were too powerful for the *Swedes*, who finding they could not maintain their Ground, submitted to their stronger Neighbours. Accordingly *John Rizeing* the *Swedish* Governour made a formal Surrender of the Country, A. D. 1655. to *Peter Styresant*, Governour for the States of *Holland*. After which this Province continu'd subject to that Republick till the English drove the Dutch out of *New Amsterdam*, or *New York*; and made the Possession of these Territories easy to Mr. *Pen*, when he had obtain'd a Grant of them: For both *Swedes* and *Dutch* are under his Government.

There were a few English here before this Gentleman sent over the first Adventurers under his Patent; their Governour was Col. *William Markham* his Nephew, to whom both *Dutch* and *Swedes* submitted; and when the Lord Proprietary came thither himself, he sent this Character of them to *England*; 'They are a plain, strong, industrious People, yet have made no great Progress in Culture or Propagation of Fruit-Trees, as if they desir'd rather to have enough, than Plenty or Traffick. The Indians made them the more careless by furnishing them with the means of Profit, as Skins and Furs, for Rum, and such strong Liquors. As they are a People proper and strong of Body, so they have fine Children, and almost every House full; 'tis rare to find one of them without three or four Boys, and as many Girls; some have six, seven, and eight Sons, and few young Men are more sober and laborious. The Number of these Inhabitants of *Swedish* or *Dutch* Extraction, may be about 3000 Souls. Mr. *Pen*, before he went over to *Pennsylvania*, sold 20000 Acres to a certain Society, Mr. *Nicholas Moor*, Mr. *James Claypool*, Mr. *Phillip Ford*, and others; who had a whole Street, and one side of a Street, laid out for them in *Philadelphia*, and 400 Acres of Land in the City-Liberties. This Society erected a Tannery, a Saw-Mill, a Glass House, and a Whalery. They had a President in *London*: Their Officers were a President, Deputy, Treasurer, Agent, Secretary, Surveyor, 12 Committee-Men, Chirurgeons, Factors, Clerks, Overseers, Messengers, Porters, Butchers, Water-men, Car-men, and other inferior

Col. Wil.
Markham
Deputy Gov.
vernour.

ferior Mechanicks and Labourers. And having mention'd this Sale of 20000 Acres, 'twill not be improper to report what were the Proprietary's Conditions of Sale: *Buyers* purchas'd after the Rate of 20 l. for a thousand Acres, and 1 s. or the Value of it yearly, for 100 Acres. *Renters* were to pay 1 s. an Acre yearly, not exceeding 200 Acres; and *Servants* were to have 50 Acres when their Times were expir'd, whether Men or Women. The Owner was also allow'd 50 Acres a Head for such *Servants*.

We have hinted before, there were few English when Mr. *Pen* went over to take on him the Government of his Province, which was in the Year 1681. He carry'd along with him, and there came to him in the first Year near 2000 Souls, and before the New-Comers built Houses, they ran up Huts for their Reception. These Huts were generally 30 Foot long, and 18 Foot broad, with a Partition near the Middle, and another to divide one end of the House into two small Rooms. For this use they took eight Trees of about 16 Inches square, cut off ten Posts of about 15 Foot long, upon which the House stood, and 4 Pieces, 2 of 20 and 2 of 18 Foot long, for Plates to lay a-top of those Posts. They had 10 *Giests* of 20 Foot long, to bear the *Lofts*, and 2 false Plates of 30 Foot long to lie on the Ends of the *Giests*, for the *Rafters* to be fix'd upon. There were 12 Pair of *Rafters* of about 20 Foot, to bear the Roof of the House, with Windbeams, Braces, Studds, &c. They us'd *Clapboard* for the Covering of the House-Ends and Sides, and for the Loft; this *Clapboard* is riv'd Feather edg'd 5 $\frac{1}{2}$ Foot long, and if well drawn, lies close and smooth. They lin'd the Lodging-Room with it, and fill'd it up between, which made it very warm. The Lower Floor was Earth, the Upper *Clapboard*. But these mean Dwellings serv'd only till the *Pennsylvanians* were settled a little: And then having fell'd their Trees, clear'd and cultivated their Ground, rais'd Stocks, and planted a great part of their Purchases, they began to leave their Cottages for stately as well as convenient Houses, and to imitate the Inhabitants of the other Colonies in the Grandeur of their Buildings. As soon as Mr. *Pen* arriv'd, he enter'd upon Treaties with the Indian

William
Pen Esq;
Governour

Kings

T
Kings to buy
able to cul
the English
willing eno
Considerati
been purch
Stock'd thith
but they kne
wanted, and
they rais'd
first. The
tioned, gave
of the King
desirous to
thing in it w
sion, says
upon Tre
of Trade,
the middl
the Old an
a little dis
gure. He
the King
He stood
saluted m
He was or
now it w
what be
pray'd m
ply'd with
might be
Indian now
to deliber
People and
he, I had
introduc
Land th
Price. I
Man of
The Old
Deportm
seldom,
ver seen
without

having men-
be impro-
Conditions
of 20 l. for
f it yearly,
s. an Acre
vants were
re expir'd,
was also al-

few English
he Govern-
Year 1681.
me to him
re the New-
or their Re-
Foot long,
ar the Mid-
House into
eight Trees
ts of about
ood, and 4
or Plates to
Gifts of 20
Plates of 30
for the Raf-
air of Raf-
the House.
They us'd
e-Ends and
d is riv'd
drawn, lies
ging-Room
ade it very
the Upper
d only till
d then ha-
vated their
eat part of
r Cottages
nd to imi-
ies in the
as Mr. Pen
the Indian
Kings

Kings to buy Land. The Natives being few, and not
able to cultivate or defend a great Country, which
the English cou'd easily have taken from them, were
willing enough to part with their Lands for a small
Consideration: Twenty Miles of Ground might have
been purchas'd for a Trifle. But when the English
flock'd thither, these Indians were not so ignorant,
but they knew their Interest; that the Land would be
wanted, and consequently worth more; accordingly
they rais'd the Price ten times as much as it was at
first. The Proprietary, in the Letter before-men-
tioned, gives us an Account of the Audience he had
of the King, which 'tis probable the Reader will be
desirous to be acquainted with, there being some-
thing in it worthy his Curiosity: 'I have had Occa-
'sion, says Mr. Pen, to be in Council with them,
'upon Treaties for Land; and to adjust the Terms
'of Trade, their Order is thus; The King sits in
'the middle of an Half-Moon, and has his Council,
'the Old and Wise, on each hand; behind them, or at
'a little distance sits the younger Fry in the same Fi-
'gure. Having consulted and resolv'd their Business,
'the King commanded one of them to speak to me;
'He stood up, came to me, and in his King's Name
'saluted me, taking me by the Hand, and telling me,
'He was order'd by his King to speak to me, and that
'now it was not he, but the King that spoke, because
'what he should say was the King's Mind. He first
'pray'd me to excuse them, that they had not com-
'ply'd with me in a former Meeting. He fear'd there
'might be some Fault in the Interpreter, being neither
'Indian nor English; besides it was the Indian Custom
'to deliberate before they resolve; and that if the young
'People and Owners of the Land had been as ready as
'he, I had not met with so much Delay. Having thus
'introduc'd his Matter, he fell to the Bounds of the
'Land they had agreed to dispose of, and to the
'Price. During the Time this Person spoke, not a
'Man of them was observ'd to whisper or smile.
'The Old were Grave, the Young Reverend in their
'Deportment. When they spoke, which was but
'seldom, 'twas warmly and elegantly. I have ne-
'ver seen more natural Sagacity, considering them
'without the Help of Tradition; and he will de-

" serve the Name of Wise that is too hard for them in
 " any Treaty about a Thing they understand. When
 " the Purchase was agreed, *Great Promises* pass be-
 " tween us of Kindness and good Neighbourhood, and
 " that the Indians and English must live in Love as long
 " as the Sun gave Light. After which another made a
 " Speech to the Indians, in the Name of all the Sa-
 " chems or Kings, first to tell them what was
 " done, next to charge and command them, To love
 " the Christians, and particularly to live in Peace with
 " me, and the People under my Government; That ma-
 " ny Governours had been in the River, but that no Go-
 " vernour had come himself to live and stay here before;
 " and having now such an one that had treated them
 " well, they should never do him or his any wrong. At
 " every Sentence of which they shouted; and said
 " Amen in their way. By Governour living himself
 among them, they meant Proprietary: For they had
 had several Dutch and Swedish Governours in Dela-
 ware River. The Land thus bought was enter'd up-
 on by the Under-Purchasers, who purchas'd by the
 100 or the 1000 Acres what the Proprietary bought by
 Miles. When the Country began to be a little plan-
 ted, almost as far as the Bay's Mouth, 'twas divid-
 ed into the six Counties we have spoken of, which
 with the chief Towns or Villages chose Representa-
 tives in the Assembly. For we must observe that by
 the Constitutions in the Patent, the Proprietary was
 empower'd, with the Consent of the People, to make
 any Laws for the Publick Good. These Constituti-
 ons were, That the Governour and People have a Le-
 gislative Power, so that no Law can be made, nor Mo-
 ney rais'd, but by the Consent of the Inhabitants;
 That the Rights and Freedom of England be in Force
 there; That making no Law against Allegiance, the Go-
 vernour and People might enact what Laws they pleas'd
 for the Good, Prosperity and Security of the Province,
 &c. All the Inhabitants, as well Swedes and Dutch,
 as English, were very well pleas'd with Mr. Pen's co-
 ming thither in Person, and the Foreigners receiv'd
 him with as much Joy and Respect as his own Coun-
 try-men. He held two General Assemblies, and with
 such Unanimity and Dispatch, that tho they sat but
 three Weeks, they pass'd 70 Laws without one Dis-
 sent

sent in any r
 prietary with
 and exported
 ted to the P
 now went fi
 as from Lon
 the West of
 with a lew
 Counties, t
 Numbers fo
 Thomas Gol
 ders in that
 300 Tuns fo
 Goods to th
 reported, M
 dy'd a Jesuit
 Ford his Ag
 Gazette, of
 Answer Mr
 what was re
 some Person
 much Malic
 Master, del
 hop'd that th
 Protection a
 being a kind
 of the Absen
 ble as such s
 Mischief, a
 However to
 I am still al
 lous and idl
 sure from
 more alive
 Kings, Qu
 settled the
 and Dispat
 every Cou
 Peace, Sh
 Courts we
 to preven
 able Peop
 by every
 Arbitrator

sent in any material thing. They presented the Proprietary with an Imposit on certain Goods imported and exported, which Mr. Pen very generously remitted to the Province, and the Traders to it: People now went from all Parts of England to Pennsylvania; as from London, Leverpool, and Bristol especially. For the West of England abounding with Dissenters, and with a lewd Herd of Persecutors, more than other Counties, they shipt themselves in that Port in great Numbers for Philadelphia. In the Year 1682. Mr. Thomas Goldney and Mr. John Duddelstone, two Traders in that City, fitted out the Unicorn, a Ship of 300 Tuns for this Voyage, to carry Passengers and Goods to the new Colony. The Enemies of which reported, Mr. Pen was not only dead, but that he dy'd a Jesuit, in his Government. Upon which Mr. Ford his Agent in England, gave publick Notice in the Gazette, of his being alive and in good Health. The Answer Mr. Pen wrote to his Friends when he heard what was reported of him, is very ingenious. *I find some Persons, says he, have had so little Wit, and so much Malice, as to report my Death; and to mend the Matter, dead a Jesuit too! One might have reasonably hop'd that this Distance, like Death, wou'd have been a Protection against Spite and Envy; and indeed Absence being a kind of Death, ought alike to secure the Name of the Absent as the Dead, because they are equally unable as such to defend themselves. But they that intend Mischief, do not use to follow good Rules to effect it. However to the great Sorrow and Shame of the Inventors, I am still alive, and no Jesuit: I perceive many frivolous and idle Stories have been invented since my Departure from England, which perhaps by this time are no more alive than I am dead.* He was visited by the Kings, Queens, and Great Men of the Country, and settled the Affairs of the Province with equal Wisdom and Dispatch. He establish'd Courts of Justice in every County with proper Officers, as Justices of the Peace, Sheriffs, Clerks, Constables, &c. Which Courts were to be holden every two Months. But to prevent Law-Suits and Debates among this peaceable People, there were three Peace-makers chosen by every County-Court, in the nature of common Arbitrators, to hear and end Differences between

Man

Man and Man ; and every *Spring* and *Fall* there's an Orphans Court in each County, to inspect and regulate the Affairs of Orphans and Widows.

Things being thus settled, the Colony thriv'd apace, and Merchants came thither to drive on a Trade with the Sugar Islands, which is very advantagious ; for to those Islands the *Pennsylvanians* send Corn, Beef, Pork, Fish, Pipe-Staves, take their Growth, and carry it for *England*, and return with *English* Goods. Horses and live Cattle they also export to the Southern Plantations, and send their Furs to *England*, where, or in other Parts of *Europe*, they find a quick Vent. Here are other Commodities, as Hides, Tallow, Sheep, and Wooll, all in Demand in the Sugar Islands. The Indians help them to their Furs, as Peltry, Minx, Racoons, and Martins ; with which profitable Trades this Colony flourish'd as much as any ; and Mr. Pen before he came away, might muster 2500 Fighting Men, there being above 6000 Souls in all, *A. D.* 1684. so much was the Colony increas'd in his Time. 'Tis true, he carry'd over with him 2000 Souls in 12 or 20 Ships, which was a noble Foundation for a Settlement, and some of them were Persons of Estate, who fled from the Persecution at home, to enjoy the Peace of their Consciences, and the Privileges of the Laws of this Province ; the Government of which was then a sort of Republick ; and an excellent Form was drawn up by that Great Lawyer, Sir *Will. Jones*, and other famous Men of the Long Robe. The Government was indeed, as that of other Colonies, by Governour, Council, and Assembly ; but the Council was not nam'd by the Proprietary ; the Inhabitants of every Shire chose two or more for each, as they did Knights of the Shire : Neither had the Assembly Power to debate Laws, but the Constitution gave them the negative Voice. The Governour and Council drew up what Laws they thought were for the Good of the Colony, and having drawn them up, affix'd them in a publick Place, where all the People might see them, and judge of them, as to their Necessity or Convenience ; and the Assembly, whom they chose, pass'd or rejected them arbitrarily, as the Governour in other Provinces rejects or passes Laws there ; so that the Constitution of *Pennsylvania* was at first

T
 ist Democrac
 hat no Differ
 made no Diff
 and the most
 al on what v
 her foreign
 ch, that ev
 erties, Spiri
 at'd: But fu
 hat being it
 and the nea
 World, the
 Form was to
 he gross Vul
 good Reason
 corn'd, as th
 in the dark ;
 not own, an
 ways agree
 against that
 the rest, the
 clamouring
 of Governm
 Parts of it.
 menc'd, and
 the great Di
 But this hap
 reported in
 not been de
 tion, and of
 Mr. Pen f
 not then hav
 cution again
 he could n
 while his B
 with in Eur
 Court of E
 the Safety,
 ving made
 tions, betw
 having esta
 so well inh
 Houses, an
 ships, he r

Mr. Pen had ^{the} Law fram'd, that no Difference was made in Opinion, where Property made no Difference. All Elections were by Ballot, and the Form of this Government, which was founded on what was excellent in the best German and other foreign Constitutions of Common-Wealths, was such, that every Man's Property, Privileges, and Liberties, Spiritual and Temporal, were perfectly secured: But such is the Weakness of Human Nature, that being it self imperfect, it cannot relish Perfection; and the nearer any thing, approaches to it in this World, the more likely it is to disgust People. This Form was too fine for the heavy Intellects of some of the gross Vulgar. They valu'd themselves, and with good Reason in the main, on being *Englishmen*, and scorn'd, as they said, to give their Opinions and Votes in the dark; they would do nothing which they durst not own, and their Fore-heads and Voices should always agree with one another. Thus they clamour'd against that Part of the Constitution which secur'd the rest, the Election by Ballot, and never gave over clamouring till it was abolish'd, and the first Order of Government broken in upon in the most essential Parts of it. Upon which Factions of course commenc'd, and Discontents and Tumults follow'd, to the great Disturbance and Detriment of the Colony: But this happening afterwards, should also have been reported in a later part of this History, if we had not been desirous to give one View of this Constitution, and of the Fate that attended it.

Mr. Pen stay'd in *Pennsylvania* two Years, and would not then have remov'd to *England*, had not the Persecution against the Dissenters rag'd so violently, that he could not think of enjoying Peace in *America*, while his Brethren in *England* were so cruelly dealt with in *Europe*. He knew he had an Interest in the Court of *England*, and was willing to employ it for the Safety, Ease, and Welfare of his Friends; so having made a League of Amity with 19 *Indian* Nations, between them and all the *English* in *America*, having establish'd good Laws, and seen his Capital so well inhabited, that there were then near 300 Houses, and 2500 Souls in it, besides 20 other Townships, he return'd to *England*, leaving *William Markham*,

Thomas
Lloyd,
Esq; Pre-
sident.

ham, Esq; Secretary: Mr. Thomas Holmes, Surveyor General; and the Administration in the Hands of the Council, whose President was Thomas Lloyd, Esq; who by Virtue of his Office held the Government several Years, tho he had no Commission then to be Deputy or Lieutenant Governour; Mr. Pen kept the chief Government always himself, as Lord Proprietary.

What Service this Gentleman did the Quakers, in King James's Reign, and how far that Prince gave him his Ear, is well known to all that are acquainted with the History of those times, still fresh in our Memories.

Colonel
Fletcher,
Governour

Mr. Pen's Enemies were very free of their Scandal, and stuck at no Calumny to blacken him after the Revolution. There was great Appearance of his having been a Favourite in the preceding Reign, and 'twas not likely he should be one in the next; however, whether he was not too severely dealt with to be treated as an Enemy, let the impartial Reader judge. His Prerogative of appointing a Governour in Pennsylvania was taken from him, and his Majesty King William the III^d gave a Commission to Col. Fletcher, to be Governour of this Province, about the Year 1690, which Post he enjoy'd two Years, and then Mr. Pen, whose Innocence of the things laid to his Charge began to be better known, recover'd his Right of nominating a Person to govern his Colony, and he accordingly appointed Capt. Blackwell, who had been formerly Pay-Master of the Army in England, to be Deputy Governour of Pennsylvania. This Gentleman's Son, Sir Lambett Blackwell, was lately Envoy extraordinary from her Majesty to several Courts in Italy.

Captain
Blackwell,
Governour

Capt. Blackwell govern'd the Province with equal Prudence and Success; it now thriv'd apace, its Commerce and Inhabitants increas'd, and about this time the Pennsylvanians began to fall a little into the Tobacco Trade, which is so considerable at present, that 14 Ships have been loaden with that Commodity from Pennsylvania to London, and other Parts of England.

The
To Capt. B.
Deputy Gover
successful as h
the Interest
own Advantag
govern'd the C
not have got t
authority of
violence of
blind as 'tis
Mr. Lloyd
Col. Markham
Province, and
Proprietary a
Pennsylvania, whic
The Perfect
ere found the
who came th
to enjoy the
they had at ho
Religion of t
Anabaptists, w
Quakers bein
Principles not
ever, such as
to train them
for their Defe
Colony.
Mr. Pen sta
to England, M
nourishing C
ad a long S
South Easter
Lower Countie
Lord could m
minated Col.
our, and res
We have t
of the Jerseys
Discontent t
is, all Par
Matters ran
orm'd they
ing been ab

To Capt. Blackwell succeeded *Thomas Lloyd, Esq;* as *Thomas*
Deputy Governour, and his Administration prov'd as *Lloyd, Esq;*
successful as his Predecessors. It had been doubtless *Deputy*
for the Interest of the Colony, as well as for Mr. Pen's *Governour.*
own Advantage, if he had resided upon the Place, and
govern'd the Colony himself. Factions perhaps would
not have got to such a Head so soon as they did. The
Authority of a Proprietary might have restrain'd the
Violence of some Bigots, and others, whose Zeal is
blind as 'tis furious.

Mr. Lloyd dying, Mr. Pen appointed his Nephew *William*
Col. Markham to be again Deputy Governour of the
Province, and he held the Government till the Lord
Proprietary arriv'd himself the second time at *Pen-*
sylvania, which was in the Year 1698. *Will. Pen,*
Esq; Go-
vernour.

The Persecution ceasing in England, the *Quakers*
were found the Country began to be settled by People,
who came thither to mend their Fortunes, and not
to enjoy the Liberty of their Consciences, for that
they had at home. These Men being of the Orthodox
Religion of the *Church of England, Presbyterians,* and
Anabaptists, would have had a *Militia* settl'd, but the
Quakers being the Majority, were against it, their
Principles not allowing them the use of Arms: How-
ever, such as were of another Opinion, were allow'd
to train themselves, and take such Military Care,
for their Defence, as consisted with the Peace of the
Colony.

Mr. Pen stay'd here two Years, and then return'd
to England, leaving the Colony in an extraordinary
flourishing Condition. We must not omit that he
had a long Suit with the Lord *Baltimore*, for the
South Eastern Parts of his Province, call'd, *The Three*
Lower Counties, New Castle, Kent, and Sussex, but that
Lord could make nothing of it. The Proprietary no-
minated *Col. Andrew Hamilton* to be Deputy Gover-
nour, and return'd to England in the Year 1700. *Col. And.*
Hamilton,
Deputy
Governour

We have spoken of this Gentleman in the Article
of the *Jerseys*: 'Tis certain his Government gave
Discontent to several Leading Men in *Pennsylvania*,
all Parties there were in a Ferment, and
Matters ran so high, that we have been in-
form'd they came to Executions; but not ha-
ving been able to learn the Particulars, we shall be
silent.

silent: Whether this Man, by favouring the Orthodox, and those that sided with them, provok'd the others, who were the Majority, we cannot decide; but he seems to have discharg'd his Trust unhappily and not to have been very much lamented when he dy'd, which happen'd in the Year 1704.

By these Distractions, all Mr. Pen's first and first Constitution was destroy'd; and this Province, like others, became govern'd by a Governour, Council and Assembly, each having much the same Powers and Privileges with the Governours, Councils, and Assemblies of the other Colonies.

Col. John
Evans, De-
puty Go-
vernour.

On the Death of Col. Hamilton, Mr. Pen sent over Col. John Evans to be Deputy Governour, and he was approv'd by the Queen; for the Lords Proprietaries, all over America, are by a late Act of Parliament oblig'd to have the Royal Approbation for all the Governours they send to America.

We shall not enter into any Enquiries into the Causes of the Trouble that has been given Mr. Pen lately about his Province of *Pennsylvania*; it appears to us by what we have heard of it from others, for from himself we had never any Information concerning it, that he has been involv'd in it by his Bounty to the *Indians*, his Generosity in minding the publick Affairs of the Colony more than his own private ones, his Humanity to those that have not made suitable Returns, his Confidence in those that have betray'd him, and the Rigor of the severest Equity; a Word that borders the nearest to Injustice of any. 'Tis certainly the Duty of this Colony to maintain the Proprietary, who has laid 'out his All for the Maintenance of them, in the Possession of his Territory; and the Publick in Gratitude ought to make good what they reap the Benefit of. This is all said out of Justice to the Merit of this Gentleman, without his Knowledge, otherwise 'twould have been without his Consent.

In the Geographical Description of this Province we have made some Omissions, which from better Information we shall now correct.

The Province properly call'd *Pennsylvania* consists only of the three Upper Counties, *Buckingham*, *Philadelphia*, and *Chester*, for no more are within the

Gran

Grant made by King *Charles* to Mr. *Pen*; and the Length of that Country is about 150 or 200 Miles, as we have said already; but then there are the *Three Lower Counties*, *Newcastle*, *Kent*, and *Sussex*; which Mr. *Pen* enjoys by a Grant from the Duke of *York*, for they were within his Patent of *New-York*, *the Jerseys*, &c. But being granted to the Proprietary of the Upper Counties, he includes them within the same Government. Nevertheless he has a Right to make them a separate Government if he pleases, holding them by a separate Charter.

The three upper Counties, or *Pennsylvania*, properly so call'd, end at *Marcus Hook*, 4 Miles below *Ches-ter*. The Three Lower Counties run about 120 Miles along the Coast, and are about 30 Miles deep towards *Maryland*.

The Marshes on the Bay of *Delaware* are as commodious and fertile as any in the World, notwithstanding this Distinction of Upper and Lower, since all six Counties are under one Government, have the same Lord Proprietary, and the same Governors, for from their first Settlement, they are commonly call'd by the same Name, and are known to the World by the general Appellation of *Pennsylvania*. We shall treat of them in Order, in this Addition to our other Observations, as they stand from West to East, beginning with the *Falls Township*.

The whole Country within Mr. *Pen*'s Grants, from the *Falls Township*, and higher, to 20 Miles below *Cape Hinlopen*, or *Cape William*, is in Length about 330 Miles, and in Breadth 200. The first County we come to, travelling from the Falls to the Mouth of the *Delaware*, is,

Buckingham-County, where the first Town is call'd, *the Falls Township*, and consists of 20 or 30 Houses. Next to it is,

Bristoll, the Capital of the County, consisting of about 50 Houses, lying over against *Burlington*, in *West New-Jersey*. 'Tis famous for the Mills there of several sorts, built by Mr. *Samuel Carpenter*, an eminent Planter in the Country, formerly a *Barbadoes* Merchant. It lies about 20 Miles from *Philadel-*

Pennsberry is a Mannor belonging to *William Penn* Esq; the Lord Proprietary, who has built a very fine Seat there, both in its own Nature and Situation, as well as in its Improvement. The *Ld. Cornbury*, when he was Governour of *New-York*, (he being remov'd from that Government since our writing the History of that Province, and the Right Honourable the *Ld. Lovelace* put in his Place) visited this Mannor, and was extremely pleas'd with the House, Orchards and Gardens. 'Tis seated in a treble Island, the *Delaware* running three times about it. The House is built with Brick, and stands high and dry, having 16 Acres of very good Orchards, producing better *Pare-mains* and Golden-Pippins than any in *England*, by the Confession of good Judges here; for *Mr. Penn* brought some of them with him to *England*. There are 10 or 12 Townships more in this County which sends 6 Members to the Assembly; one of whom, *Joseph Growden*, Esq; is at this time their Speaker. He has been very instrumental in planting and settling this County; for which, and many other things, it is very much indebted to his Care and Services. Next to it is,

Philadelphia County, where the first Town we come to, is *Frankford*, already mention'd. 'Tis as big as *Bristol*, and well built. As to the City of,

Philadelphia, we have in the former Part of this Chapter or Head, discours'd of it at large; to which we have only to add, that the Streets there are very broad, and their Names denote the several sorts of Timber that are common in *Pennsylvania*: As *Mulberry-street*, *Sassafras-street*, *Chestnut-street*, *Walnut-street*, *Beach-street*, *Ash-street*, *Vine-street*, *Cedar-street*. There are others; as, *King-street*, *Broad-street*, *High-street*, &c.

The Court-House is built of Brick, and under it is a Prison. There are several Houses on the Keys, worth each 4 or 5000 Pounds, and 15 Ships have been on the Stocks at a time. 'Tis suppos'd 100 Ships have been built in this City. The Cellars or Warehouses upon the Keys are made into the River with great Industry, and some of them are 3 Stories high. This City is now in a flourishing State. Here are two Fairs a Year, and two Markets a Week. The Buildings

Buildings em
and Membe
has been else

Abington

in this Cou

Philadelphia,

German T

Dutch. Th

Trees are p

in the time

Mile togethe

being wond

County, and

is the

Welsh-Tr

land, plant

them. This

before-menti

others. 'Tis

industrious;

clear'd than

abitants hav

areed Abund

are look'd up

any in the Pr

the *Welsh*, th

fault if they

they seldom

success.

Mountjoy,

to a Daughte

this Mannor

was found in

The Coun

excellent Gra

on all the *As*

to the Assembl

Chester-Cou

first settl'd he

England.

small, and c

There are ot

Buildings encrease Yearly, and it has the Honour to send Members to the Assembly, which meets here, as has been elsewhere observ'd.

Abington and *Dublin* are two pretty little Towns in this County; but the most considerable next to *Philadelphia*, is,

German Town, a Corporation of High and Low Dutch. There are above 200 Houses in it. Peach-Trees are planted all along before the Doors, which in the time of Bloom make a beautiful Road for a Mile together. The Town is very pleasant and airy, being wonderfully clear'd from Trees. In this County, and on the other side of the River *Schoolkill* is the

Welsh-Tract, consisting of about 40000 Acres of Land, planted by *Welshmen*, or at least laid out to them. This Tract is thick of Townships; as *Radnor* before-mention'd, *Haverford West*, *Merioneth*, and others. 'Tis very populous, and the People are very industrious; by which means this Country is better clear'd than any other part of the County. The Inhabitants have many fine Plantations of Corn, and breed Abundance of Cattle, insomuch that they are look'd upon to be as thriving and wealthy as any in the Province: And this must always be said of the *Welsh*, that where-ever they come, 'tis not their fault if they do not live, and live well too; for they seldom spare for Labour, which seldom fails of success.

Mountjoy, in this County, is a Mannor belonging to a Daughter of Mr. *Pen*, the Proprietary, and in this Mannor the first Lime-stone was dug that ever was found in *America*.

The County of *Philadelphia* is remarkable for its excellent Gravel, which is very rare to be met with in all the *American* Continent. It sends 6 Members to the Assembly. The next County to it is,

Chester-County, so call'd, because the People who first settl'd here, came for the most part from *Cheeshire* in *England*. The first Town in it is *Newton*: 'Tis small, and consists not of above 20 or 30 Houses. There are others a great deal bigger, as,

The History of Pennsylvania.

Chester, the Capital of the County, consisting of above 100 Houses. Here's a very good Road for Shipping; the whole Navy Royal might ride here; the *Delaware*, on which it stands, being in this Place three Miles over. Here is a Court-House and a Prison, but neither of them commendable for the Fineness of the Structure. Here's also a Church, as has been already observ'd. Next to it is,

Chichester, built on a navigable Creek, so call'd. It consists of about 100 Houses. *Concord* is another Town in this County, where are several other Townships, and the Country is well planted. Four Miles below *Chester* is *Marcus Hook*, the Boundary of the Three Upper Counties, properly call'd *Pennsylvania*, because so term'd in Mr. *Pen's* first Grant. But the Three Lower Counties go also by that Name. The County of *Chester* sends 6 Members to the Assembly. The next to it is,

Newcastle County, in which is a Hill, call'd *Iron Hill*, from the Iron Ore found there. The Mill before-mention'd is a Mistake, there being none erected for that Use, as we can understand upon later Enquiries. The Capital of this County,

Newcastle, is finely seated and built upon the *Delaware*; it stands high. The *Dutch* were the first Planters in this Neighbourhood, and the first Inhabitants of this Town, which they call'd *Amstel*; from *Amstel*, the River that gives Name to *Amsterdam*, or *Amsterdam*, the Capital City of the *United Provinces*. Here is a Court-House, and 2500 Souls are computed to inhabit here.

Philpot Creek is so large, that the Royal Fleet of *England* might ride there. *St. George's* is a pretty Village, 10 Miles below *Newcastle*. There's another Township, call'd *Apauquany*. The Country within 12 Miles about the Capital of this County, North and West, is the proper Signiory of *Newcastle*. There are 6 Members chosen in this County for the Assembly. The next is,

Kent County, very fruitful, but not so well planted as the others. *Dover* is its Capital. 'Twas formerly call'd *St. Johns*. 'Tis thin of Houses, and

does not c
lies. This
Townships
ains man
6 Members
Suffex Co
own Seat
is,

Lewes, a
lovely Bank
Sea, which
Below t
Bay, is Cap
Miles belo
Bounds of
this Cape
First; in w
not well dis

The Line
Maryland i
was at Cape

Suffex is n
habited by
thought be
Members to

Thus we
count, as w
Pennsylvania,
own Word
tain, no Co
on in so li
and Number
Quarterly
Year.

There's a
or County,
administred
Miles upon
far as they
Miles.

Mr. *Pen*
as his parti
list of Peopl
but the Op

consisting
good Road
might ride
nds, being
is a Court-
hem com-
e. Here's
w'd. Next

does not consist even now of above 30 or 40 Families. This County is settl'd like *Virginia*, not in Townships, but in scatter'd Plantations. It contains many Tracts of excellent Land, and sends 6 Members to the Assembly. Next to it is,

Sussex County, which Mr. Pen so call'd, from his own Seat in that County in *England*. The Capital is,

Lewes, a handsome, large Town, standing on the lovely Bank of a River, between the Town and the Sea, which makes the Harbour.

x, so call'd
is another
ther Town-
Four Miles
dary of the
Pennsylvania.
t. But the
ame. The
e Assembly.

Below this Place, at the Mouth of *Delaware Bay*, is *Cape Hinlopen*, or *Cape William*; and 20 Miles below that *Cape James*, the farthestmost Bounds of the Province of *Pennsylvania*. 'Tis said; this Cape takes its Name from King *James* the First; in whose time it was known, but the Country not well discover'd.

Hill, call'd
and there,
, there be-
can under-
tal of this

The Line of Partition between *Pennsylvania* and *Maryland* is imaginary. The Whalery we spoke of was at *Cape William*.

Sussex is not full of Townships, but like *Kent*, is inhabited by Planters, scatter'd up and down, as they thought best for their Convenience. It sends six Members to the Assembly.

n the *Dela-*
re the first
first Inhabi-
ntel; from
Amsterdam, or
d Province,
e computed

Thus we have given the Reader as full an Account, as we could get by the best Information of *Pennsylvania*, which was, to use the Proprietary's own Words, made at once a Country: For 'tis certain, no Colony in *America* came to such Perfection in so little time, both in Trade, Settlements, and Numbers. Every one of the six Counties has a Quarterly and Monthly Sessions and Affizes twice a Year.

oyal Fleet of
is a pretty
here's ano-
ne Country
his County
ry of *New*
this County

There's a Sheriff, or Sheriffs, for each Shire or County, and Justice is frequently and regularly administred. The six Counties run along 20 or 30 Miles upon the Rivers and Bays, and backwards, as far as they are planted; in some Places above 20 Miles.

well plan-
'Twas for
houses, and
does

Mr. Pen reserves five Mannors in each County, as his particular Propriety. The Inhabitants consist of People of almost all Nations and Religions; but the Opinion of the Quakers prevails so far, that they

they are by much the Majority, as the *English* are of all the other Nations. And the *English, Dutch, Swedes, French, Indians, and Negroes* in the Province of *Pennsylvania*, may modestly be computed at 35000 Souls.

Tho we have already made some mention of the Climate and Soil, yet having something to add by further Enquiry, we shall do it in this Place.

The Summers here are not much hotter than in *England*, at least not for above one Week; when the Heat is sensibly more violent. The Earth abounds in Mines, *Samplers* of most sorts of Ore having been taken up in every County, and no Country in the World is better stor'd with Rivers and Creeks, most of them navigable for Ships of Burthen, and all of them for *small Craft*.

Tho not above a thirtieth Part of this Province is inhabited or planted, yet 'tis clear'd every where more than the other Parts of *America* in Possession of the *English*.

We shall conclude what we have to say on this Head, with a short, but clear Account of it, abstracted from a Letter the Proprietary, *William Penn, Esq;* did the Historian the Honour to write him.

‘ We consume about 18000 *l.* yearly of *English* Growth, and return of our Productions directly, and by way of the Islands, what augments the Revenue of the Crown 30000 Pound. The High-lands of *Virginia* and *Maryland* are very profitable ones, having moderate Hills, and large Vales, full of Springs and little Rivers, emptying themselves into the two great Rivers, *Sasquehanagh* and *Delaware*; where Ships of the largest Burthen may ride. Its Length is about 300 Miles; its Breadth 200. All Provisions are reasonable, but Labour dear, which makes it a good poor Man's Country; Husbandmen and Mechanicks getting 15 and 20 *l.* Wages *per Annum* for their Work, besides Diet; such as Carpenters, Smiths, Joiners, Taylors, Shoe-makers, Cart-wrights, and Husbandmen, &c.

By which
tion for P
tunes, to
that 'tis no
the start o
Continent

We sha
Pennsylvania
Colony.

The Pr

The Lie

Edward S.
Sam. Carp
William T
Thomas S
Richard
William
Kaleb Pen
James Lo

Speaker

Master o

William
Edward
Joseph G
William

Judge of
Treasure
Secretary
Esq;
Attorney
Register

By which the Reader may see, that the Temptation for People to go thither, to mend their Fortunes, to live pleasantly and plentifully, is so great, that 'tis not to be doubted but this Province will get the start of all the other *English* Settlements on the Continent of *America*.

We shall conclude this History and Account of *Pennsylvania*, with a List of the chief Officers of this Colony.

The Proprietary of *Pennsylvania*, William Penn, Esquire.

The Lieutenant-Governour, Col. John Evans.

Edward Shippen, Esq;
Sam. Carpenter, Esq;
William Trent, Esq;
Thomas Story, Esq;
Richard Hill, Esq;
William Rodney, Esq;
Kaleb Peusy, Esq;
James Logan, Esq;

Members of the
Council.

Speaker of the Assembly, Joseph Growden, Esq;

Master of the Rolls, Thomas Story, Esq;

William Clark, Esq;
Edward Shippen, Esq;
Joseph Growden, Esq;
William Guest, Esq;

Judges.

Judge of the Admiralty, Col. Robert Quarry.

Treasurer, Samuel Carpenter, Esq;

Secretary to the Government, James Logan, Esq;

Attorney General, R. Lowther, Esq;

Register, Peter Evans, Esq;

* Surveyor General lately, Mr. *Edward Pennington*.

Clerk of the Peace for the
Town and County of } *Robert Ashton, Esq;*
Philadelphia.

* *This Office is now manag'd by the Under-Surveyors, accountable to the Secretary.*

H I

M

Containing
Settlements

THE
V
C
v

THE

made some
and by wh
George Lore
made out, h
in the King
Name, and
We cannot
try, than b
'Tis all tha
on the East,

THE
HISTORY
OF
MARYLAND.

CHAP. I.

*Containing an Account of its Discovery,
Settlement, Progress, and present State.*

THIS Province was always reckon'd a Part of *Virginia*, till the Year 1631. when King *Charles* made a Grant of it to *George Calvert*, Lord *Baltimore*, of which we have made some mention in the History of *Virginia*; when and by whom 'twas discover'd, will there be seen. *George* Lord *Baltimore* not living to see his Grant made out, his Son *Cacilius Calvert*, Baron of *Baltimore* in the Kingdom of *Ireland*, took it out in his own Name, and it bears Date the 20th of *June*, 1632. We cannot better ascertain the Bounds of this Country, than by making use of the Words of the Patent. *'Tis all that Part of a Peninsula, lying between the Ocean on the East, and the Bay of Chesapeake on the West,*

The History of Maryland.

and divided from the other Part by a Right Line drawn from the Cape call'd Watkins Point, (situate in the aforesaid Bay near the River of Wighco) on the West, unto the main Ocean on the East, and between that Bound on the South, unto that part of Delaware Bay on the North, which lies under the 40th Degree of Northern Latitude, &c. And all that Tract of Land from the aforesaid Bay of Delaware, in a right Line by the Degree aforesaid, to the true Meridian of the first Fountain of the River Patowmeek, and from thence tending towards the South, to the farther Bank of the aforesaid River, and following the West and South Side of it to a certain Place call'd Cinquack, situate near the Mouth of the said River, where it falls into the Bay of Cheseapeak, and from thence by a streight Line to the aforesaid Cape call'd Watkins Point, &c.

The King himself, when he sign'd the Pattent, was pleas'd to give this Province the Name of *Maryland*, in Honour of his belov'd Wife *Henrietta Maria*, Daughter of *Henry the IVth of France*. The Lord *Baltimore* held it of the Crown of *England*, in common Socage, as of his Majesty's Honour of *Windsor*, holding and paying yearly for ever two *Indian Arrows* of those Parts at the Castle of *Windsor*. The Power of this Proprietary is as Sovereign as that of any in *Ameriea*.

Maryland lies between 37 and 40 Degrees North Latitude, is bounded on the North by *Pensylvania*, East by *Delaware Bay* and the *Atlantick Ocean*, South by *Virginia*, from whence 'tis divided by the River *Patowmeek*, and West by the *Indian Nations*.

The Lord *Baltimore* having obtain'd this Grant, resolv'd to go thither in Person; but afterwards changing his Mind, he appointed his Brother *Leonard Calvert*, Esq; to go Governour in his stead, with whom he join'd in Commission *Jeremy Hawley*, Esq; and *Thomas Cornwallis*, Esq; The first Colony that was sent to *Maryland*, was in the Year 1633, and consisted of about 200 People. The Chief of these Adventurers were Gentlemen of good Families, and *Roman Catholicks*; for Persons of that Religion being made uneasy in *England*, as well as Protestant Dissenters, they transported themselves to this Province,

hoping

The

hoping to en-
ces, under a
the Lord Ba
from Cowes in
and having
sometime, ar
eath of Febru
cipal Persons

Leo
Jere
Tho
Geo
Rich
Ed
Fre
Hen
Mr
Mr
Mr
Mr
Mr
Mr
Ca
Mr
Mr

They car-
jesty to the
in his Provi
March they
River, whi
vernour ca-
ries, and th
Patowmeek
and anchor
gave the N
in his sup
Possession
our Sovere
4 Leagues
to make D
found the
sail'd 9 L

hoping to enjoy there the Liberty of their Conscien-
ces, under a Proprietary of their own Profession, as
the Lord Baltimore was. These Adventurers sail'd
from *Cowes* in the *Isle of Wight* the 22d of *November*,
and having stop'd at *Barbadoes* and *St. Christophers*
sometime, arriv'd at *Point Comfort* in *Virginia*, the
24th of *February* following. The Names of the prin-
cipal Persons among them were as follows :

Leonard Calvert, Esq; Governour.
Jeremy Hawley, } Esqs; Assistants.
Thomas Cornwallis, }
Geo. Calvert, Esq; Brother to the Governour.
Richard Gerard, Esq;
Edward Winter, Esq;
Frederick Winter, Esq;
Henry Wiseman, Esq;
Mr. John Saunders.
Mr. Edward Cranfield.
Mr. Henry Green.
Mr. Nicholas Fairfax.
Mr. John Baxter,
Mr. Thomas Dorrel.
Capt. John Hill.
Mr. John Medcalf, and
Mr. William Saire.

They carry'd Letters in their Favour from his Ma-
jesty to the Governour of *Virginia*, who treated them
in his Province with great Humanity. On the 3d of
March they left *Point Comfort*, and came to *Patowmeck*
River, which is about 24 Leagues distant. The Go-
vernour call'd the South Point of the River *St. Grego-
ries*, and the North Point *St. Michaels*. Sailing up
Patowmeck 14 Leagues, they came to *Heron Island*,
and anchor'd under a neighbouring *Isle*, to which they
gave the Name of *St. Clements*. Here *Mr. Calvert*,
in his superstitious way, set up a Cross, and took
Possession of the Country for our Saviour, and for
our Sovereign Lord the King of England. He went
4 Leagues higher up the River, with two Pinnaces,
to make Discoveries; and landing on the South Side,
found the *Indians* were fled for Fear. Thence he
sail'd 9 Leagues higher, and came to *Patowmeck*
Town,

Town, where the Werowance being a Child, *Archiebau* his Uncle govern'd his Territories in his Minority, and receiv'd the *English* in a friendly manner. From *Patowmeck* the Governour went to *Piscataway*, about 20 Leagues higher, where he found many *Indians* assembled, and among them an *Englishman*, Captain *Henry Fleet*, who had liv'd there several Years in great Esteem with the Natives. Capt. *Fleet* brought the Werowance or Prince aboard the Governour's Pinnace, to treat with him. Mr. *Calvert* ask'd him, Whether he was willing he and his People should settle in his Country, in case they found a Place convenient for them. The Werowance reply'd, *I will not bid you go, neither will I bid you stay, but you may use your own Discretion.* The *Indians* finding the Werowance stay'd aboard longer than they expected, crowded down to the Water-side, to look after him, fearing the *English* had kill'd him, and they were not satisfy'd till he shew'd himself to them to appease them. The Natives who fled from *St. Clements Isle*, when they saw the *English* came as Friends, return'd to their Habitations; and the Governour not thinking it adviseable to settle so high up the River, in the Infancy of the Colony, sent his Pinnaces down the River, and went with Capt. *Fleet* to a River on the North Side of *Patowmeck*, within 4 or 5 Leagues of its Mouth, which he call'd *St. George's River*. He went up 4 Leagues in his Long-Boat, and came to the Town of *Toamaco*; from whence the *Indians* of that Neighbourhood are call'd *Toamacoers*. The Governour landed, and treated with the Werowance there, acquainting him with the Occasion of his Coming; to which the *Indian* said little, but inviting him to his House, entertain'd him very kindly, and gave him his own Bed to lie on. The next Day he shew'd him the Country; and the Governour determining to make the first Settlement there, order'd his Ship and Pinnaces to come thither to him. To make his Entry the more safe and peaceable, he presented the Werowance and Wifes, or principal Men of the Town, with some *English* Cloth, Axes, Houghs, and Knives, which they accepted very kindly, and freely consented that he and his Company should dwell in one Part of their Town, reserving the other for themselves. Those

T
Indians, who i
the *English*, re
and Mr. *Calve*
ant Corn. T
whole Town t
sin, which
and *English* pr
injury was dor
as to make S
634. the Gov
and nam'd it
There happ
ated this Trea
Warlike Peo
and *Delaware*
their Neighb
for Booty, of
them. The
had a Year bet
their Habitati
ry; many
rest preparing
ances arrivin
and terrify'd
they heard th
to an Anchor
The first t
of Guard, an
been there m
ernour of V
several *Indian*
from several
came the Kin
the Ship ther
etween the G
of *Maryland*,
others. A
ing his King
was surpriz'd
could not be
Werowance
no Danger.
Prisoner by
house was fu

Indians, who inhabited that Part which was assign'd to the *English*, readily abandon'd their Houses to them, and Mr. Calvert immediately set Hands to work to plant Corn. The Natives agreed further to leave the whole Town to the *English* as soon as their Harvest was in, which they did accordingly, and both *Indians* and *English* promis'd to live friendly together. If any Injury was done on either part, the Nation offending was to make Satisfaction. Thus on the 27th of March, 1634, the Governour took Possession of the Town, and nam'd it *St. Maries*.

There happen'd an Event, which very much facilitated this Treaty with the *Indians*. The *Sasquehanocks*, a Warlike People, dwelling between *Chesapeake Bay* and *Delaware Bay*, were wont to make Incurfions on their Neighbours, partly for Dominion, and partly for Booty, of which the Women were most desir'd by them. The *Toamaco*s fearing these *Sasquehanocks*, had a Year before the *English* arriv'd resolv'd to desert their Habitations, and remove higher into the Country; many of them were actually gone, and the rest preparing to follow them. The Ship and Pinnares arriving at the Town, the *Indians* were amaz'd and terrify'd at the Sight of them, especially when they heard their Cannon thunder, when they came to an Anchor.

The first thing Mr. Calvert did was to fix a Court of Guard, and erect a Store-house; and he had not been there many Days, before Sir John Harvey, Governour of *Virginia*, came thither to visit him, as did several *Indian* Werowances, and many other *Indians* from several parts of the Continent: Among others came the King of *Patuxent*, and being carry'd aboard the Ship then at Anchor in the River, was plac'd between the Governour of *Virginia* and the Governour of *Maryland*, at an Entertainment made for him and others. A *Patuxent Indian* coming aboard, and seeing his King thus seated, started back, thinking he was surpriz'd; he would have leap'd over-board, and could not be perswaded to enter the Cabbin, till the Werowance himself came and satisty'd him he was in no Danger. This King had formerly been taken Prisoner by the *English* of *Virginia*. After the Store-house was finish'd, and the Ship unladen, Mr. Calvert

or-

order'd the Colours to be brought ashore, which was done with great Solemnity, the Gentlemen and the Servants attending in Arms; several Volleys of Shot were fir'd a Ship-board and a-shore, as also the Cannon, at which the Natives were struck with Admiration, such at least as had not heard the firing of Pieces of Ordnance before, to whom it could not but be dreadful.

The Kings of *Patuxent* and *Toamaco* were present at this Ceremony, with many other *Indians* of *Toamaco* and the *Werowance* of *Patuxent* took that Occasion to advise the *Indians* of *Toamaco* to be careful to keep the League they had made with the *English*. He stay'd in the Town several Days, and was full of his *Indian* Complements: When he went away he made this Speech to the Governour; *I love the English so well that if they should go about to kill me, if I had so much Breath as to speak, I would command the People not to revenge my Death; for I know they would not do such a thing, except it were through my own Fault.*

This Infant Colony supply'd themselves with *Indian* Corn at *Barbadoes*, which at their first Arrival they began to use, (to save their *English* Store of Meal and Oat-meal.) The *Indian* Women perceiving their Servants did not know how to dress it, made their Bread for them, and taught 'em to do it themselves. There was *Indian* Corn enough in the Country, and these new Adventurers soon after ship'd off 10000 Bushels for *New England*, to purchase Salt Fish and other Provisions. While the *Indians* and *English* liv'd at *St. Maries* together, the Natives went every Day to hunt with the new Comers for Deer and Turkies, which when they had caught, they gave to the *English*, or sold for Knives, Beads, and such Trifles. They also brought them good Store of Fish, and behav'd themselves very kindly, suffering their Women and Children to come among them, which was a certain Sign of their Confidence in them. 'Twas a great Advantage to the first Colony in *Maryland*, that they took Possession of a Town, about which the Ground was ready clear'd to their Hands, which gave them an Opportunity to plant Corn, and make Gardens, where they sow'd *English* Seeds, and they thriv'd wonderfully. They were very industrious to build Houses,

houses, for the
old accomplish
apt. *Cleybourn*
in view to
himself) th
which gave the
ers who came
ded to be, *E*
the *Virginia*
to see he impo
and out by t
those in *V*
oms, as thei
their Stupidity
nated for *Tr*
Maries. The
their Carriage
ave over bui
towards erect
Weeks time,
that they ren
and in a Year
Mary's Town
far hinder'd
more even at
The new C
Poultry, and
Country was
Convenience
rishing; for
and chiefly P
hinted. Th
tirely of the
Governour
Those that
stemper son
a *Seasoning*,
for want of
ill Conduct
open'd, by
there is bet
with the *Ind*
in applying
Seasonings:
or elsewher

which were not but to be present of Yoamaco at Occasion useful to keep. He stay'd of his Indians made this English so well had so much people not to do such with Indian arrival they of Meal and their Ser their Bread es. There these new Bushels for her Provi St. Maries hunt with which when b, or sold They also v'd them- and Chil- rtain Sign at Advan- they took ound was them an Gardens, y thriv'd to build Houses,

for they found only Huts ; but before they could accomplish those things to their Satisfaction, Capt. Cleybourne, one of the Council of Virginia, (who was in view to engross all the Trade of those Parts himself) threw out Words among the Indians, which gave them Cause to suspect that the Adventurers who came to Maryland were not what they pretended to be, Englishmen, but Spaniards, and Enemies to the Virginians. The Natives were so simple as not to see he impos'd on them, as they might have soon found out by the Likeness of the English in Maryland to those in Virginia, as well in their Garb and Customs, as their Language and Trade; yet such was their Stupidity, that they took what Cleybourne insinuated for Truth, and grew shy to the English at St. Maries. The latter alarm'd at this Alteration in their Carriage, thought of being on their Guard, and gave over building Houses to let all Hands to work towards erecting a Fort, which was finish'd in 6 Weeks time, and mounted with Ordnance. After that they renew'd their Labour about their Houses, and in a Year or two's time there were 30 or 60 at St. Mary's Town : But, the Humour of Plantations has so far hinder'd its Progress, that there are not many more even at this Day.

The new Comers furnish'd themselves with Hogs, Poultry, and some Cows, from Virginia, and the Country was settled with so much Ease, and so many Conveniences, that it soon became populous and flourishing ; for several future Companies went thither, and chiefly Persons of the Romish Church, as has been hinted. The Country of Yoamaco being clear'd entirely of the Natives, the English planted it, and the Governour gave the River the Name of St. George's. Those that settled here first were taken with a Distemper somewhat like an Ague, which they call'd a Seasoning, of which for some Years many dy'd, for want of good looking to, and through their own ill Conduct ; but since the Country has been more open'd, by the cutting down of the Woods, and that there is better Accommodation of Diet and Lodging, with the Improvement of the Inhabitants Knowledge in applying physical Remedies, very few die of these Seasonings ; and some that come over from England, or elsewhere, never have them at all. The

The Government of this Colony, when it began to grow more numerous, was fram'd much after the Model of that in *England*. The Governour had a Council in the Nature of the House of Lords, and a Privy-Council in *England*; and when the Country was divided into Counties, each had Representatives in the Assembly of the Province, and these Representatives form'd the Lower House; the Upper House consisting of the Governour and Council, and such Lords of Mannors, and others, as the Lord Proprietary, or his Lieutenant, from time to time shall call thither by Writ. This Assembly the Proprietary or his Deputy, conven'd, prorogu'd, or dissolv'd at Pleasure; and their Acts being ratify'd by the Proprietary, or his Deputy, were of the same Force there, as an Act of Parliament is in *England*, and cannot pass, or be repeal'd, without the concurring Assent of the Lord Proprietary, or his Deputy, with the other two Estates.

Next to this Legislative Court was erected the Provincial Court, which is holden every Quarter in the City of *St. Mary's*. This is the chief Court of Judicature, where the most important judicial Causes are try'd; of which, in the Absence of the Lord Proprietary, the Lieutenant, or Governour and Council, are Judges. This Court is for the whole Province; but for each particular County there are other inferior Courts, which are held six times in the Year, in each of these Counties, for Trial of Causes not relating to Life, nor exceeding the Value of 3000 Weights of Tobacco, with Appeals from them to the Provincial Court.

Having mention'd the Counties in this Province, we must observe, that as the Number of the Inhabitants encreas'd, Mr. *Calvert*, the Governour, thought fit to divide the Country into Shires; of which there were at first but 10, as 5 on the West-side of the Bay of *Chesapeake*, and 5 on the East-side. Those on the West side were *St. Mary's*, *Charles*, *Calvert*, *Ann Arundel*, and *Baltimore*; to which has lately been added *Prince George County*, which makes the whole 11 in all. Those on the East side were, and still are, *Somerset*, *Dorchester*, *Talbot*, *Cecil*, and *Kent* Counties. There were Towns laid out in each

them, but the same Reason which the Re- The Govern himself and S will the Distr Name of a Pa bly the P would leave Catholick. T of this Provin — EG upon the Ki cover'd the R about the Year 1683. one A Piscataway (more Author er Werowan ly confirm'd, Baltimore, a The Lord this Province for his Partia great measu it, he behav deration, wh that the Inha They flourish es. He pro Conscience tho of differ nstant Diss to settle the of

of them, but they never came to Perfection; and for the same Reason that there are no Towns in *Virginia*, which the Reader will find in the following Pages.

The Governour built a House in *St. Mary's* for himself and Successors, and govern'd the Country till the Distractions happen'd in *England*, when the Name of a Papist became so obnoxious, that 'twas not likely the Puritans, who were then uppermost, would leave any Power in the Hands of a Roman Catholic. The Parliament assum'd the Government of this Province into their own Hands, and appointed

Esq; to be their Governour here; but upon the King's Restoration the Lord *Baltimore* recover'd the Right of his absolute Propriety; and about the Year 1662. sent over his Son *Charles Calvert*, Esq; the present Lord *Baltimore*, to be his Governour; and Mr. *Calvert* liv'd there almost twenty Years, a long time after his Father dy'd, and his Title and Estate fell to him. By his Wisdom and Presence this Colony flourish'd apace, and there were computed to be 16000 Souls in *Maryland*, so long ago as the Year 1665.

All the Indian Nations about this Province submitted to the Lord Proprietary of *Maryland*, and put themselves under his Protection: So that in the Year 1663. one *Naacosso*, who was chosen Emperor of *Piscataway* (that is, he was advanc'd to an Office of more Authority than the rest of the Indian Kings or Werowances) was not thought to be absolutely confirm'd, till Mr. *Charles Calvert*, now Lord *Baltimore*, approv'd of their Choice.

The Lord *Baltimore* was at a vast Expence to bring this Province to its present Perfection; and allowing for his Partiality to the Roman Catholics, which in a great measure helpt to lose him the Government of it, he behav'd himself with so much Justice and Moderation, while he kept the Power in his own Hands, that the Inhabitants liv'd easily and happily under him. They flourish'd, and encreas'd in Number and Riches. He procur'd an Act of Assembly, for Liberty of Conscience to all Persons who profess Christianity, tho of different Perswasions. By which means Protestant Dissenters, as well as Papists, were tempted to settle there; and that Liberty having never been

in.

infring'd in any manner, is a severe Reflection on the pretended Protestants in other Colonies, where Dissenters have been oppress'd; while here, under Popish Proprietary, they enjoy'd all the Rights, Liberties and Privileges of *Englishmen*, as far as the Laws permitted them.

But notwithstanding all his Lordship's Care to prevent any Rupture with the Indians, when they were at War with the *Virginians*, they committed some Hostilities in the Year 1677. on the East-side, and kill'd 4 Men and a Woman near *Nomani*, which put the Colony in Fears of further Mischiefs; however that Cloud blew over, those that did the Mischiefs were punish'd, and no more Blood was shed in the Quarrel. While the Lord *Baltimore* liv'd here, he marry'd one of his Daughters to Col. *Diggs*, a Gentleman of the Country, of great Interest in it, and a considerable Merchant or Factor also. But when the Lord Proprietary remov'd to *England*, he did not appoint him to be Deputy, but put in another Gentleman, whose Name we have not been able to learn, nor that of his Successor: In whose Time the Government of *England* took from the Lord *Baltimore* that of *Maryland*. And we must observe, King *James II.* intended to take it from him before the Revolution, instigated to it by Father *Peters*. What Reason that Jesuit had to do the Lord *Baltimore* such a Disservice, we know not, and would have thought the Agreement between Father *Peters* and this Lord in Religion, might have influenc'd the Priest more in his Favour. But 'tis very certain, that he was the first Instrument of the Lord Proprietary's losing the Government, and perhaps the Court might think, that as much as the Papists were favour'd in *Maryland*, they might hope for more Favour from a Proprietary of their own persecuting Principles. The Lord *Baltimore* might have expected more than Justice from a King of his own Religion; yet his Patent was then question'd, and 'tis suppos'd the Prerogative of naming a Governor would have been taken from him, if King *James* had not abdicated his own Government. After the Revolution, this Lord had no Reason to look for any thing but strict Justice; for 'twas known, he was not a little zealous in opposing it.

King

King *William*
sett'd on the
annexing the
in King *James*
continu'd; a
the Council-l
that part of
Edmund And
call'd an Ass
Act to reco
Title; and t
Courts of J
the Constitut
Act past, to
except wher
and Pleas. I
1691. should
in the Statute
We find S
lively as mig
Col. *Francis*
to succeed h
Act which
Suits, Cause
and all Offic
reason of any
pective Off
Edmund And
sholson, Esq;
or want of A
or his Comm
viso; *Provid*
Andros's tak
or debar the
or Claims to t
The Gove
with that of
ately under
the King or
and an Ass
The Lord P
Province, a
by several A
of Tobacco

King *William* the III^d. of glorious Memory, being settl'd on the Throne, the Steps that were taken for annexing the Government of *Maryland* to the Crown in King *James's* Reign, were with much more Reason continu'd; and after a long and expensive Dispute at the Council-Board, the Lord *Baltimore* was depriv'd of that part of his Power, and the King appointed Sir *Edmund Andros* to be Governour of *Maryland*, who call'd an Assembly, which in the Year 1692. pass'd an Act to recognize King *William* and Queen *Mary's* Title; and there having been great Confusion in the Courts of Judicature, by Reason of the Alteration in the Constitution of the Government in *Maryland*, an Act pass'd, to make all the Proceedings at Law valid, except where there were any Errors in any Process and Pleas. It provided also, that the Year 1690, and 1691. should not be accounted, concluded and meant in the Statute of Limitations.

We find Sir *Edmund Andros* did not act so inoffensively as might be wish'd in a Governour: For when Col. *Francis Nicholson*, whom King *William* appointed to succeed him, came to the Government, in the Act which pass'd to establish and ratify all Actions, Suits, Causes, and Proceedings in all Courts, &c. and all Officers Civil and Military, for, in, or by reason of any legal Acting or Proceeding in their respective Offices and Stations, from the Access of Sir *Edmund Andros*, to the then Governour, *Francis Nicholson*, Esq; his Arrival, any Clause, Imperfection, or want of Authority in the said Sir *Edmund Andros*, or his Commission notwithstanding, there is this Proviso; *Provided nothing in this Act shall justify Sir Edm. Andros's taking and disposing of the Publick Revenues, or debar the Assembly, or any other Person, of their Rights or Claims to the same.*

The Government of this Province is now the same with that of the other Colonies, which are immediately under the Crown; by a Governour made by the King or Queen, a Council nam'd by the same, and an Assembly chosen by the Eleven Counties. The Lord Proprietary still enjoys the Profits of the Province, arising by certain Revenues granted to him by several Assemblies; as a Duty on each Hogshead of Tobacco exported, and other Incomes; which

with the Sale of Lands uncultivated, and unpurchas'd, amount to a considerable Sum yearly ; and the Duty of Tobacco encreasing, as that Product encreases, 'tis probable that Revenue will one Day rise to a very great Sum. Besides this, the Lord *Baltimore* has a large Plantation at *Mettapany* ; and in the whole, his Estate and Interest in this Province are very well worth his Care to maintain them.

About the Year 1692. the Lord Bishop of *London* appointed Dr. *Thomas Bray* to be his Commissary in *Maryland*. That Doctor went over thither to settle the Churches, according to the Rites and Worship of the Church of *England*. For by an Act of Assembly in the same Year, the Eleven Counties were divided into thirty Parishes, sixteen of which are supply'd with Ministers, who have a competent Maintenance settl'd upon them, with Glebes, and other Advantages. Libraries are fix'd, and many thousand practical and devotional Books have been dispers'd among the People, by the assiduous Care of Dr. *Bray*, who staid there 2 or 3 Years.

Besides these Churches, are several Chappels, and the Number of Papists and Dissenters are not inconsiderable. Mr. *George Macqueen*, and Mr. *Robert Keith*, have been employ'd by the Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts, to advance that good Work here ; but 'tis said the *Quakers* and *Papists* equally obstruct it.

A very ingenious Man, who was in this Province in Col. *Nicholson's* Time, sends this Account of the State of it to the Royal Society : ' The Inhabitants of *Maryland* are govern'd by the same Laws as in *England*, except that they have some Acts of Assembly, relating to particular Cases, not provided for by the Laws of *England*. The Church of *England* is pretty well establish'd among them: Churches are built, and there's an Annual Stipend allow'd to every Minister, by a perpetual Law ; which is more or less according to the Number of Taxables in each Parish. Every Christian Male 16 Years old, and Negroes Male and Female above that Age, pay 40 Pound of Tobacco to the Minister ; which is levy'd by the Sheriff among other publick Revenues ; and this makes the Revenues of the Ministers, one with

another, about 20000 Pound of Tobacco, or 100 l. Sterling a Year. It has been the Unhappinefs of this Country, that they had no Protestant Ministers hardly among them till Governour *Nicholson's* time (who has been a great Promoter and Encourager of the Clergy) but now and then an itinerant Preacher come over, of very loose Morals, and scandalous Behaviour: So that what with such Mens ill Examples, the *Roman* Priests Cunning, and the Quakers Bigotry, Religion was in a manner turn'd out of Doors. But by Col. *Nicholson's* Protection, the Face of it mended, and the Orthodox Churches were crowded as full as they could hold. The People grew sensible of the *Romish* Superstition, and the Enthusiasm of the Quakers: Insomuch that their Parties, joining now both together, are very inconsiderable to that of the Church of *England*. Indeed the Quakers struggle hard to maintain their Footing; and their Teachers (especially of the Female Sex, who are the most zealous) are very free of their Reflections and Scandal against the Orthodox Divines and Professors. The People here have not yet found the way of associating themselves in Towns and Corporations, by reason of the Fewness of Handicrafts-Men. There are indeed several Places allotted for Towns, but hitherto they are only titular ones, except *Annapolis*; where the Governour resides. Col. *Nicholson* has done his Endeavour to make a Town of that Place. There are about 40 Dwelling Houses in it, 7 or 8 of which can afford a good Lodging and Accomodations for Strangers. There are also a State-House, and a free School, built with Brick, which make a great Shew among a Parcel of Wooden Houses; and the Foundation of a Church is laid, the only Brick Church in *Maryland*. They have two Market Days in a Week; and had Governour *Nicholson* continu'd there a few Years longer, he had brought it to Perfection.

Col. *Nicholson* mightily promoted the Advancement of Religion in this Province, as did his Successor Col. *Nathaniel Blackiston*, with whom the Country, tho healthy in its self, did not agree, and he was forc'd to return to *England* for the Recovery of his Health: In whose stead her Majesty was pleas'd to

make Col. *William Seymour* Governour of this Province; who in *Sept. 1703.* embark'd aboard the *Dreadnought* Man of War, which, with others, was appointed to convoy the *Virginia* and *Maryland* outward bound Fleet; but being separated from the rest by stress of Weather, the Governour put into *Barbadoes*, where he arriv'd the 2d of *February*. The Ship was forc'd off the Coasts of *Maryland* by contrary Winds, and did not arrive in the Bay till *April* or *May, 1704.* So that Col. *Seymour* was near 8 Months in his Voyage, which is commonly made in 6 Weeks. This Governour has given general Satisfaction to the Inhabitants, and is indeed a Man of Honour, worthy the Post her Majesty has been pleas'd to continue him in to this time.

It cannot be expected that we should be able to give as perfect an Account of every Colony, as we have done of *New-England, Virginia, Carolina, Barbadoes*, and some others. Our Helps have not been at all equal, tho' our Application has. Those Gentlemen to whom we apply'd, who could have given us full Information, and neglected it, are to answer for what is imperfect in this History of *Maryland*; which is however the largest that has been publish'd; and had we been better supply'd with Memoirs, we should have given a better Account of this Colony, which we confess deserv'd it. The Gentlemen concern'd in it will excuse us, when we tell them we have done our best, and in another Impression shall enlarge in our History of *Maryland*, if they will transmit us Materials, to enable us to do it. We kept this Account backward, in hopes of such Assistance; and perhaps these Gentlemen will be as angry with themselves as with us, when they see how industrious we have been in the Histories of those Countries, that we were fully inform'd about, and what a Figure they make in the *British* Empire in *America*, where *Maryland* is far from being the least considerable Portion of it. 'Tis true it does not encrease much in Towns, and those that are honour'd with the Name, would not pass for any thing but little Villages in other Countries. This, as has been hinted in *Virginia*, is the Humour of the Inhabitants, and all Endeavours to bring them to build and settle at *Annapolis*, or *William*.

Williamstad
are not big
big, and the
vie with the

The Lord
for the Prop
by the Nam
been include
Mr. Pen ha
will always
those Count
a Tobacco T
der the Pro
modity; th
make enoug
and their
their falling
England,
which Prov
Manufactur
their Natur
and Perfecti

Containing
the Pro
of the
Trade,
dian.

THO' we
nia, an
out the Bou
in the Lor
some Years
both Provin
habitant of
acquainted,

Williamstadt, have been ineffectual. Those two Towns are not bigger than they were, if they hold to be so big, and there are Villages in *Pensylvania* which may vie with them for Number of Houses and Inhabitants.

The Lord *Baltimore* disputed at Law with Mr. *Pen* for the Propriety of that Part of *Pensylvania*, known by the Name of the *Three Lower Counties*, as if it had been included within his Patent for *Maryland*; but Mr. *Pen* has maintain'd his Title, and 'tis probable will always maintain it against the Lord *Baltimore's* to those Countries. *Pensylvania* has lately endeavour'd at a Tobacco Trade, but *Maryland* and *Virginia* will hinder the Progress of any other Colony in this Commodity; they have been long settled in it, and can make enough to supply all the Markets in the World, and their minding this Traffick wholly, prevents their falling into that of Provisions so much as *New England*, *New York*, *Pensylvania*, and *Carolina*; which Provinces may flourish by that Trade and Manufacture, and leave to *Virginia* and *Maryland* their Natural Trade, for by their long Continuance and Perfection in it, it deserves that Name.

CH A P. II.

Containing a Geographical Description of the Province of Maryland; an Account of the Climate, Soil, Product, Animals, Trade, and Inhabitants, English and Indian.

THO' we have given a large Description of *Virginia*, and the Bay of *Chesapeake*, and have also let out the Bounds of *Maryland*, as we find it bounded in the Lord Proprietaries Patent; yet having had some Years since a compleat and distinct Account of both Provinces from an ingenious Gentleman, an Inhabitant of the Place, with whom we have been long acquainted, the Reader will be better satisfy'd to see

The History of Maryland.

what he says, than to take it from us : Such then is the Description communicated to us by Mr. *Philemon Lloyd of Maryland* ; ‘ The Colony of *Virginia* and Province of *Maryland* are situate upon the Bay of *Chesapeake*, whose Mouth or Inlet is between the Capes call’d *Cape Henry* and *Cape Charles*, and yet so as neither of the Provinces is plac’d on one particular Side, but are both of them on each Side water’d by that commodious Bay, which divides as it were in half both Governments ; so that part of the Colony of *Virginia* is on the West Side of the said Bay, and the other part on the East Side, the Bay running through the Centre of them. The Colony of *Virginia* on the West Side of the Bay, is divided from *Maryland* by the great River *Patowmeck*, and on the East by the River *Pokomoak*, whose Head lies near the Sea to the Eastward. The Boundary of the Province of *Maryland* begins at the River of *Patowmeck*, and runs along the Bay Side Northwards, till it intersects a Line drawn West from the Mouth of *Delaware Bay*, situate in 40 Degrees North Latitude, having for its Bounds on the West high Mountains, and on the East the said Bay. The Eastern Side of the Province of *Maryland* is bounded on the West by the Bay of *Chesapeake*, on the East by the Main Ocean, on the North by *Delaware Bay*, and on the South by the River *Pokomoak*, which is the Line of Division between it and the Colony of *Virginia*. The Province of *Maryland* is divided into 21 Counties, 8 on the Western, and 13 on the Eastern Side of the Bay. Those on the Western Side are *St. Maries*, *Charles*, *Prince George*, *Calvert*, *Annapolis*, *Arundel*, and *Baltimore* Counties. Those on the Eastern Side of the Bay are *Somerset*, *Dorchester*, *Talbot*, *Kent*, and *Cecil* Counties. This Province has but one City in it, call’d the City of *St. Mary’s*, from whence one of the Counties took its Name, being commodiously situate between the Rivers of *Patowmeck* and *Patuxent*. This was formerly the Seat of Government, and the Place where the Representatives of the several Counties assembled, to concert and determine things for the Good of the Colony. There are also two principal Towns, call’d by the Names of Ports, as the Port of *Annapolis*, and the Port of *St. Mary’s*.

The
polis, and the
veral other
principal Ri
which divid
incent and
the other S
of greatest
Maryland r
the Bay of C
it.

In speaking
those on the
St. Mary’s
It begins at P
River, to the
to the Head
the Year 16
ver’d in this
the Govern
the Land ab
tainment of
the General
State-house,
day in Sept
June, for C
to represen
vernment is
Common-C
cy might ha
above 60 H
made the
there’s no g
ry’s will en
and Inhabit

Mettrapa
been the L
Country. I
for Conven
the Mouth
County an
and *Hervin*
Town.

Charles
of *Indian*

polis, and the Port of *Williamstadt*. There are several other Towns, but of no Consideration. The principal Rivers of this Province are *Patowmeck*, which divides it from the Colony of *Virginia*; *Patuxent* and *Severn* on the Western Shore; and on the other Side are *Chiptonk*, *Chester*, and *Sassafras*, of greatest Note. The Extent of the Province of *Maryland* runs further Northward than the Head of the Bay of *Chesapeake*, being situate on both Sides of it.

In speaking of the Counties, we shall begin with those on the West Side of the Bay.

St. Mary's is the first of these, and is bounded thus: It begins at Point *Look-out*, and extends along *Patowmeck* River, to the lower Side of *Bud's Creek*, and so over to the Head of *Indian Creek* in *Patuxent* River. About the Year 1698. some Medicinal Waters were discover'd in this County, call'd the *Cool Springs*, which the Government order'd should be purchas'd, with the Land about it, and Houses built for the Entertainment of the Poor. In the City of *St. Mary's* the General Court is holden, for which there's a State-house, and the Council is kept the first Tuesday in *September*, *November*, *January*, *March*, and *June*, for Orphans. This City chooses two Citizens to represent the rest in the Assembly, and the Government is by a Mayor, Recorder, Aldermen, and Common-Council; tho true it is, so much Magistracy might have been spar'd, considering there are not above 60 Houses in it, and since *Annapolis* has been made the Seat of Justice, and the publick Offices, there's no great Likelihood that the City of *St. Mary's* will encrease much in the Number of its Houses and Inhabitants.

Mettapany in this Country is noted only for having been the Lord *Baltimore's* Seat, when he dwelt in this Country. Here he built a handsome House, tho more for Convenience than Magnificence; it stands near the Mouth of the River *Patuxent*. In *St. Mary's* County are the Parishes of *St. John's*, *St. Clement's*, and *Hervington*, the latter usurping the Name of a Town.

Charles County Bounds begin on the upper Side of *Indian Creek* and *Bud's Creek*, where *St. Mary's* County

County ends, and extends to *Mattawoman* Creek, including all the Land lying on the upper Part of *Bud's* Creek and *Indian* Creek Branches. In this County the chief Places or Parishes are *Bristol* and *Piscataway*.

Prince George's County is the newest in the Province, being laid out, *A. D.* 1695. It includes the Land from the upper Side of *Mattawoman* and *Swan-son's* Creek, extending upwards by *Patowmeck* in the West, and *Patuxent* River in the East. In this County is the Parish of *Masterkont*, and others.

Calvert County borders upon *Charles* County, from which 'tis divided by the River *Patuxent*, as also from *Prince George's* County. In this County are three Towns or Parishes, *Harrington*, *Warrington*, and *Calverton*.

Ann-Arundel and *Baltimore* Counties are divided by 3 mark'd Trees, standing about a Mile and a Quarter from *Bodkin* Creek, on the West Side of *Chesapeake* Bay, and this Division runs thence West, till it crosses the Road from the Mountains of the Mouth of *Maggaty* River to *Rich. Beard's* Mill, and so continues Westward to 2 mark'd Trees, one for *Ann-Arundel*, the other for *Baltimore* County, and still continues West from *Maggaty* and *Potopsco* Rivers, till it comes to a Mountain of white Stone, from thence to the main Road to *Potopsco* Ferry, and two mark'd Pines, written at large on the North Side of the said Trees *Baltimore*, and on the South Side *Ann-Arundel* County; from thence West North West to *Elk Ridge* Road to two mark'd Trees there, thence to *Patuxent* River, and so up the said River to the Extent of it, for the Bounds of *Baltimore* County. All the Tract of Land on the North Side of these Division-Lines is in *Baltimore* County, and all the Land on the South Side in *Ann-Arundel* County. The chief Town in the County of *Ann-Arundel* is

Annapolis, which was formerly call'd *Severn*, and by an Act of Assembly, 1694. was made a Port Town, and a Collector and Naval Officer were order'd to reside there; the Name of *Annapolis* was then given it. The County Court was remov'd to this Place, a Church was order'd to be built within the Port, which was made a Parish; and in the Year 1699. the Port of *Annapolis* was made the chief Seat of Justice within

within this Pro
ficial Courts,
amable to th
ry, were ma
All Roads lead
were by anothe
both Sides v
the Road to
Road, it was
the Tree wit
ly about 10
Free-School h
Other Schools
tronage, and t
Chancellor of
incorporated
Trustees, and
what has be
know not, bu
first School th
olis. The Co
the second Tu
March, and
Ann-Arundel
now about 40
according to
Merchants in
they do in
this Towns n
In *Baltimo*
but the Hou
that the Tow
Thus we
on the West
the great Ri
tle above *Ba*
On the E
ries; the fi
East, is,
Cecil Cou
the *Delawa*
or 10 Mile
This Coun
Kent Coun

within this Province, for holding Assemblies, and provincial Courts, and all Writs, Pleas, and Process returnable to the Provincial, or to the Court of Chancery, were made returnable to the Port of *Annapolis*. All Roads leading through any County to this Port were by another Act of Assembly order'd to be mark'd on both Sides with two Notches in a Tree, and where the Road to *Annapolis* broke off from any other Road, it was to be distinguish'd on the Face of the Tree with the Letters *A. A.* The Assembly about 10 Years ago pass'd an Act for founding a Free-School here, to be call'd King *William's* School. Other Schools were also to be erected under his Patronage, and the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* was to be Chancellor of them. Trustees were appointed and incorporated by the Name of the *Rectors, Governours, Trustees, and Visitors of the Free-Schools of Maryland*; what has been the Effect of this good Bill we know not, but believe it is very inconsiderable. The first School that was to be built was to be at *Annapolis*. The County Court for Orphans is kept here the second *Tuesday* in *September, November, January, March, and June*. The Records of the County of *Annapolis* were remov'd to this Town, where are now about 40 Houses, but it lately has not flourish'd according to Expectation; and while the Planters and Merchants in *Maryland* affect to live separately, as they do in *Virginia*, there's no great probability of this Towns making any considerable Figure.

In *Baltimore* County is a Parish or Town so call'd; but the Houses are so disjoin'd in this, and others, that the Townships are not worth the Name.

Thus we have given a short View of the Counties on the West Side of the Bay, and must observe, that the great River *Sasquehanagh* falls into that Bay a little above *Baltimore*.

On the East-side of the Bay are the 5 other Counties; the first of which, proceeding from West to East, is,

Cecil County, the Western Part of which is so near the *Delaware*, that the Cut would not be above 8 or 10 Miles to join that Bay and River to *Chesapeake*. This County runs along Parallel with *Newcastle* and *Kent* County in *Pennsylvania*. We have not learnt how many

many Parishes are in it, and know nothing more of it so we proceed to

Kent County, which runs out like an Isthmus into the Bay of *Chesapeake*. We know not the Name of the Parishes in it. The next County is

Talbot County, divided from the County of *Kent* by a double Line of mark'd Trees. That part of the County that lies on the North Side of *Corseica Creek* is the Southerly Bounds of the County of *Kent*, and on the North the County of *Cecil*. *Oxford* was formerly the Capital of this County, but by an Act of Assembly in the Year 1695. it was nam'd *Williamstadt*, and made a Port Town. 100 Acres of Land adjacent to it was order'd to be purchas'd, for a common Pasture for the Benefit of the Town. The second School that was to be built was appointed for this Place, and the Roads to it were to be mark'd out in the like manner with those of *Annapolis*. A Collector and Naval Officer were order'd to reside here. Beside *Oxford*, here are the Parishes of *St. Michael's* and *Bullingbrook*. The next County is

Dorchester County. The chief Parish is *Dorchester* where the County Court is kept. 'Tis a small Place of about 10 Houses. The Land here lying on the North Side of *Nanticoke River*, beginning at the Mouth of *Chickacoan River*, and so up to the Head of it, and from thence to the Head of *Anderson's Branch*, and so down to the North West Fork, to the Mouth of the aforesaid *Chickacoan River*, was by an Act of Assembly in the Year 1698. declar'd to belong to *Panquash* and *Annatouquem*, two *Indian Kings*, and the People under their Government, their Heirs and Successors for ever, to be holden of the Lord Proprietary, under the yearly Rent of one Beaver Skin. There are more *Indian Towns* in this than in any other of the Counties.

Somerset County has a Parish of the same Name in it. The Names of the other Parishes in this and the other Counties are not come to our Knowledge; and we know nothing particularly remarkable in them, so we shall proceed to our Account of the Climate, &c.

The

The Climate
all that's m
are the fan
Virginia: Both
age at their f
crease of T
le Town of
sons and Ne
Ware-house be
ly himself v
nters, Serv
ries to barte
ing little M
on of any, as
Silver and
ants or Sho
all'd, we me
holly by the
nce, call'd C
a, and no
elish in his
le to the Pla
general, bein
hern Parts of
sweet-scented
Virginia. Th
Vent for thei
cultivated it
to produce a
Virginia. Th
Country bein
easiness of Ascen
they seem r
one of the A
Rivers and E
of the Soil;
which grow
The Produ
same here as
call'd the F
Virginia. I
of the Field
Or and Sabl

The Climate of this Province, the Soil, Product, all that's mention'd in the Contents of this Chapter, are the same, in a great measure, with those of Virginia: Both here and there the *English* live at large at their several Plantations, which hinders the increase of Towns; indeed every Plantation is a little Town of it self, and can subsist it self with Provisions and Necessaries, every considerable Planter's Ware-house being like a Shop, where he supplies not only himself with what he wants, but the inferior Planters, Servants, and Labourers, and has Commodities to barter for Tobacco, or other Goods, there being little Money in this Province, and little Occasion of any, as long as Tobacco answers all the uses of Silver and Gold in Trade. There are few Merchants or Shop-keepers, who may properly be so call'd, we mean who are not Planters also, but live wholly by their Trades. The Tobacco of this Province, call'd *Oroonoko*, is stronger than that of Virginia, and no *Englishman*, who has not a very coarse Relish in his Smoak, will bear it; yet 'tis as profitable to the Planter, and to the Trade of the Nation in general, being in demand in the Eastern and Northern Parts of Europe, where 'tis prefer'd before the sweet-scented Tobacco of James and York Rivers in Virginia. The Planters in Maryland finding so good Vent for their Commodity in foreign Markets, have cultivated it so much, that this Province is thought to produce as much or more Tobacco than that of Virginia. The Soil is here at least as fruitful, the Country being a large Plain, and the Hills in it so easy of Ascent, and of such a moderate Height, that they seem rather an artificial Ornament to it, than one of the Accidents of Nature. The Abundance of Rivers and Brooks is no little Help to the Fertility of the Soil; and there's no Grain, Plant, or Tree, which grows in Virginia, but thrives as well here. The Product, the Animals, and every thing is the same here as there, only the black and yellow Bird, call'd the *Baltimore Bird*, goes by another Name in Virginia. It had that given it, because the Colours of the Field of the Lord Baltimore's Coat of Arms are Or and Sable.

The History of Maryland.

If the Reader has the Curiosity to know more of this Country in any of the Particulars mention'd in the Title of this Chapter, let him see the History of *Virginia* on the same Heads, and there's nothing there which may not also be said of *Maryland*, except it is added here.

The Air of the two Provinces has the same Agreement; and if there's any Difference in the Health of the one Country and the other, *Virginia* perhaps has the Advantage. The Province of *Maryland* however thrives in a greater degree, tho' 'tis the younger Colony; and that is a plain Proof of the Profit of the course Tobacco, preferable to the sweet-scented, or rather that which is sold to a foreign Market turns to better Account every way, than what is made for a home Consumption with more Labour and Cost, and at last with less Gain.

The Number of Ships trading hither from *England*, and other Parts of the *English* Dominions, was computed to be 100, above 30 Years ago; and we may imagine how many more there come now, from the Increase of the Inhabitants, who were then calculated to be 16000, and are now judg'd to be 30000 Souls. The Lord Proprietary had a Mint here, to coin Money, but it never was much made use of.

As to the Indians, their Language, Manners, and Customs are the same with those of *Virginia*. At the first settling of *Maryland* there were several Nations of 'em, govern'd by Petty-Kings; but 'tis thought there are not now 500 fighting Men of them in all the Province, if the Account Mr. *Hugh Jones* transmitted to the Royal Society of it be true: For Mr. *Glover*, who some Years before sent the same Society an Account of *Virginia*, says, *The Indians in the Lord Baltimore's Territories, at the Head of the Bay, where the English were later seated, are more numerous, there being 3000 of them still in some Towns; but these being in continual Wars with each other, are like shortly to be reduc'd to a small Number; which justifies Mr. Jones's Relation of their Number in Maryland, since in Mr. Glover's time there was not above 3000 Indian Souls in all Virginia; out of which one cannot reckon there were many more than 500 fighting Men. The same Mr. Jones gives us a large Account of several things in this Province worth notice.*

Lowth.
Vol. 3. p.
572. comp.
with p.
602.

The

The Bay of
100 Miles, or
into two
Provinces
The Land is g
to be seen,
ular; but
the Heads of
years in very
anning Nor
Man may h
and *Virginia*.

All the Low
Forrest, no p
English; who
another, cann
Trees. Inde
in a few Year
dance of Tim
Building Tob
yearly for Pla

The Soil o
from Stone,
velling, and
Horses, exce
the Goodness
ness of the
vel 50 Miles i
100 Miles in
counted so lo

The rich a
the Happiness
ding Plenty
Fowl, both
tion of Health
Discovery o
Indians.

They hav
ding, and
White, Bla
Oaks (whic
white and
Groundfills
that being t

The

The Bay of *Chesapeake*, which runs *N. by W.* about 100 Miles, or more, divides *Maryland* as well as *Virginia*, into two Parts, which the Inhabitants of the two Provinces call the Eastern and Western Shoars. The Land is generally low on both Sides; no Hill that is to be seen, or is known by them 50 Yards perpendicular; but above 100 Miles West of them, towards the Heads of the Rivers, the Ground rises, and appears in very high Mountains, and rocky Precipices, running North and South; from the Top of which a Man may have a clear Prospect of both *Maryland* and *Virginia*.

All the *Low-land* is very woody, like one continu'd Forrest, no part clear'd, but what is clear'd by the *English*; who, tho they are seated pretty close one to another, cannot see their next Neighbour's House for Trees. Indeed 'tis expected that 'twill be otherwise in a few Years, for the Tobacco Trade destroys abundance of Timber, both for making of Hogheads and building Tobacco Houses, besides clearing of Ground yearly for Planting.

The Soil of *Maryland* is generally sandy, and free from Stone, which makes it very convenient for Travelling, and there's no occasion for shoeing their Horses, except in frosty Weather; and what with the Goodness of their little Horses, and the Smoothness of the Roads, People, upon Occasion, can travel 50 Miles in a Summers Afternoon; and sometimes 100 Miles in a Day; but then their Miles are not accounted so long as in *England*.

The rich and plentiful Gifts of Nature add much to the Happiness of the Place; the three Elements affording Plenty of Food for the Use of Man, as Deer, Fowl, both Water and Land; and for the Preservation of Health, many excellent Herbs and Roots, the Discovery of whose Virtue is chiefly owing to the Indians.

They have Timber of several Kinds, good for Building, and of them several sorts of Oak; as Red, White, Black, Chesnut, Water, Spanish, and Line Oaks (which last bears a Leaf like a Willow) Cedar white and red; the latter serves only for Posts and Groundfills; the White to rive or split into Boards, that being the freest from Knots, and goes under the

Name

Name of Cypress, tho 'tis falsely so term'd. There a Tree call'd Cypress, which is extraordinary large in Bulk, and bears a Leaf like the *Sensitive Plant*. 'Tis soft, spongy, will not rive, and is fit for no Use. Their Black Walnut, is mightily esteem'd by the Joiners for its Grain and Colour. There's a sort of Poplar that makes good white Plank. 'Tis a large Tree, and bears a Flower like a Tulip. They have Plenty of Pine, and Dogwood, which is a fine Flower-bearing Plant, Sassafras, Locust, a Tree of quick Growth, and very durable in Building. Hickory of which there are two sorts, Red and White; the latter serves chiefly for Fire-Wood, being the best for that Use. There's abundance of Chestnuts and Chinquapines, another Species of Chestnuts; a sort of Elm like a Dutch Elm; and the Sugar mentioned in the History of *Virginia*, as well as others name'd here. In *Maryland* is a kind of Elder, whose Bark is closely guarded with Prickles, like a Briar. The Tulip-bearing-Lawrel and Myrtle of several sorts, one of which bears a Berry that is work'd up in the Eastern Shore to a kind of Green Wax, very proper to make Candles with, if mix'd with Tallow.

The Humming-Bird and Mocking-Bird are the most curious Birds in this Province, as well as in the next; and the Rattle-snake in both is the most noted of their Reptiles.

The Air is now more wholesome than formerly, which proceeds from the opening of the Country, the Air having by that means a freer Motion. The Summers now are not extream hot, as in the first settling; but their Winters are generally severe. The North-East Wind is then very sharp, and ever cools the Air very much in the Heat of the Summer, when a sudden North-Western Blast too often strikes their Labourers with Fevers, if they are not careful to provide for it, by putting on their Cloaths while they are at work.

There's little or no Woollen Manufacture follow'd by any of the Inhabitants, except what is done in *Somerset* County. Tobacco is their Meat, Drink, Cloathing, and Money: Not but that they have both *Spanish* and *English* Money pretty plenty, which serves only for Pocket-Expences, and not for Trade, Tobacco

to being th
inters and ot
common Drink
here it is rig
White Wine.
and *Fyall*,
much and oth
enty of good
no Improve
Most of the
here they hav
them come ove
ant for Deer,
They tak
rare that an
ay of Living
something prod
English, for the
making of, b
Wars amo
ave swept aw
umber is now
One thing i
people very ti
when taken Pr
the Heroes, b
can be invente
to the Rack.
If we have a
two several Pro
at to describe
etir'd with no
er'd, that e
ome particula
re rest; and t
perfect as lay i
scrib'd the M
ave nothing
conclude with
ad Council.

to being the Standard of that, as well with the
 Hunters and others, as with the Merchants. Their
 common Drink is Cyder, which is very good; and
 here it is rightly order'd, not inferiour to the best
 White Wine. They have Wine brought from *Ma-*
ry and *Fyall*, Rum from *Barbadoes*; Bear, Mault,
 and other Wines from *England*. There's
 plenty of good Grapes growing wild in the Woods,
 but no Improvement is made of them.

Most of the Indians live on the Eastern Shore,
 where they have two or three little Towns: Some of
 them come over to the other side in Winter-time, to
 hunt for Deer, being generally employ'd by the *Eng-*
lish. They take Delight in nothing else, and 'tis ve-
 ry rare that any of them will embrace the Christians
 way of Living or Worship. The Cause of their Di-
 viding proceeded not from any Wars with the
English, for they have had none with them worth
 speaking of, but from their own perpetual Discords
 and Wars among themselves. The Female Sex also
 have swept away a great many, insomuch that their
 Number is now very inconsiderable.

One thing is observable in them, tho they are a
 people very timorous, and cowardly in Fight, yet
 when taken Prisoners, and condemn'd, they will die
 like Heroes, braving the most exquisite Tortures that
 can be invented, and singing all the time they are up-
 on the Rack.

If we have at any time mention'd the same thing in
 two several Provinces, we have taken all possible Care
 not to describe it but in one, that the Reader might not
 be tir'd with needless Repetitions. But it will be ob-
 serv'd, that every Nation of these *Barbarians* has
 some particular Customs, which distinguish 'em from
 the rest; and to make the History of each Province as
 perfect as lay in our Power, we have, as far as we cou'd,
 describ'd the Manners and Customs of all of them. We
 have nothing more to say of this Colony, and shall
 conclude with the Names of the present Governour
 and Council.

Col.

Col. William Seymour, Governour.

Thomas Tench, Esq;
Samuel Young, Esq;
John Hammond, Esq;
Francis Jenkins, Esq;
Edward Lloyd, Esq;
William Holland, Esq;
Kennelau Chittleton, Esq;
William Courcy, Esq;
Thomas Emmals, Esq;
Robert Quarry, Esq;
Thomas Grinfeild,
John Contee,

Members of
Council.

Secretary to the Government, Sir *Thomas Lawrence*.
 Speaker of the Assembly, Mr. *Thomas Smithson*.
 Naval-Officer at *Annapolis*, Mr. *William Bladen*.

T H

was discov

rnour.

members of
ouncil.

Lawrence.
nithson.
Bladen.

T H

was discover'd by *John Veraxam*; who took posses-
P on

A New Map of VIRGINIA, and MARYLAND.

By H. Moll Geographer.

P. of PEN SILVANIA

PART of WEST NEW JERSEY

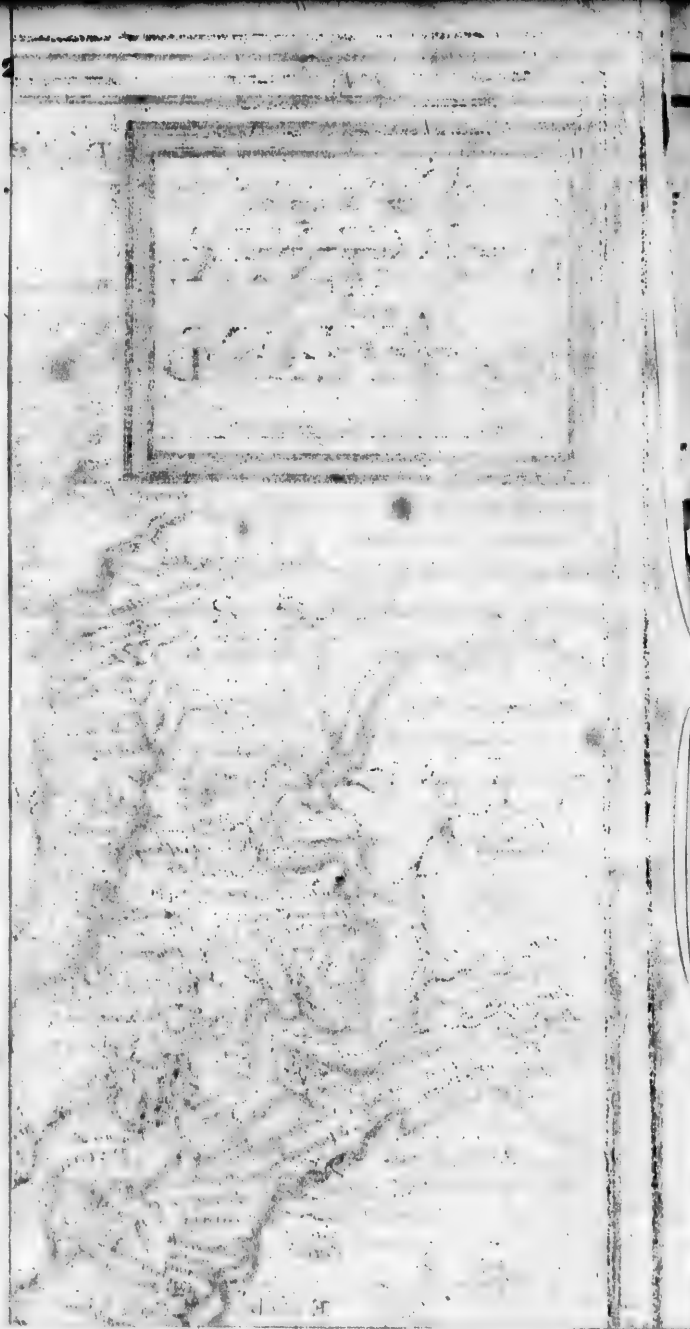
Plantations.
Indian Chiefs & Places.
C. for Creeks.



PART of CAROLINA

OCEAN

0 6 12 18 24 30
English Miles



H

V

taini
D

B
Y
C

nes of
sylvania
s call'd
over'd t
Advent
r 1497
roveries
ears be
the Wo
es of sh
ld with
The Fre
before t
was discove

THE
HISTORY
OF
VIRGINIA.

CHAP. I.

*Containing the History of Virginia, from its
Discovery to the Present Times.*

BY the Name of *Virginia*, was formerly call'd all that Tract of Land which reach'd from *Norembergua* to *Florida*; and contain'd the Country, now known to the English by the Names of *New-England*, *New-York*, *New-Jersey*, *Pennsylvania*, *Maryland*, *Virginia* and *Carolina*. The Natives call'd it *Apelehen*; and 'twas, as 'tis said, first discover'd to the Europeans by *Sebastion Cabot*, a Genoese Adventurer, who liv'd at *Bristol*; and who in the Year 1497. was sent by King *Henry VII* to make Discoveries in the *West-Indies*. *Columbus's* Successes in Discoveries 1497. Years before, having set all the Trading Nations of the World upon Expeditions into *America*, in hopes of sharing the Treasures of the *New discover'd* World with the Spaniards.

The French, who will never allow any Nation to be before them in any thing, pretend this Country was discover'd by *John Verazzano*; who took posses-

Robbe
Geog.

on of it in the Name of *Francis I.* that he call'd *la Cosa*; and with *Canada*, to which he gave the Name of *New-France*, added it to the French Dominions. But this is a Fiction of their own, exploded by all Authors who treat of the Discovery of *Virginia*: For which the Crown of *England* is certainly indebted to the Care and Expence of the famous Sir *Walter Raleigh*; who having, as appears by his admirable History of the World, made strict Enquiries into the State of the Universe; and hearing of the prodigious Profit the Spaniards drew from their Settlements in the *West-Indies*, resolv'd upon an Adventure for further Discoveries.

Sir Walter
Raleigh
undertakes
it.

His Mistress Queen *Elizabeth* was then too much employ'd in *Europe*, to think of making Attempts for Acquisitions in *America*. She was apprehensive of a War with *Spain*; and was busy'd in protesting the States of the United Provinces, and the French Protestants, against the Tyranny of *France* and *Spain*. Sir *Walter* therefore found himself under a necessity of undertaking the Adventure, on the account of private Persons, who bearing the Charge of it, were to have the Advantage.

1583.

To this Purpose, in the Year 1583. he procures several Merchants and Gentlemen to advance large Sums of Money towards carrying on the Design: And in the Year following, obtain'd Letters Pattens from the Queen, bearing Date the 25th of *March*, 1584. To possess, plant, and enjoy for himself, and such Persons as he should nominate, themselves and their Successors, all such Lands, Territories, &c. as they should discover, not then in the Possession of any Christian Nation.

1584.

Amidas
and Bar-
low's
Voyage.

In *April*, the Gentlemen and Merchants, by Sir *Walter Raleigh's* Direction, fitted out two small Vessels under the Command of Captain *Philip Amidas*, and Captain *Arthur Barlow*, two of Sir *Walter's* Servants; who knowing no better Course, sail'd away for the *Canaries*, from thence to the *Caribbee Islands*, and crossing the Gulph of *Mexico*, made the Coast of *Florida*.

They were so ignorant of Navigation, that by Computation of able Seamen, they went above thousand Leagues out of their way. Their Voyage

was how
in-let by
of North
the Coast
Chesapeac
Continen
which the
na. The
Profit of
Furrs for
Commodi
two Vesse
some Pear
the great
long had m
encourage
my to cont
they had c
ble, the C
sweet, the
fruitful and
that all tha
and such a
at home,
dice.

But the
glish then
tempt the e
ry. Besid
Profit of th
toll'd the I
and the Adv
rance, and
added an i
Soil, the V
and their B
They all
the first tha
whose Nam
Queen E
he Account
that she hon
because it w
Queen; or,

was however prosperous; and they anchor'd at the In-let by *Roanoke*, at present under the Government of *North Carolina*. They landed on certain Islands on the Coast, between *Cape Fear* and the great Bay of *Chesapeac*. They afterwards went ashore on the Continent, in a Country call'd *Wingandacoo*; over which there reign'd a King, whose Name was *Wingina*. They traded with the *Indians*, and made good Profit of their Truck, the Natives parting with their Furs for things of much inferiour Value. With this Commodity, *Sassafras* and *Cedar*, they loaded their two Vessels, and return'd home, carrying with them some Pearl, which was taken for an evident Sign of the great Riches of the Country. *Amidas* and *Barlow* had made a very advantageous Voyage; and to encourage their Owners, the *New West-India-Company* to continue the Trade, they represented the Place they had discover'd to be so plentiful, and so desirable, the Climate so pleasant and healthy, the Air so sweet, the Sky so serene, the Woods and Fields so fruitful and charming, and every thing so agreeable, that all that heard it were taken with the Description; and such as had not Conveniences to live pleasantly at home, were tempted to remove to this Paradise.

But the Discovery was in its Infancy, and the English then could only admire, without daring to attempt the enjoying the Sweets of so delicious a Country. Besides the Pleasantness of the Place, and the Profit of the Trade, *Barlow* and *Amidas* highly extoll'd the Innocence and good Nature of the *Indians*, and the Advantages that might be made by their Ignorance, and their Love of the English. To this they added an inviting Account of the Productions of the Soil, the Variety of Fruits, Plants and Flowers there, and their Beauty and Excellence.

They also brought over with them some Tobacco, Tobacco the first that was seen in *England*, and two *Indians*, first brought in- whose Names were *Wanchese* and *Manteo*. to Eng- land.

Queen *Elizabeth* was her self so well pleas'd with the Account these Adventurers gave of the Country, that she honour'd it with the Name of *Virginia*, either because it was first discover'd in her Reign, a Virgin Queen; or, as the *Virginians* will have it, because it

The History of Virginia.

still seem'd to retain the Virgin Purity and Plenty of the first Creation, and the People their Primitive Innocence.

The English Merchants were the more fond of further Adventures to *America* at this time, for that her Majesty's Ships had lately intercepted a Spanish Vessel bound home from *Mexico*, which had Letters aboard, containing a Description of the vast Treasures that were dug out of the Mines there. And the Company erected under the Auspices of Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, who some affirm gave the Name of *Virginia* to the Country himself, resolv'd on a second Voyage thither.

Sir *Walter* intended to have commanded in this Expedition himself, and to have carry'd with him a sufficient number of Forces, to have compleated his Design of making a Settlement there; but being at that time jealous that his Absence might be prejudicial to his Interest at Court, which the Earl of *Liecester* sought all Occasions to lessen, he committed the Conduct of this second Enterprize to his Lieutenant Sir *Richard Greenville*; who on the 5th of *April* set sail from *Plymouth* with seven Ships fitted out by the Company; of which himself and several other Gentlemen were Members: and this Company was the first of that kind that was establish'd in *Europe*. These King *James* incorporated by the Name of the *Governour and Company of the West-Indies*; which for their Male-administration was dissolv'd by his Son King *Charles I.*

1585. Sir *Richard Greenville*, for want of better Information, sail'd round by the *Western* and *Caribbee* Islands. He had laden his Ships with Provision, Arms, Ammunition, and spare Men to settle a Colony: With these he took the two Indians, to assist him in his Negotiations with their Countrymen: And having a prosperous Voyage, he arriv'd at *Wokoken* on the 26th of *May*; being the same place were the English had been the Year before.

In *August* following he began to plant at *Roenoke*, an Island about 5 Leagues from the Continent, which lies in 36 Degrees of Northern Latitude. He also made some little Discoveries more in the Sound to the Southward; trading with the Indians for Skins, Furs, Pearl,

Pearl, and with him

He left
mand of
to keep
land.

As soon
behind
and rang
130 Nor
the River
the India
first to b
Straglers
form'd a C
pily preve

The Jo
duly tran
was not fo
Supplies o
standing t
to gather
which me
The Nativ
watch'd al
this oblig'd
zes on the
Supply fro
incredible
near 100 N

They ke
with the re
ment of M
in all that
in Summe
themselves
spise them
don'd by
pected dail

In this D
out to Sea
or Recruit
Want and
they spy'd S

Pearl, and other Commodities; which they barter'd with him for things of inconsiderable Value.

He left 108 Men on *Roenoke* Island, under the Command of Mr. *Ralph Lane*, and Captain *Philip Amidas*, Lane first to keep possession of it; and himself return'd to Eng-
Mr. Ralph Lane first Governor.

As soon as Sir *Richard* was gone, the Men he left behind set themselves about discovering the Continent, and rang'd up and down 20 Miles Southward, and 130 Northward, venturing indiscreetly too high up the Rivers, and too far into the Country; by which the Indians growing jealous of their Designs, began first to be weary of their Company, and cut off their Stragglers when they fell into their Hands; they also form'd a Conspiracy to destroy the rest, but were happily prevented.

The Journals of the Colony's Proceedings were duly transmitted to the Company in *England*; who was not so careful as they should have been, to send them Supplies of Provision: And the English not understanding the Nature of the Climate, had neglected to gather Food in Season, as the Indians did; by which means they were reduc'd to terrible streights. The Natives never after kept Faith with them, but watch'd all Opportunities to cut them off. And, as this oblig'd them to be more wary in their Enterprizes on the Main, so it hinder'd their receiving any Supply from them: However they endur'd all with incredible Resolution, and extended their Discoveries near 100 Miles along the Sea-Coasts.

They kept the Indians in awe, by threatening them with the return of their Companions, and a Reinforcement of Men. But no Ships coming from *England* in all that Winter, nor in the Spring following, nor in Summer, they despair'd of being able to support themselves any longer; the Natives beginning to despise them, when they saw them, as it were, abandon'd by their Countrymen, and the English expected daily to be sacrific'd to their Cruelty.

In this Distress their chief Employment was to look out to Sea, in hopes of finding some means of Escape or Recruit: And when they were almost spent with Want and Watching, Hunger and Cold, in *August* they spy'd Sir *Francis Drake's* Fleet, who was returning
 from

from an Expedition against the Spaniards in *North-America*, and had been commanded by the Queen to visit this Plantation in his way, and see what Encouragement or Assistance it wanted.

The sight of Sir *Francis's* Fleet was the most joyful one that ever the Eyes of the poor Wretches who were left on *Roenoke-Island* beheld. Their first Petition to him, was to grant them a Supply of Men and Provisions, with a small Ship or Bark to attend them; that in case they could not maintain themselves where they were, they might embark in it for *England*.

Sir *Francis* granted their Request; and they set all hands to work to fit the Ship he had given them, and furnish her with all manner of Stores for a long stay: but a Storm arising, which drove the Vessel from her Anchor to Sea, and the Ship suffering so much in it, that she was not fit for their use, they were so discourag'd, that notwithstanding Sir *Francis* offer'd them another Ship, they were afraid to stay, and earnestly entreated him to take them with him home, which he did; and this put an end to the first Settlement.

An end of
the first
Settlement.

In the mean time, Sir *Walter Rawleigh* being very solicitous for the Preservation of his Colony, solicited the Company to hasten their Supplies of Men and Provisions, resolving to go with them in Person: And fearing the Colony would suffer by their Delays, he fitted out the Ship he was to go in with all possible speed; and when it was ready, set sail by himself: A Fortnight after, Sir *Richard Greenville* sail'd again from *Plimouth*, with three other Ships for *Virginia*.

Sir *Walter* fell in with the Land at *Cape Hattaras*, a little to the Southward of *Roenoke*, where the 108 Men settled; whom, after strict search, not finding there, he return'd.

The Virginians positively affirm, that Sir *Walter Rawleigh* made this Voyage in Person, but the Histories of those Times, and the Author of the Life of Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, which has been twice written, make no mention of it: 'Tis more probable, that the common Account of it is true, that he fitted out a Vessel of a hundred Tun, loaded it with Necessaries, and dispatch'd it away to relieve his little Colony.

Before

Before the
their Settler
And the M
any Informa
way home

Though
Seate of Vir
then himse
Character v
ter an Emp
Tender.

When Sir
after the de
he found th
entirely de
Drake's hav
been all m
tisfy'd him
how they g
Men more
Island; orde
Materials, a
return'd, h
speedily and

In the Y
thither by
carry'd wit
men, as als
a Commissio
Settlement

He arriv
found no B
much trou
become of
Natives sec
rest fled in
heard of af

To conf
had built he
place of th
and at the
Man.

This did
king Attent

Before this Ship arriv'd, the English had abandon'd their Settlement, and return'd with Sir Francis Drake. And the Master of the Vessel not being able to get any Information concerning them, made the best of his way home.

Though the Author of *The History and Present State of Virginia*, assures us Sir Walter Rawleigh went then himself, 'tis not likely a Man of his Quality and Character would hazard his Person so far, in no better an Employ than the Master of an Advice Boat or Tender.

When Sir Richard arriv'd, which was a few days after the departure of the Vessel we have mention'd, he found the Island *Roanoke*, where he left his Men, entirely deserted. He knew nothing of Sir Francis Drake's having been there; and thought they had been all murder'd by the Indians, till *Manteo* satisfied him of the contrary; but he could not tell how they got away. However Sir Richard left fifty Men more (some Accounts say but 15) in the same Island; order'd them to build Houses, giving them Materials, and two Years Provision; after which he return'd, having assur'd them that they should be speedily and constantly supply'd.

In the Year following Mr. John White was sent thither by the Company, with three Ships. He carry'd with him a Supply of Men, and some Women, as also plentiful Recruits of Provisions, having a Commission to settle there, and to preside over the Settlement as Governour.

He arriv'd at *Roanoke* the 22d of July, 1587. but found no Englishmen there; at which he was very much troubled. He enquir'd of *Manteo* what was become of them; this Indian inform'd him, that the Natives secretly set upon them, kill'd some, and the rest fled into the Woods; where they were never heard of afterwards.

To confirm *Manteo's* Information, the Fort they had built he found demolish'd, their Huts empty, the place of their Habitation all grown up with Weeds; and at the Entrance of the Fort the Bones of a dead Man.

This did not discourage Mr. John White from making Attempts towards a third Settlement: So he sat

Navigant. Irregular. A second Settlement.

1587.

Destroy'd.

A third Settlement.

Mr. John
White
Governor.

down in the same place, repair'd the Houses : And when he had put all things in the best Order he could for their Preservation, he proceeded to constitute a Form of Government among them, consisting of a Governour and twelve Counsellors, incorporated by the Name of the Governour and Assistants of the City of *Rawleigh* in *Virginia*.

On the 13th of *August*, *Manteo* the faithful Indian was christen'd, and created by the Governour Lord *Manteo* of *Dassamenpeak*, an Indian Nation so call'd, as a Reward of his Fidelity and Services to the English : And on the 18th of the same Month was born the first Child that was the Issue of Christian Parents in that place, being the Daughter of Mr. *Ananias Dare* : She was after the Name of the Country christen'd *Virginia*.

'Tis from these small Beginnings that we are to trace this Colony, which has encreas'd so much since, that 'tis now one of the best Branches of the Revenue of the Crown of *England*.

Good Government and Industry soon render'd Mr. *White* and his Men formidable to the Indians, who courted their Friendship, and made Leagues with the Corporation, which they kept or broke as they thought themselves too weak or too strong for the English; who, as much as they seem'd to thrive, underwent so many Hardships for want of due Supplies from *Europe*, that nothing but the invincible Constancy, which is the distinguishing Character of their Nation, could have supported them in so much Misery: yet so far were they from repenting of their Undertaking, or desiring to return, that they disputed for the Liberty of remaining at *Roanoke*; and oblig'd Mr. *White* their Governour to return for *England*, and sollicite the Company to send them Recruits of Men and Provisions.

Mr. *White* undertook to negotiate their Affairs; and leaving 115 Men in the Corporation, set sail for *England*, where he arriv'd in safety, and was two Years there before he could obtain a Grant of the necessary Supplies: At last he had three Ships fitted out for him, with Provisions and more Men for the Colony.

1589. He sail'd from *Plimouth* in the latter end of the Year 1589. taking the usual Course round by the Western and

and *Caribbee* Islands. Tho they were sh edge of the use to follow a preva Miles about, tha On the 15th of and landing on t at on the Tree the English were They saw the l and searching fur fort which they Capital Letters t forming the So *Roanoke*.

On this Advi fellows at *Croa* of them before ed the Ships on thors and Cabl shore; so they various Fortunes There were the 115 Men M Years following knows, for the 'Tis suppos'd th their Countryr them.

This Misfort further Enterpr and 'tis rather ever after it att that they negl Miscarriage, ble Circumstan sons that the l aid aside for *Rawleigh's* Tro before mention Year 1590. to full Favour at mous Expeditio

And Caribbee Islands; for no other was then known. Tho they were skill'd in Navigation, and in the Knowledge of the use of the Globes, yet they chose rather to follow a prevailing Custom, and sail three thousand Miles about, than to attempt a more direct Passage.

On the 15th of August he arriv'd at Cape Hatteras, and landing on the Island Roenoke, found by Letters cut on the Trees, in large Roman Characters, that the English were remov'd, but he could not tell where; They saw the Letters C. R. O. on several Trees; and searching further, on one of the Pallifadoes of the Fort which they had quitted, they found cut in large Capital Letters the Word Croatan; one of the Islands forming the Sound about 20 Leagues Southward of Roenoke.

On this Advice they reimbark'd in quest of their Fellows at Croatan; but they were scarce aboard all of them before a dreadful Storm arose, which separated the Ships one from another. They lost their Anchors and Cables, and durst not venture in with the Shore; so they all shifted for themselves; and with various Fortunes arriv'd in England and Ireland.

An End of
the third
Settle-
ment.

There were no more Attempts to find and relieve Mr. the 15 Men Mr. White left at Roenoke for sixteen White Years following; and what became of them God only knows, for they were never heard of to this Day. 'Tis suppos'd the Indians seeing them forsaken by their Countrymen, fell upon them and destroy'd them.

This Misfortune was enough to put a stop to any further Enterprizes of this Nature for some time; and 'tis rather a matter of Wonder, that the English ever after it attempted a Settlement in Virginia, than that they neglected it so long, this being their third Miscarriage, and the two last with most terrible Circumstances: These were certainly the Reasons that the Design of settling a Colony there was laid aside for so long a while, and not Sir Walter Rawleigh's Troubles, as the Author of the History before mention'd pretends; for Sir Walter from the Year 1590. to the Death of Queen Elizabeth, was in full Favour at Court, and at the head of several famous Expeditions.

1602.
Captain
Gosnold's
Voyage.

In the Year 1602. in which Queen *Elizabeth* dy'd, Captain *Bartholomew Gosnold* fitted out a small Vessel at *Dartmouth*, and set sail in her from that Port, with 32 Sailors and Passengers for *Virginia*. He had been one of the Adventurers in a former Voyage thither, was an excellent Mariner, and had found out that there must be a shorter cut to that part of *America* than had hitherto been attempted; wherefore he design'd a more direct Course, and did not stand so far to the Southward, or pass by the *Caribbee* Islands, as all former Adventurers had done, by which they not only sail'd many hundreds of Leagues out of their Way, but were expos'd to the difficult Shores and dangerous Currents of the Islands, and the Coasts of *Florida*.

He attain'd his end in avoiding those Coasts and Currents, and taking a nearer Course than any had done before him.

He arriv'd in the Latitude of 42 Degrees, and a few Minutes, to the Northward of *Roanoke*, among the Islands, forming the North side of *Massachusetts Bay* in *New-England*; where not finding the Conveniences he desir'd, he set sail again; and when he thought he had got clear of the Land, he fell upon the Bay of *Cod*, now part of *New-England*.

By his Method of Navigation he shorten'd his way 500 Leagues, and yet went farther about by as many more than our Ships do now.

Captain *Gosnold* stay'd some time on the Coast, trading with the Indians for their Furs, Skins, &c. with which, *Sassafras* and some other Commodities, he loaded his Ship, and return'd, having too few Men in his Company to pretend to a Settlement. This Voyage was so healthy, that neither himself nor any of his Crew were in the least indispos'd in all the time. He was the first that had made it turn to any account since *Barlow* and *Amidas's* Voyage; and gave such a good Description of the commodious Harbours, pleasant Places, and profitable Trade he had met with, that the English once more began to talk of a Plantation in *Virginia*; and several Merchants, particularly the Mayor and some Aldermen of *Bristol*, with whom Mr. *Hackluit*, who made a very good Collection of Voyages to *America*, was concern'd, set out Ships to trade to the same Place.

Two Vessels with the same shew'd his Method rich Lading.

The *Bristol* were continu'd their Commerce for many Years. Traders to that quality of their much, till the out of the Irish *Virginia*.

The next Ship commanded by the *Bristol* Men, where, and trad

The same Year *London*, made a like Success. *Caribbee* Islands, *Christophers*, and *Chesapeake* in *Vir* it, and landed

his Company and 4 or 5 of rows; upon w

The trading Men began to for a Settlement to pass, *Henry Lord Arundel* order the Com sell upon the (now call'd) w the Indians, m and found the the Inhabitant the English ha ing greedy of sing on their lous, it occas that follow in

Two Vessels fitted out by the *Bristol* Men, fell in with the same Land Captain *Gosnold* had done, follow'd his Method and Traffick, and return'd with rich Lading.

The *Bristol* Merchants encourag'd by this Adventure, continu'd their Voyages thither, and encreas'd their Commerce from time to time so much, that for many Years they were the most considerable Traders to that Colony; and, considering the Inequality of their Numbers, out-did the Londoners by much, till the Merchants of *Liverpooll* drove them out of the Irish Trade, and rivall'd them in that to *Virginia*.

The next Ship that sail'd thither from *England* was commanded by Captain *Martin Pring*, fitted out by Capt. the *Bristol* Men, who came to *Whitsan* Bay, anchor'd there, and traded with the Natives to advantage. *Pring's Voyage.*

The same Year Captain *Gilbert* in the *Elizabeth* of *London*, made a Voyage to *Virginia*, but not with the like Success. He traded with the Savages in the *Cabibbee* Islands, viz. *St. Lucia, Dominica, Nevis, St. Christophers*, and thence proceeded to the Bay of *Chesepac* in *Virginia*, being the first that sail'd up into it, and landed there. The Indians set upon him and his Company in the Woods, and Captain *Gilbert* and 4 or 5 of his Men were kill'd by their Arrows; upon which his Crew return'd home.

The trading Voyages of *Gosnold* and the *Bristol* Men began to put the English on new Attempts for a Settlement: But before it could be brought to pass, *Henry* Earl of *Southampton*, and *Thomas* Lord *Arundel* of *Warder*, fitted out a Ship under the Command of Capt. *George Weymouth*, who Capt. fell upon the Eastern Parts of *Long-Island* (as 'tis Weymouth's now call'd) where they landed, and traffick'd with the Indians, made Trial of the Soil by English Grain; *Voyage.* and found the Natives more affable and courteous than the Inhabitants of those other parts of *Virginia* which the English had discover'd; but the Adventurers being greedy of Gain, over-reach'd the Indians, imposing on their Ignorance; of which they growing jealous, it occasion'd the many Murthers and Massacres that follow in the Course of this History.

Capt. *Weymouth* enter'd the River of *Powhatan* Southward of the Bay of *Chesapeac*. He sail'd up above Forty Miles, finding the Channel deep and broad, being a Mile over, and 7 to 10 Fathom in depth, having Creeks on every side at every half Mile Distance, all deep and safe; in which Ships of 300 Tuns may ride in many places, with a Cable of shore in the soft Oaze.

As he coasted along this River, he traffick'd with the Natives, bartering his Trifles for their Treasures: the Indians giving him to the value of 10 or 12 l. in Furs, Beaver, Otter, and Sable, for five Shilling worth of Knives, Combs, Beads and Toyes.

In one place where he traded, he and his Crew had like to have been surpriz'd by the Natives, who inviting him ashore on pretence of Traffick, plac'd 300 Men with Bows and Arrows in an Ambuscade; but Capt. *Weymouth* march'd with so much Caution, and so well arm'd, that they durst not attack him. He sent his Boat 70 Miles up the River, in which his Ship lay 6 Weeks. While he was there he made trial of the Soil of the Country with English Grain, which he found thriv'd, as it did in other parts of *Virginia* where the Experiment had been made.

Having laden his Ship with the Commodities of the Place, such as Furs, Sassafras, and Tobacco, he return'd to *England*, carrying 3 or 4 Savages whom he had taken Prisoners with him.

The Account he gave of his Voyage when he came home, tempted others to adventure thither, but none had the Courage to think of a Settlement. They had forgot the 115 Men whom Mr. *White* had left at *Roe-noke*: Their Pity was too weak for their Avarice, Trade and Profit was all they thought of; and these private Adventurers would have put the Design of a Colony out of the Peoples head, had not Capt. *Gosnold* so effectually sollicitated the Settlement of *Virginia* in the Court of King *James*, that several Gentlemen contributed towards it; and the King incorporated two Companies in one Patent, bearing date the 10th of April, 1606. for two Colonies.

1606. The first Company were Sir *Tho. Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, the Reverend Mr. *Richard Hackluit*, Prebend of *Westminster*, and *Edward Maria Wingfeild*, Esq;

The South
Virginia
Company.

Esq; who were
berly by their
shon'd join with
Virginia, betw
thern Latitud
Bounds from t
Miles, each w
Country, dire
permitted to P
Company or th

This Patent
Virginia, as they
The second C
others, as we

land, these we
They had lik
habit any Part
of 38 and 45 of
vileges and Bo

In this Paten
York, New-Je
divided into se

try was then c
to the second C
ted to the first
tlement: For

Patent, they fi
of Capt. *Newpo*
Henry, the Sov

With him v
to the Earl o
Smith, Capt.

of whom the
a Minister, a
with them. C

of the River
Provisions, A
ries to make

lony that ren
resolving to p
had taken C

was a noted
had acquir'd
Capt. *Smith*

Esq; who were the *London-Adventurers*, and had liberty by their Patent to seat themselves, and such as shou'd join with them at any place on the Coast of *Virginia*, between the Degrees of 34 and 41 of Northern Latitude. They were allow'd to extend their Bounds from the place of their Plantation 50 English Miles, each way, and one hundred Miles up in the Country, directly from the Sea-Coast, and none was permitted to Plant or dwell there without leave of the Company or their Council.

This Patent included *Maryland*, *Virginia* and *Carolina*, as they are now distinguish'd from each other.

The second Company were *George Popham*-Esq; and others, as we shall shew in the History of *New England*, these were call'd the *Plimouth-Adventurers*.

They had liberty by their Patent to plant and inhabit any Part of the Continent between the Degrees of 38 and 45 of Northern Latitude, with the like Privileges and Bounds as the First Company.

In this Patent was included *New-England*, *New-York*, *New-Jersey* and *Pensilvania*, as they are now divided into several Provinces; but the whole Country was then call'd *Virginia*, That which was granted to the second Colony, as well as that which was granted to the first. The latter was the earliest in their Settlement: For in the same year with the Date of their Patent, they fitted out two Ships under the Command of Capt. *Newport*, who fell in with the Coast near Cape *Henry*, the Southermost Point of the Bay *Chesapeake*.

1606.

With him went the Honourable Mr. *Percy*, Brother to the Earl of *Northumberland*, Capt. *Gosnoll*, Capt. *Smith*, Capt. *Ratcliffe*, Capt. *Martin*, Mr. *Wingfield*, of whom the 5 last were of the Council. They took a Minister, and abundance of Handicraft Tradesmen with them. Capt. *Newport* rais'd a Fort at the Mouth of the River *Pamhatan*. Here he left 100 Men, with Provisions, Arms, Ammunition, and other Necessaries to make a Settlement; and this was the first Colony that remain'd on the Place. The first Company resolving to prosecute their Undertaking vigorously, had taken Capt. *John Smith* into their Service. He was a noted Seaman, who from a mean Original had acquir'd a great Reputation by his Adventures. Capt. *Smith* chearfully undertook the Employment, and

First Colony that remain'd.

The History of Virginia.

and ventur'd his all on that Bottom. The Company were empower'd by their Patent to choose a President and Counsellors to grant Commissions, and exercise judicial Authority. Accordingly they gave a Commission to the Gentlemen above-mention'd to establish a Colony in their Territories, and govern it by a President and Council, who were invested with sufficient Authorities and Powers.

Mr.
Wing-
field Pre-
sident.

Capt. Rad-
cliff, Pre-
sident.

The Gentlemen who went over with Capt. Smith, were very unkind to him, and envying his Zeal and Experience in Maritime Affairs, they us'd him so ill, that 'twas thought they intended to put him to Death. This was carry'd on by the President Mr. Wingfield, a covetous haughty Person, who, while Capt. Smith was trading and treating with the Indian Kings, contriv'd his Ruin: False Witnesses were produc'd to swear ill Designs against him, and he was not only refus'd to be admitted into the Council, but thrown into Prison, where he lay till all the Forgeries of his Enemies were detected. He then was admitted a Member of the Council; Mr. Wingfield was depos'd from his Precedency, and Capt. Radcliff chosen President, who knowing Capt. Smith's Ability, left the Administration of Affairs to him.

The Company gave Captain Newport, when he set out, orders to Sail to that Part of Virginia, where Mr. White left his Miserable Colony, tho there was no Security of Harbour there. Captain Smith was the Pilot of this little Fleet, and as good a Seaman as he was, went the old round-about way, by the Western and Charibbee Islands, and past his own Accounts in Navigation twice or thrice, in so much that his Companions began to Despair of reaching the Place they were bound for, and to think of returning to England. But when they were at the Point of returning, Capt. Smith, with two of his Vessels, luckily fell in with Virginia, at the Mouth of Chesapeac Bay. Some Authors distinguish Capt. Smith's Voyage from Capt. Newport's; and affirm, that the first Settlement which remain'd, was made by Smith, but others make the Voyage of Capt. Newport Prior to Smith's. Leaving this Dispute to be decided by the Company's Books, and the Virginians, we proceed in our History.

Capt.

The

Capt. Smith, built a Fort, nam'd Cape Henry. Eldest Son: the Prince Charles, Powhatan he call'd Name.

Before the first Settlement, then they unanimsly call'd James.

The Soil abounds with two thirds of the good Arable, narrow River, Tuns, by which is a sort of a Fort, and might be their own Division Settlement, and them. One place.

'Tis certain of Virginia with Persons, and to the Figure merce. The President and Counsellors, and in to Planting and Trading Profit by the being at liberty he please, which means than their N and so conceiv'd which ended.

The Trade of yellow wash'd down the back mistook for

Capt. Smith, when he had the Management of Affairs, built a Fort on the Southern Cape, which he nam'd Cape Henry, from Prince Henry King James's Eldest Son: the Northern he call'd Cape Charles, from Prince Charles, afterwards Charles I. And the River Powhatan he call'd James River, after the King's own Name.

Before the President and Council proceeded to a James-Settlement, they made a full Search of James River, and Town then they unanimously pitch'd on a Peninsula, about built 50 Miles up the River to build a Town upon, which they call'd James-Town.

The Soil about it is very good, the place itself two thirds environ'd by the Main River, which affords good Anchorage, and the other third by a small narrow River, capable of receiving Vessels of 100 Tuns, by which means the Ground the Town stands upon is a sort of an Island. Here they built Castles and a Fort, and might have gone on with Success, had not their own Divisions put a stop to the Growth of their Settlement, and given the Indians an Advantage over them. One hundred and eight Men staid upon the place.

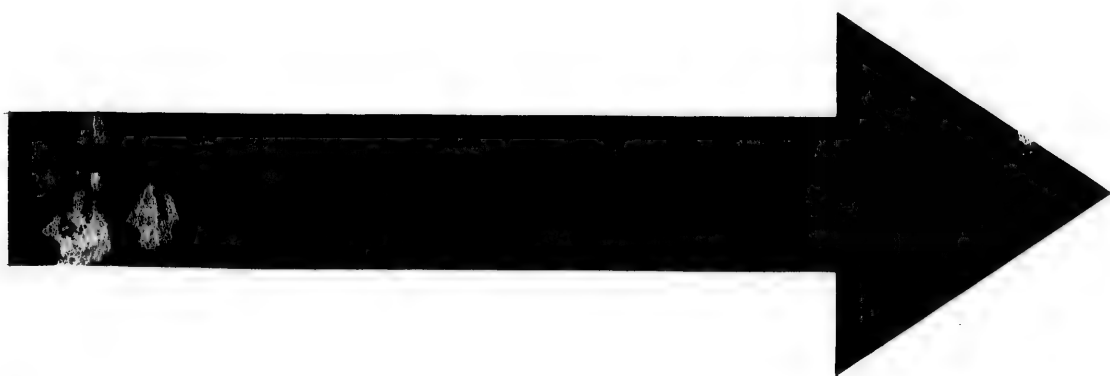
'Tis certain that in this year 1607. the Plantation of Virginia was first settled by about one hundred Persons, and that from these small Beginnings it rose to the Figure it has since made in the British Commerce. The two Ships were sent back by the President and Council to fetch Recruits of Men and Provisions, and in the mean while those that remain'd fell to Planting and Sowing, to Building, Fortifying, and Trading with the Indians, making a prodigious Profit by their Traffick. But each private Trader being at liberty to sell their Goods at what Rates he please, the English undersold one another, by which means the Natives who had bought dearer than their Neighbours, thought they were cheated, and so conceiv'd an Aversion to the English in general, which ended in a National Quarrel.

The Trade was further interrupted by a sort of yellow Dust-*Isinglas*, which was found to be wash'd down by a Stream in a Neck of Land on the back of James-Town. This the English mistook for Gold, and all their Hearts were

set

1607.

Capt.



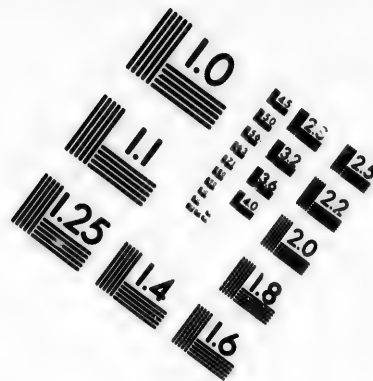
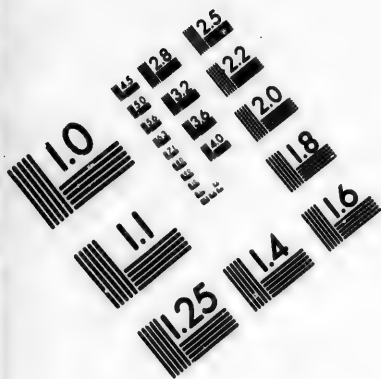
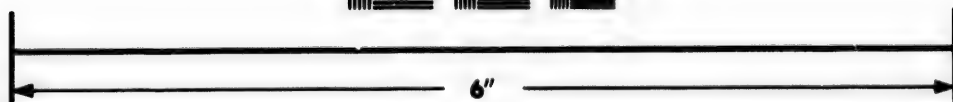
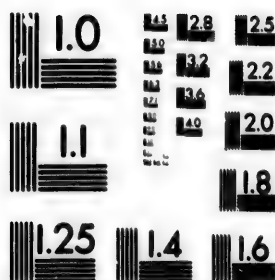


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

25 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14560
(716) 872-4503



for upon it, to the neglect of their real Profit by Traffick, and their Security and Preservation, by making Provision for a time of Necessity, which then came upon them; for while they were all running mad after this Visionary Gold; their Town was burnt, their Stores consum'd, and they were reduc'd to the last Extremities of Wants. Many of them were also destroy'd by the Indians, none minding their defence, so much were they infatuated with the Hopes of Mountains of Wealth, by the help of these New-found-Sands; and they already began to despise the Mines of *Mexico* and *Peru*, in comparison of their own inestimable Stream. In the mean time they labour'd under unspeakable Difficulties, which however they bore with patience, being comforted by their golden Dreams. One of the Ships that had been sent back to *England* for Provisions, return'd; and they loaded her home with this *Yellow Dust*, thinking all the Stowage wasted that was bestow'd on Furs or Druggs, and cou'd hardly afford any room for Cedar. Not long after her departure the other Ship arriv'd, and her they also loaded home with this imaginary Gold Dust, with Cedar and Clep-board to fill up. They were all so busy in Fishing for the Dirt, that they cou'd spare no time for Discoveries, till the heat of their Avarice began to Cool a little, and some of the wiser Sort to suspect, that according to a good old English Proverb, *All was not Gold that glister'd*. At last Capt. *Smith*, with part of the Colony, made several Discoveries in *James-River*, and up *Chesapeake Bay*, with two Sloops which they had brought with them for that Purpose.

1608.

In the same Year 1608. the English first gather'd Indian Corn of their own Planting, and they might have flourish'd, had not their Feuds, Folly, and Negligence, hinder'd their Success, and been the cause of their Future Mischiefs. For in Capt. *Smith's* absence, Matters fell into Confusion; several uneasy People were for deserting the Settlement, and attempted to run away with a small Vessel, which was left to attend it, but they were prevented.

Capt. *Smith* in his Expedition among the Savages, was surpriz'd, assaulted, and taken Prisoner by them. He was then making Discovery on the River

Chico-

Chicohomoni
Nation, for
Men to d
down the
Life, but
him, prese
the Savag
not been l
ter *Pocahon*
more here
Town, fou
'twas likely
them to re
Supplies of
a Visit to *F*
Capt. *New*
Radcliff re
timously d
second Exp
er Vice-P
still ran to

In the v
Anne Burr
Christian
Year the Pr
People to
Samond, u
the other
James-Riv
Mr. *Marti*
Samond, was
West did n

The Col
from *Engl*
spare 120
long after
at the Mo
dian Town
Werocomoc

The Co
dicial the
ancement
leave to ap
a new P

Chicohomony, where *Oppecameanough*, a King of that Nation, fell upon him treacherously, and put all his Men to death, after he had forc'd them to lay down their Arms. He not only spar'd Mr. *Smith's* Life, but carry'd him to his Town, feasted him, presented him to *Powhatan* the Chief King of the Savages, who wou'd have beheaded him, had he not been sav'd at the Intercession of *Powhatan's* Daughter *Pocahontas*, of whom we shall have occasion to say more hereafter. Capt. *Smith* returning to *James-Town*, found the Colony in such Distractions, that 'twas likely to break up. When he had prevail'd upon them to remain there, Capt. *Newport* return'd with Supplies of Men and Provisions, and they both paid a Visit to *Powhatan*, who receiv'd them in great State. Capt. *Newport* did not stay long in *Virginia*, and Capt. *Rodcliff* resigning his Presidency, Capt. *Smith* was unanimously desir'd to accept of that Office. He made a second Expedition for Discoveries, leaving Mr. *Scriven* Vice-President, but the Affairs of the Settlement still ran to destruction.

In the year following, 1609. *John Layden*, and *Ann Burroughs* were marry'd, which was the first Christian Marriage in *Virginia*, and in the same Year the President and Council at *James-Town* sent out People to make two other Settlements, one at *Namsumund*, under Capt. *Martin* in *James-River*; and the other at *Powhatan*, 6 Miles below the Falls of *James-River*, under the Honourable Mr. *West*; Mr. *Martin* attempting to seize the King of *Namsumund*, was forc'd to fly from his Settlement, and Mr. *West* did not stay long at his.

The Colony was by this time so encreas'd by Recruits from *England*, that the People of *James-Town* cou'd spare 120 Men for each of these Settlements. Not long after another Settlement was made at *Kiquotan*, at the Mouth of *James-River*. *Powhatan* was an Indian Town, and was bought of *Powhatan* King of *Werocomoco*, for some Copper.

The Company in *England* understanding how prejudicial the Divisions in their Colony were to the advancement of the Settlement, Petition'd the King for leave to appoint a Governour, which was granted them in a new Patent. Pursuant to this Grant they made the

Lord De-
laware
Governor.

Lord

Q

Sir Tho. Lord Delaware Governour of the Colony, whose
 Gates, Sir Brother Mr. West liv'd then in Virginia. My Lord
 George appointed three of the Members of the Society, Sir
 Summers, Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers, and Captain New-
 Capt. port, to be Joint Deputy Governours.

Dep. Go- These three Gentlemen embark'd in one Ship, and
 vernors. set sail, with eight more in their Company, laden
 with Provisions and Necessaries. The Ship in which
 the Governours were, being separated from the rest
 in a Storm, was driv'n ashore, and stay'd at *Bermudas*,
 but the Crew were all sav'd, and the three Gover-
 nours with the rest; who, notwithstanding the dan-
 gers they had run, were always jangling, to the great
 detriment of their Affairs.

While they were there, the two Knights had per-
 petual Quarrels among themselves, form'd Factions
 and their Differences grew to such a height, that they
 would not embark in the same Vessel; so they built
 each of them one of Cedar, picking up the Furniture
 of their old Ship for Rigging; and instead of Pitch
 and Tar, they made use of Fish Oil, and Hogs Grease
 mix'd with Lime and Ashes.

Several of the Nine Ships that came out with the
 Governours, arriv'd in *James-River*; and by their
 Arrival, increas'd the Disorder in the Settlement
 there; for, pretending that the new Commission
 dissolv'd the old one, they would not submit to the
 Government they found on the Place; the fatal Con-
 sequence of which we shall see hereafter.

We must now return to Capt. Smith, who while
 the Company were preparing to dispatch away the
 three Governours, and those Gentlemen stay'd at
Bermudas, continu'd his making Discoveries with
 great Difficulties and Hazards; in which he was op-
 pos'd by *Powhatan*; with whom he made War, and
 had frequent Advantages of the Indians, tho not with-
 out Loss; himself was twice taken Prisoner by him
 once, as was hinted before, as he was making a Dis-
 covery of the Head of *Chickahomony River*; and a
 nother time by an Ambuscade at *Omnimoment*. The
 manner of his Treatment among the Indians, and his
 Escape, his Friendship with *Nautiquans* the King's
 Son, and the surprizing Tendernefs of *Pocahontas* his
 Daughter for him, when he was about to be executed

Capt.
 Smith's
 Adven-
 tures.

are Incident
 has given a
 to which
 relating the
 when Mr.
 could not
 Life, put
 receiving
 scarce thir
 how vain w
 do not refe

We shall
 thing more
 Virginian t
 an English

Capt. Smith
 the Indians
 Gohny, w
 were 500 N
 down the
 blown up b
 der in his
 fair'd of,
 England to

He was
 Capt. Radc
 selves, and
 of the Ship
 The Colon
 who by hi
 preserv'd
 him they h
 own Lazie
 Cruelty of
 ries full,
 ans to bri
 so much by
 Attempts
 m'd For
 the Settler
 creas'd da
 Want and
 their Nur
 Gates and

are Incidents equally agreeable and surprizing. He has given a large Account of them in his own History, to which the Reader is refer'd; only we cannot omit relating the wonderful Humanity of *Pocahonts*, who when Mr. *Smith's* Head was on the Block, and she could not prevail with her Father to give him his Life, put her own Head upon his, and ventur'd the receiving of the Blow to save him, tho she was then scarce thirteen Years old: A remarkable Instance, how vain we are to our selves, in thinking that all who do not resemble us in our Customs are barbarous.

The Friendship of Pocahonts, an Indian Princess.

We shall have occasion in this Chapter to say something more of this generous Lady, who was the first *Virginian* that ever spoke English, or had a Child by an Englishman, and the first Christian of that Nation.

Capt. *Smith* having twice got out of the Hands of the Indians, proceeded in advancing the new settled Colony, which was now so numerous, that there were 300 Men in *James-City*, and Plantations up and down the Country; but Mr. *Smith* happening to be blown up by the accidental firing of some Gun-powder in his Boat, was so wounded that his Life was despaired of, and his Friends oblig'd him to embark for *England* to be cur'd.

Capt. Smith returns to England.

He was no sooner gone, but those he left behind, Capt. *Radcliff* and Capt. *Martin*, fell out among themselves, and the Confusion encreas'd upon the Arrival of the Ships belonging to the three Governours Fleet. The Colony soon mis'd their late President Mr. *Smith*, who by his Wisdom, Vigilance, Courage and Care, preserv'd the Settlements in good Order. Without him they had certainly been destroy'd, either by their own Laziness and Negligence, or the Treachery and Cruelty of the Indians: He always kept their Granaries full, and by fair means or force oblig'd the Indians to bring in Corn and Provisions. He law'd them so much by his Valour, that they durst not make any Attempts against the English, for whose defence he rais'd Forts and Batteries, and was indeed the Soul of the Settlement; for as soon as he left it the People decreas'd daily, and by the Treason of the Natives, or Want and Hunger, to which they were soon reduc'd, their Numbers were lessen'd to 60, when Sir *Thomas Gates* and Sir *George Summers* arriv'd: 'Tis true, they

The miserable State of the Colony.

The History of Virginia.

made some unsuccessful Attempts to defend themselves; Capt. *Sicklemore* and Capt. *Radcliff*, with a Company of Men, going amongst the Indians to trade, were surpriz'd, and 60 Men slain by *Powhatan*, who would have no Dealing with them after Capt. *Smith's* Departure. All those that had settled in any other part of the Country, fled from the Indians to *James-Town*, except the Planters at *Kiquotan*, who being defended by *Algernoon-Fort*, maintain'd themselves against the Natives, but could not subsist for want of Provisions, which they, as well as their Country-men at *James-Town*, had wasted, and like them they were almost famish'd: Their Distress was so great, that they fed on the dead Bodies of the Indians whom they slew, and even dug up and eat those that were bury'd.

This dreadful Famine is still remember'd in *Virginia*, by the Name of the *Starving Time*. The Persons who came in the last Ships continu'd their Dissention amidst these Calamities; during which, some of them who pretended to be of the Three Governours Council, assum'd the Administration; and tho the Commission was not arriv'd, usurp'd the Power of Governing, to the Ruin of the Settlement; which, by Famine and Sickness, bred by bad Diet, were reduc'd from above 300 to 60 Persons.

The Three Governours in the mean while set sail on the 11th of *May*, 1610. from *Bermudas*, in their two small Cedar Ships, with 150 Men in their Company; and in 14 Day arriv'd in *Virginia*. They went up to *James-Town* with their Vessels, where they found the poor Remains of the Colony.

Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, and Capt. *Newport* pity'd their deplorable State, and immediately call'd a Council, to consult of what should be done for their Relief. They inform'd them they had but 16 Days Provision aboard, and demanded of them whether they would venture to Sea with that, or stay in the Settlement, and take their Fortunes; in which they would very willingly share with them.

They soon resolv'd to abandon *James-Town*, and return for *England*; and, because Provisions fell short, to call at the Banks of *New-foundland*, in hopes to meet some Fishermen there, and in such case, to divide them-

themselves
Ships, for

This Resol-
and fell down
and the ne-
below *Jam*-
ver; where
them, which
to sound the

This Lo-
provided w-
ries, and 2
Lord *Dela*-
Town; and
into a flou-
among the
which had
and made
them, eith-

In his ti-
stablishment
in it, as t-
Captain *G*-
ral, Sir *G*-
George Pie-
Sir *Ferdina*-
Newport V-
ry; an A-
time been

My Lon-
to *Bermud*-
the *Voya*-
fish at *Sag*-

Sir *Tho*-
London,
and the *L*-
cy Deput-
where he
port of t-
lish'd.

There
over who
tle of *M*-
arriv'd t-

themselves into several Crews, and go aboard several Ships, for their better Accomodation.

This Resolution being taken, they all went aboard, and fell down to *Hog-Island* the 9th of *June*, at Night; and the next Morning to *Mulberry-Island*, 18 Miles below *James-Town*, and 30 from the Mouth of the River; where they spy'd a Ship's Boat coming up to them, which the Lord *Delaware* had sent before him to sound the Channel.

The Lord
Delaware
arrives.

This Lord brought with him 3 Ships, very well provided with all manner of Provisions and Necessaries, and 250 People to recruit the Colony. The Lord *Delaware* perswaded them to return to *James-Town*; and by his good conduct brought the Settlement into a flourishing Condition. He restor'd Discipline among them, renew'd their Trade with the Indians, which had been interrupted by their Wars with them; and made the Savages once more afraid of attacking them, either openly, or by surprize.

In his time the Government had the Form of an Establishment, and several Men of Quality bore Offices in it, as the Lord *Delaware* Lord Governour, and Captain General, Sir *Thomas Gates* Lieutenant General, Sir *George Summers* Admiral, the Honourable *George Piercy* Esq; Governour of *James-Town* and *Fort*, Sir *Ferdinando Wenman* Master of the Ordnance, Capt. *Newport* Vice Admiral, *William Strachy* Esq; Secretary; an Appearance of Officers that has not since that time been seen in *Virginia*.

My Lord sent Sir *George Summers* and Capt. *Argall* to *Bermudas* to fetch Provisions: Sir *George* dy'd in the Voyage; but Capt. *Argall* got a Supply of Cod-fish at *Sagadahoc* in *New-England*.

Sir *Thomas Gates* was sent for by the Company at *London*, to give them an Account of their Proceedings; The Hon. and the Lord *Delaware* being taken sick, left Mr. *Per-nourable* Deputy Governour, and return'd to *England*; *Geo. Pier-cy* Esq; where he made the Adventurers such a pleasing Report of their Affairs, that they order'd it to be published. Deputy Governor.

There were now about 250 Men on *James-River*; over whom Sir *Thomas Dale* was plac'd, with the Title of Marshal General, by the *London* Council: He arriv'd there the 10th of *June*, 1611. with three Ships, laden

laden with Provisions and Necessaries, having Supplies of Men, and some live Cattle, and Hogs aboard, for Labour and Breed.

On his Predecessor's Departure the Colony fell into their old Disorders, and began to be in Want, occasion'd by their Sloth and Dissention. They depended on their Supplies from *England*, and neglected to plant Corn, to subsist them in case of a Disappointment, which they might reasonably have expected, considering the Length and Hazards of the Voyage.

From this Knights Government the Prosperity of the Plantation may be dated, for he set all the English to work, and did not disdain to put his own Hand to the Spade and the Axe, to help to turn up the Earth, and fell Trees; and that they might no more depend on the Natives for Corn, he put them upon sowing Grain of their own; which, tho they did not begin to prepare the Ground till the Middle of *May*, yielded an indifferent good Crop: he order'd Land to be wall'd in for Fences from wild Beasts, and the wilder Indians: He enlarg'd the English Bounds; survey'd the Rivers to find out a Place convenient for the building a new Town, which was done at his own Charge, and was from him call'd *Dales-Gift*.

Dales-Gift
built.

The Company in *England*, notwithstanding they had hitherto met with very little Encouragement, continu'd to supply their Colony with all sorts of Necessaries, solicited to do it by the Lord *Delaware* and Sir *Thomas Gates*: The latter was sent with 6 Ships more, having 350 Men on board, 100 Head of live Cattle, and Plenty of Provisions and Tools for Labour and Life.

Sir Tho.
Gates Go-
vernor.

Sir *Thomas* arriv'd in *August*, took upon him the Government; and in *September* he settled a new Town at *Arrahattuck*, about sixty Miles above *James-City*, calling it *Henricopolis*, or *Henry's-Town*, in honour of *Henry Prince of Wales*.

Henrico-
polis built.

Here he built Forts and Centry-boxes, and ran a Palisadoe on the other side of the River at *Coxendale*, to secure their Hogs.

The English now plough'd the Ground, whereas before they planted all their Corn with the Spade; they also spread themselves abroad in the Country, and

and possess
they cultiva
Planter pay
Colony.

Their Ca
digioufly;
stry to thri
a Settlement
long before
from which
them.

The Cor
in a flouri
provide for
Bodies; an
sons to cont
founding S
Many devo
Gospel, op
over, Chu
chers; as
place.

Ini the
Samuel, an
for the use
to *Potomac*
honta, the
nourable
his Ship,
ted to, be
ther to th
reside d.

Argall
and carry
her Fath
pleas'd, fo
King lov
thing for
own and
upon to c
mas *Dale*
ing then
his Daug
ned *Rebe*

and possess'd themselves of private Plantations, which they cultivated, and planted Tobacco and Corn, each Planter paying a Quit-Rent to the Treasury of the Colony.

Their Cattle, especially their Hogs, encreas'd prodigiously; Laws and Order began to flourish, Industry to thrive, and the Plantation to have the Face of a Settlement that look'd to be lasting; yet it was not long before new Dangers threaten'd their Destruction; from which however the hand of God deliver'd them.

The Company at London finding the Colony was in a flourishing Condition, thought it their Duty to provide for the Welfare of their Souls, as well as their Bodies; and to that end invited many charitable Persons to contribute to the building them Churches, and founding Schools for the Education of their Youth. Many devout People, in hopes of propagating the Gospel, open'd their Purses; Ministers were sent over, Churches built, and supply'd with Preachers; as will be shewn more at large in its proper place.

In the Year 1612. Capt. Argall, afterwards Sir Samuel, arriv'd from England with two Ships more for the use of the Settlement. Sir Thomas sent Argall to Potowmack to buy Corn, where he met with Pocahonts, the Lady of whom we have before made honourable mention. He invited her to come aboard his Ship, which with some small difficulty she consented to, being betray'd by the King of Pastancy, Brother to the King of Potowmack, with whom she then resided.

Argall having got her in his Custody, detain'd her, and carry'd her to James-Town, intending to oblige her Father King Powhatan to come to what Terms he pleas'd, for the Deliverance of his Daughter: Tho the King lov'd her tenderly, yet he wou'd not do any thing for her sake which he thought was not for his own and his Nations Interest; nor would he be prevail'd upon to conclude a firm Treaty of Peace, tho Sir Thomas Dale went himself to treat with him about it, being then Marshal under Sir Thomas Gates, till he heard his Daughter, who turn'd Christian, and was christened Rebecca, was marry'd to Mr. John Rolfe, an English Gentle-

She marrys Gentleman, her Uncle giving her in Marriage in the
Mr. Rolfe. Church.

1613.

Powhatan approv'd of the Marriage, took it for a sincere Token of Friendship, and was so pleas'd with it, that he concluded a League with the English in the Year 1613. Intermarriage was propos'd at that time, as a sure means of continuing the Peace with the Indians: And how far it would have answer'd that end, the Reader may judge; but the English were not fond of taking the Indian Women to their Beds as their Wives. Whether it was on account of their being Pagans or Barbarians we cannot decide; or whether that Nicety was not very unseasonable in the Infancy of the Settlement.

By *Powhatan's* Alliance with the English, and *Mr. Rolfe's* marrying an Indian Princess, a great Nation were made Friends to the Colony: And thus they conceiv'd hopes that they had secur'd themselves from the Insults of the Savages: But we shall see in a Page or two they flatter'd themselves in their Security, when they were never nearer Destruction. Tho *Sir Thomas Gates* was on the spot, yet *Sir Thomas Dale* had a great share in the Government; and *Capt. Argall* reduc'd the *Chicohomony* Indians.

Capt. Geo.
Yardly
Dep. Go-
vernour.
 1616.

These two Gentlemen were very industrious in the Service of the Colony; and the former, *Sir Thomas Dale*, upon *Sir Thomas Gates's* return to *England*, in the Year 1614. presid'd over it two Years; during which time it flourish'd; and he then going for *England*, left *Capt. George Yardly* Deputy Governour; took *Mr. Rolfe* and his Wife *Pocahonts* with him, and arriv'd at *Plimouth* the 12th of *June*.

Pocahonts
arrives
in Eng-
land.

Capt. Smith hearing the Lady who had been so kind to him was arriv'd in *England*, and being engag'd at that time in a Voyage to *New-England*, which hinder'd his waiting on her himself, petition'd *Queen Anne*, Consort to *King James*, on her behalf, setting forth the Civilities he had receiv'd from her, and the Obligations she had laid upon the English, by the Services she had done them with her Father.

The Queen receiv'd his Petition graciously; and before *Capt. Smith* embark'd for *New-England*, *Mr. Rolfe* came with his Wife from *Plimouth* to *London*. The Smoak of the City offending her, he took Lodg-

ings for her
 went with *Se-*
Pocahonts
 to excuse h
 which he ha
New-Englan
 thinking the
 Falsity, whi
 was so angry
 but at last,
 was reconcil
 put him in
 him; repro
 Air so livel
 have seen M
 titude; a
 test.

She was
 and entertain
 whom she
 Majesty, tha
Smith had
 charm'd wi
 portment fo
 band, was
 marrying a
 sent.

Tho in th
 of *King-Cr*
Rolfe by n
 ger the Pe
 with the K
Great-Brit
 full Repres
 to be satisf

The La
 all manner
Gravesend
Virginia:
Christian,
 She had
 are at this
Capt. T
vernour,

ings for her at *Brentford*, and thither Capt. Smith went with several Friends to wait on her.

Pocahontas was told all along that Capt. Smith was dead, to excuse his not coming to *Virginia* again, from which he had been diverted, by settling a Colony in *New-England*. Wherefore when this Lady saw him, *Her Treatment as Court and Behaviour.* thinking the English had injur'd her in telling her a Falsity, which she had ill deserv'd from them, she was so angry, she won'd not deign to speak to him; but at last, with much Perswasion and Attendance, was reconcil'd, and talk'd freely to him: She then put him in mind of the Obligations she had laid upon him; reproach'd him with forgetting her, with an Air so lively, and Words so sensible, that one might have seen Nature abhors nothing more than Ingratitude; a Vice which even the very Savages detest.

She was carry'd to Court by the Lady *Delaware*, and entertain'd by Ladies of the first Quality, towards whom she behav'd her self with so much Grace and Majesty, that she confirm'd the bright Character Capt. Smith had given of her. The whole Court were charm'd with the Decency and Grandeur of her Deportment so much, that the poor Gentleman her Husband, was threaten'd to be call'd to an account for marrying a Princess Royal without the King's Consent.

Tho in that King *James* shew'd a very notable piece of *King-Craft*; for there was no likelihood that Mr. *Rolfe* by marrying *Pocahontas*, could any way endanger the Peace of his Dominions, or that his Alliance with the King of *Wiccomoco* could concern the King of *Great-Britain*: Indeed we are told that upon a fair and full Representation of the Matter, the King was pleas'd to be satisfy'd.

The Lady *Pocahontas* having been entertain'd with all manner of Respect in *England*, was taken ill at *Gravesend*, where she lay in order to embark for *Virginia*: She dy'd there with all the Signs of a sincere Christian, and true Penitent.

She dies in England.

She had one Son by Mr. *Rolfe*, whose Posterity are at this day in good Repute in *Virginia*.

Capt. *Tardly*, whom Sir *Thomas Dale* had left Governor, let the Buildings and Forts run to Decay, being

being so eager in planting Tobacco, that he neglected the Security of the Settlements, and would not spare Hands enough to keep the Fortifications in repair: He also omitted sowing Corn. And thus the Colony fell into their usual Distress, were reduc'd to great Want, and expos'd to the Mercy of the Indians.

1617.
Sir Sam.
Argall
Governor.

In the following Year Sir *Samuel Argall* came over Governour; who was griev'd to see the Number of the People lessen'd, and every thing running to ruin.

The Indians also, by mixing with the English, had learnt the use of Fire-Arms; and the Planters out of Laziness employ'd them to hunt and kill Wild-Fowl for them.

Sir *Samuel Argall* did what he could to regulate these Disorders; but the Mischief had taken so deep root, that he could not hinder its Growth.

1618.

Capt. *Tardly* return'd to England, and Sir *Samuel Argall* govern'd the Colony in Peace till the next Year, 1618. when the Lord *Delaware*, who all this time seems to have been Chief Governour, and those that succeeded him only his Deputies, came near the Coast with 200 choice Men, fresh recruits of Provisions, and all manner of Necessaries.

Lord De-
laware
dies on the
Coast.

My Lord still sail'd the old way by the *Canary* and *Caribbee* Islands. The Length of the Voyage had an ill Effect on his People, of whom 30 dy'd; and the Lord *Delaware* himself did not live to reach *Virginia*; so that Sir *Samuel* continu'd in the Government.

Powhatan dying in April, left his Kingdom to his second Brother *Isopatin*, who renew'd the League with the English: But this Prince was soon oust'd of his Dominions by *Oppeccanough* his younger Brother, who reign'd over *Chickahamony*, made himself Master of all the Nations around him, and his Empire at last became formidable to the English.

Sir *Sam. Argall* finding his Colony was in Peace, and that they thriv'd apace under his Government, began to look about him a little, and resolv'd to undertake an Expedition on the Coasts, to make Discoveries, and dislodge the French, who had settled in *Acadia*.

In his way
and seated th
crack'd a Set
of Cape Cb
port from P
and sow'd an
Conveniences
Those of th
permitted
and others we
now Settlement
With the
return'd to P
attacking the
with his Mas
histories wh
old, that for
Vessel from E
at as soon as
all, and carr
recall'd is
to his attackin
He left C
some Year re
whom King
made Govern
There arriv
him, 1300 Me
of the Comp
them with Su
his. These
that had bee
now the Co
Consent of
Orders for
were appoin
whom the P
tions.
These Re
that sat in
The Gover
is the High
together in
Affairs of th

In his way he drove out some *Hollanders*, who Sir
had seated themselves on *Hudsons* River; he then Sam. Ar-
erack'd a Settlement of French to the Northward gall's Ex-
of Cape Cod; and afterwards drove Monsieur Biom-peditions
from Port-Royal in Canada, where the French against the
had sow'd and reap'd, built Barns, Mills, and other French and
Conveniences: Dutch.

Those of them that were for returning to France
permitted to embark; which some of them did,
and others went up the River of Canada, to make a
new Settlement there.

With the Plunder of these two Forts Sir Samuel
return'd to Virginia: And how he could justify his
attacking the Subjects of a Prince who was at Peace
with his Master King James, does not appear in the
Histories which mention this Event; only we are
told, that some Months after it there arriv'd a small
Vessel from England, which did not stay for any thing,
but as soon as Governour Argall was on board, it set
sail, and carry'd him home. The occasion of his be-
ing recall'd is not know; and therefore 'tis imputed
to his attacking the French.

He is re-
call'd.

Capt.

Nath.

Powell

Dept. Go-

vernour.

Sir Geo.

Yardly

Governor.

He left Capt. Nathaniel Powell Deputy; who the
same Year resign'd his Office to Sir George Yardly,
whom King James had Knighted, and the Company
made Governour.

There arriv'd with Sir George, and some Months after
him, 1300 Men in 21 Ships, the Earl of Southampton, one
of the Company at London, being zealous to furnish
them with Supplies of Men, Cattle and other Provisi-
ons. These seated themselves in all the Plantations
that had been deserted, and planted new ones. And
now the Colony grew so numerous, that to have the
Consent of the whole in the Passing of any Laws or
Orders for the Publick Good, Representatives
were appointed to be chosen for every Precinct,
whom the People were to Elect in their several Plan-
tations.

These Representatives, being the first Assembly
that sat in Virginia, met at James-Town in May, 1620. The first
The Governour and Council at first sat with them, Assembly.
as the High Commissioner, Lords and Commons, sit
together in the Parliament in Scotland; here the
Affairs of the Settlement were debated. We shall see
in

1620.

in the following Chapters how this Method of their Session came to be alter'd.

In *August* a Dutch Ship put in there with Negroes and the Merchant sold 20, which were the first Slaves that were brought thither from *Guinea*. This Year also the Boundaries of *James-City* were mark'd out and Land was laid out in several Places, to the Company, to the Governour, the College, the Churches, and particular Persons: New Settlements were made in *James* and *Tork* Rivers: Very great Supplies continually came over: A Salt-work was set up at *Cape Charles*, an Iron Work at *Falling Creek*; and Sir *George Yardly* seem'd to make amends for his former Male-Administration; yet he still suffer'd the People to grow secure, and neglected providing for their Defence. He was succeeded in the Government by

Sir Francis Wyat,
Governor.
1621.

Sir *Francis Wyat*, a young Man, who arriv'd in *October*, 1621. and this Year more Men settled there, who falling to Planting, they made so much Tobacco, that the Market was over-stock'd, and the Commodity yeilded little or nothing. The King pitying their Loss by it, commanded that no Planter shou'd the next year plant above 100 l. of Tobacco a Man, advising them to turn their spare time to provide Corn and Stock, and make Potash or other Manufactures. In *November* Capt. *Newport* arriv'd with 50 Men on his own Account, and settl'd a Plantation at the Place, which from him is call'd *Newport's News*. Settlements were made as far as *Patowmeck* River, where the Indians never molested the English. On the contrary, they were always friendly and serviceable to them.

The General Assembly appointed inferiour Courts, call'd County-Courts, to be held for the more convenient Distribution of Justice in Causes of less moment: The rest were try'd before the Governour and Council, who were the supream Court of Judicature in the Country. The Prosperity and Increase of the Colony render'd the English careless of their Safety. They convers'd frequently and openly with the Indians, admitted them to eat, drink, and sleep with them, and wou'd often do the same at their Cabbins; by this Means the Savages became acquainted with their Strength, and learn'd the use of Guns.

They

They knew
and their Fe
ward 'em fo
the first occ
Emperor Op
der of one of
Nation for
one *Manning*
to have been
of Peace, w
Boundaries:
dead.

Oppecanca
tain, resolv'
contriv'd a
was to be ex
and most of
in the Cont
by a convert
bility had b

The Disc
before the in
tations cou'd
dwelt near
cher'd, Men
Number of
and so did
Conspiracy
a retreating
were desert
Commande
etc. on Fir
selves again
that were
ments, and
the Work
were all m
themselves
sic'd, nor
had just th
of Glass-h
sacre, whi
from this
that they

They knew their Places of Residence and Refort, and their Fear of them by degrees wearing off, prepar'd 'em for any bold Enterprize against them on the first occasion; And 'twas not long before their Emperor *Oppecancanough* took an Affront for the Murder of one of his Captains, a Man very eminent in his Nation for his Valour. This Fellow had robb'd one *Manning*, and kill'd him; for which he was about to have been apprehended and carry'd before a Justice of Peace, when he came next time into the English Boundaries; but making some Resistance he was shot dead.

Oppecancanough, on News of the Death of his Captain, resolv'd to be reveng'd, and he and his Indians contriv'd a general Massacre of the English, which was to be executed on *Friday* the 22d of *March*, 1622. 1622. The English were engag'd in the Conspiracy, which was reveal'd to Mr. *Pace* by a converted Indian, or the Massacre in all probability had been general. The English massacre'd by the Indians!

The Discovery he made being but 4 or 5 Hours before the intended Execution of it, the remoter Plantations cou'd not take the alarm, and the English that dwelt nearest to the Savages, were barbarously butcher'd, Men, Women and Children, by them, to the Number of 334 Persons. Mr. *Pace* fled to *James-Town*, and so did all to whom he cou'd give notice of the Conspiracy. Others stood on their Defence, and made a retreating Fight to their Forts. The Plantations were deserted, and the Planters who liv'd at a Distance Commanded to set their Houses, Barns, Store-houses, &c. on Fire, to repair to the Forts, and defend themselves against the Common Enemy. Most of those that were kill'd, fell by their own Weapons, Instruments, and Working Tools. Those who were at the Works at the Iron Mines near *Falling Creek*, were all murder'd, except a Boy and a Girl who hid themselves. This Iron Work cou'd never after be recover'd, nor the Lead Mines, which the Superintendant had just then discover'd, be found out. The Project of Glass-houses at *James-Town* was ruin'd by the Massacre, which put Improvements out of Peoples Heads: from this time they were so enrag'd at the Natives, that they never gave over warring with them till they had

had almost utterly extirpated the Nations that were concern'd in the Massacre. They dealt the same measure to them that they had receiv'd from 'em; And the Savages, fearing the English after they were collected into one Body, fled to the Woods. The Governour invited them to return to their own Habitations, and plant their Corn, which on promise of Peace they did; and when they were as secure as the English had been, the latter fell upon them, cut great numbers of 'em to pieces, and destroy'd their Corn and Habitations. They attack'd and entirely destroy'd *Powhatan, Oppecancanough's* Royal Seat, where in imitation of the English he had built him a House, and was so pleas'd with the Contrivance of a Lock and Key to fasten the Door, that 'tis said his Imperial Majesty spent most part of his Time in locking and unlocking it, wondering how such a slight Turn of his Hand, should have such an effect on the Door and Postern. The English continu'd to assault the Indians where-ever they found them, they deserted those Parts where they then inhabited, and the Colony receiving fresh Supplies from *England*, and Arms and Ammunition out of the Tower by the King's Command, extended themselves every way, and planted over all the Country, as 'tis now peopled and cultivated.

Some time after this Massacre, several Gentlemen procur'd Grants of Land in *England* from the Company, and others came over on their private Accounts to make Settlements; among the former was one *Capt. Martin*, who was nam'd to be of the Council. This Man rais'd so many Differences among them, that new Distractions follow'd, which the Indians observing, took heart, and once more fell upon the English on the Borders, destroying them, without pitying either Age, Sex, or Condition.

These and other Calamities being chiefly imputed to the Mismanagement of the Proprietors, whose Losses had so discourag'd most of their best Members, that they sold their Shares, *King Charles I.* on his Accession to the Throne, dissolv'd the Company, and took the Colony into his own immediate Direction. He appointed the Governour and Council himself, order'd all Patents and Process to issue in his own Name, and

*King
Charles I.
dissolves
the Com-
pany.*

reserv'd

reserv'd a Qu
We have b
covery and S
of the Histo
most of the
have from al
together giv
Growth and
Amidas and
to the Gover
first Govern
Company.
Constitution
twelve Gent
been said, o
Towns and
Tracks of L
and to some
the Govern
Power in hi
had formerl
of the wh
giv'n by the

The Virg
Country in
terests, and
has often fa
tions which
They tell
has though
Tobacco r
ters of Ma
con'd mak
Whether
the like C
to be dou
nagement
her Moth
her if she
to be dec
continue
stration o
ter of the
Province

reserv'd a Quit-rent of 2 s. for every hundred Acres.

We have been the larger in our Account of the Discovery and Settlement of *Virginia*, because that part of the History of the Colony is slightly touch'd by most of the Writers who have treated of it, and we have from all of 'em taken so many Particulars, as will together give the Reader a clear Idea of the Infancy, Growth and Increase of this Settlement, from Capt. *Amidas* and Capt. *Barlow's* Discovery of the Country, to the Government of Sir *John Harvey* who was the first Governour of *Virginia* after the Dissolution of the Company. The King order'd the future Form of its Constitution to be by a Governour, a Council of twelve Gentlemen, and the Assembly consisting as has been said, of Representatives deputed by the several Towns and Counties in the Colony. He granted large Tracts of Land to Gentlemen and others in *England*, and to some of them added Authority independent of the Government, giving each Gentleman the same Power in his Province as the Proprietors of *Virginia* had formerly. The greatest of these Grants was that of the whole Territory of *Maryland*, which was given by the King to *George Calvert*, Lord *Baltimore*.

The *Virginians* pretend that this Division of their Country into separate Provinces, created separate Interests, and that the General Advantage of the whole, has often suffer'd by their Opposition to the Regulations which have been made for the Common Good. They tell us, that when the Government of *Virginia* has thought fit to prohibit the Exportation of bad Tobacco to help the Market in *England*, the Planters of *Maryland* have pour'd in as much Trash as they cou'd make, to take the Advantage of that Market. Whether the People of *Maryland* have not the same or the like Complaints to make against the *Virginians*, is to be doubted; and that the Industry and good Management of that Colony have set an Example ev'n to her Mother-Plantation, which it had been better with her if she had follow'd. We must leave this Dispute to be decided by the Gentlemen concern'd in it, and continue our History of *Virginia*, during the Administration of Sir *John Harvey*, who was a great Promoter of the large Grants that were made of Land in his Province, and often went so far, that he procur'd the

The present Constitution on sessled.

Sir John Harvey, Governor.

very

1639.
Seiz'd and
sent to
England.

Sir Wil-
liam Berk-
ley, Go-
vernour.

Another
Massacre.

very Settlements which had been made before to be included. In a word, he was a very bad Governour, severe in his Extortions and Exactions, in Fines and Forfeitures, proud and turbulent in his Councils, and so unjust and arbitrary, that the Gentlemen of the Colony not being able to endure his Tyranny, seiz'd him, and sent him Prisoner to *London*, in the Year 1639. They deputed two of their Members to accompany him, and exhibit their Grievances to King *Charles I.* who was so far from redressing them, that he immediately order'd Sir *John Harvey* to return to his Government. But the Cry of the Plantation was so loud, that it was to be fear'd it might reach the Parliament: To prevent which Sir *John* was soon recall'd, and Sir *William Berkley* order'd to succeed him.

In Sir *John Harvey's* Time, says *Bullock* in his Discourse of Virginia, what perplex'd Condition were both he and the Gentlemen of the Country in, when upon his Complaint they were sent for from Virginia, to answer here in England at the Council Board; and again upon their Complaint he and his Friends must come to London to answer at the same place, and this iterated, besides continual Heavings and Shovings between two Parties, &c.

The Differences between the Governour and the Colony occasion'd so much Confusion, that the Indians who watch'd all Opportunities to fall on the English, surpriz'd them again, and cut off 300 Men, Women, and Children.

Oppecanough highly resent'd the Incroachments that had been made on his Dominions by the late Grants, and had contriv'd another General Massacre, but the English were scatter'd up and down in so many separate Plantations, that 'twas impossible for him to destroy them at once, without an entire Conquest, to which he cou'd not pretend. However, he order'd the Savages in all Quarters to Massacre the Borderers, and himself and his Indians were the most active of all in destroying those that had settled on *Tork-River*, by the Natives call'd *Pamaunkee*, where he himself kept his rude Court, and had fix'd the Seat of his Empire. This Prince is by *Mr. Smith* said to be *Powhatan's* Brother. He was of a large Stature, a noble Presence, and understood the Arts of Government as well as 'tis possible for a Man to do, who was entirely unacquainted

with

with Letters. The Indians by Tradition report, that he was not related to their King *Powhatan*, but came from a far Country which lay South-West of theirs. And by their Description of it must be near *Mexico*, or the Mines of *St. Barbe*. This Action of *Oppecanough* provok'd the English so much, that they never wou'd give the Savages Peace, but continu'd to make War upon them till they took their Emperor, and led him into Captivity; for Sir *William Berkley* hearing he was at some distance from the place of his usual Residence, march'd against him with a Party of Horse, surpriz'd, and took him Prisoner in the Western Seizes the Parts of *Henrico* County. Sir *William* intended to *Emperor* send him to the King, but a Souldier in revenge of *Oppecanough* the many Miseries the Colony had endur'd by his Incursions, shot him in the back, of which Wound he dy'd. Before his death he carry'd himself with a Magnanimity truly Royal. He was very old, worn out with age, and the Hardships of War. His Eye-lids were so heavy, he cou'd not see without the help of his Servants to lift them up. When he was a Prisoner, hearing a Noise about him, he caus'd them to be lifted up, and perceiving 'twas the noise of a Rabble that were then come to see him, he reflected with Indignation on the ungenerous Treatment of the English, in making a Sight of him, and exposing him to the Absence of the Multitude; and calling for the Governour Sir *William Berkley*, he said, *Had it been my Fortune to have taken you, I wou'd not basely have expos'd you as a Show to the People.*

On the Death of this Emperor, the Nations whom he had subjected, became afraid of the Power of the English. There remain'd no Prince of an equal Genius to keep so many several Kingdoms united. They set up Sovereigns of their own, and their strength being weaken'd by this Division, the English were no more afraid of any Disturbance by them; unless it were those who lay nearest to them, and consequently were more liable to be surpriz'd by them, but Sir *William Berkley* made Peace with all of 'em, and the Savages knowing they cou'd get nothing by War, kept it a long time unviolated.

The manner of *Oppecanough's* Death is variously related by the Writers that have made any mention

Bullock.

of it; some say he was kill'd in the Action when Sir William Berkley came to surprize him. Others, that he was taken and committed to Prison, where he dy'd. The most authentick account of it is what we have taken from the *Author of the History of Virginia*: 'Tis certain, that with him the Power of the Indians was entirely destroy'd. The Colony was in a fair way of improving this great Advantage, and there were no less than 15000 Men, besides Women and Children, on the Place. When News came of the Troubles in *England*, which naturally affected all the Colonies: Besides, that the Relations and Friends of the Inhabitants were involv'd in them; they depended on that Kingdom for Supplies and Protection, and a constant Market to take off the Commodities their Plantations produc'd. *Virginia* for a while was more concern'd in them, than any of the other Settlements. For Sir William Berkley stood out against the usurp'd Powers in *England*, after the Murder of King *Charles the First*; and by his Loyalty hinder'd the Commerce of the Planters there with their Friends and Correspondents at home. Their Supplies of Provisions were cut off: Their Tobacco lay on their Hands; and the *Virginians* were oblig'd to subsist by themselves, which they were now in a Condition to do, for the Planters had great Stocks, 30000 Head of Cattle, an infinite number of Hogs; Beef and Pork were 16 d. a Stone; Wheat and Barley very cheap, but few Beasts of Burden, for there were no more than 200 Horses and Mares, and 70 Asses at this time. However, as much as they abounded in Provisions, they could not long have supported themselves without assistance from *England*, nor have been able to have kept up their Stocks for want of other Necessaries, for their Maintenance; Such as working Instruments and Tools, Hoes, Axes, &c.

Ibid.

The Parliament of *England* who were very careful to secure the Plantations, sent a Squadron of Men of War to the West Indies, under the Command of Sir George *Ascue*, with Instructions to reduce *Barbadoes*, the *Caribbee* Islands, and the Northern Colonies, to their Obedience. We shall see in the History of *Barbadoes*, what Sir George did at that Island, from whence

he detach'd
Ships to Lan
Berkley out
his unshaken
Dutch Ships
made a brave
mated by h
to no Purpos
many Men,
Enterprize
He gave out
Goods belong
of his Ships
selves to him
wou'd detain
well inclin'
Times. 'T
no hazard all
whom three
He wou'd h
fellors, who
Goods, eng
gree to a Su
resolute, as
out, and a F
forc'd to la
tation. W
Historian
who says
run into th
Governme
Oliver's;
Rump, til
seu's Exp
He was
to do with
his Counc
wealth.
sole Adm
Plantation
lish Domi
zance as v
We rea
Pointz, v

he detach'd Capt. *Dennis*, with a small Squadron of Ships to Land some Forces, and drive Sir *William Berkley* out of *Virginia*. Sir *William* still continu'd his unshaken Principles of Loyalty. He hir'd some Dutch Ships that were then in his Harbours, and made a brave Resistance. The Virginians being animated by his Example, Capt. *Dennis* attack'd them to no Purpose; and finding he shou'd lose a great many Men, and perhaps not succeed at last in his Enterprize by Force, he had recourse to Policy. He gave out that he had two very rich Cargoes of Goods belonging to two of the Council aboard one of his Ships, and if they did not Surrender themselves to him, and engage the rest to do so too; he wou'd detain the Merchandize. The Council were too well inclin'd to comply with the Wickedness of the Times. 'Twas only the Governour who was willing to hazard all, rather than submit to those Powers, to whom three Potent Kingdoms had already submitted. He wou'd hearken to no Terms till the two Counsellors, whose Hearts were bent on the safety of their Goods, engag'd the Majority of their Brethren to agree to a Surrender; and Sir *William* was not so very resolute, as to pretend to oppose both an Enemy without, and a Faction within his Government; so he was forc'd to lay down his Arms, and retire to his Plantation. We cannot omit correcting a Mistake of the Historian we have often mention'd in this History, who says Capt. *Dennis* was sent by *Oliver*. He has run into the vulgar Error of those, who call all the Governments from the King's Death to *Cromwell's*, *Oliver's*; Whereas *Cromwell* did not turn out the Rump, till two or three years after Sir *George Ayseu's* Expedition.

He was himself in *Scotland* then, and had nothing to do with the Admiralty of *England*, further than as his Councils influenc'd the Affairs of the Commonwealth. When he was actually in Possession of the sole Administration, he busy'd himself about the Plantations, as much as any other part of the English Dominions; and *Virginia* fell under his Cognizance as well as the rest.

We read in an old Historian, that Major General *Pointz*, who was made Governour of the *Leeward*

Capt. Dennis reduces Virginia to the Obedience of the Parliament.

Islands by the Parliament, sail'd from *St. Christopher's* to *Virginia*, before *Sir George Ayscue* sent *Dennis*, who it seems by that Author found the Business done to his Hand, and that Country the only Retreat for Cavaliers, was forc'd to submit on Terms of Indemnity.

Col. Diggs
Governor.

Mr. Bennet
Governor.

Mr. Matthews
Governor.

Col. Diggs was first made Governour of *Virginia* by the Parliament, during whose Government nothing remarkable happen'd. He was succeeded by Mr. Bennet, and he by Mr. Matthews. The two last Governours only were put in by Oliver. The same Historian says, That Diggs, Bennet and Matthews, were all Governours during the small time of Cromwell's Protectorate. If so, there must have been some other Governour between Sir William Berkley, and Col. Diggs; If not the changing of Governours was not so extraordinary as he pretends. Before the end of our History, we shall more than once find three Governours in seven years; for so long it was from Sir William Berkley's submission, to Oliver's Death; and this was the less rare, because Mr. Matthews dy'd in his Government.

The Trade of *Virginia* flourish'd in those Days, notwithstanding the Act which pass'd in one of Cromwell's Parliaments, to break off that Colonies correspondence with other Nations, and to prohibit their Exporting or Importing any Commodities whatever, but what shou'd be loaden aboard English Ships, navigated by English Seamen: Which Act, commonly call'd, *The Act of Navigation*, was justify'd after the Restoration, by another Act of Parliament to the same purpose, but with several Restrictions and Prohibitions, by Bonds, Securities, &c. Sir William Berkley having shewn a great Concern always for the good of the Colony, was mightily belov'd by the People. On the Death of Mr. Matthews, when they were without a Governour, they immediately cast their Eyes upon him, and by an obliging Violence compell'd him to assume the Government; which however he wou'd not consent to, unless they all promis'd to join with him in venturing their Lives and Fortune for the King, who then was in Exile, but not at that time in France, as our Historian affirms.

This

This was there had the Anarchy

The Virg pos'd, he ac told, forthw Scotland, Fr well for hi was not long cestors; y Sir William nging him of the Prop he erected i

Sir William Majesty on his Deputy.

When he by the King is said to ha of the Silk rison in the ral Satisfacti to be revis'd fore the Assa same care e He regulat Allowances Governmen ment of th breeding o While the Service of in England, for his futu promote H yards, tha to James-I there befo giv'n with tempted t convenien might ha that City,

This was indeed a very bold Action, for as yet there had no News arriv'd of *Oliver's* Death, and the Anarchy in *England* that succeeded.

The Virginians accepting of the Terms he propos'd, he accepted of the Government, and, we are told, forthwith Proclaimed *Charles II.* King of *England*, *Scotland*, *France*, *Ireland*, and *Virginia*. It happen'd well for him and his Colony, that King *Charles* was not long after restor'd to the Throne of his Ancestors; yet we don't find that the King gave Sir *William Berkley* any greater Reward than continuing him in his Commission, and making him one of the Proprietors of the Province of *Carolina*, when he erected it into a Principality about the Year 1663.

Sir *William* going for *England* to Congratulate his Majesty on his Restoration, left Col. *Francis Morrison* his Deputy.

Col. Francis Morrison, Deputy.

When he came to Court, he was graciously receiv'd by the King, who in Honour of his Loyal *Virginians*, is said to have worn a Robe at his Coronation, made of the Silk that was sent from thence. Col. *Morrison* in the mean time behav'd himself to the General Satisfaction of the Plantation. He order'd the Laws to be revis'd and collected into a Body, to be lain before the Assembly at their next Session. He took the same care of the Church, as he did of the State. He regulated the Parishes, settled the Ministers Allowances, got a Revenue for the Support of the Government, and other Laws for the Encouragement of the Linen and Woollen Manufactories, the breeding of Silk-worms, Tanning and Salt-works. While the Deputy-Governour was so busy'd for the Service of the Colony, Sir *William Berkley* was in *England*, taking his Instructions from the King, for his future Conduct. His Majesty order'd him to promote Husbandry, Manufactures, Silk and Vineyards, that all Ships Trading to *Virginia*, shou'd go to *James-Town*, and be enter'd at the Custom-House there before they broke Bulk; which Order was giv'n with an Intent that by it the People might be tempted to come thither and dwell there, for the convenience of Trade; and had it been obey'd, it might have increas'd the number of Buildings in that City, which is now much less than it was four

1660,

His Behaviour.

1662.
Sir William
Berkley, Go-
vernour.

score years ago, every Body coveting to live at his Plantation, and settle where he thinks he shall have the best Crops and Conveniencies of Shipping. This is the Reason that there are so few Towns in *Virginia*, and those that are there, so very small. Sir William being fully instructed by the King, how he shou'd proceed on his Return to his Government, set sail from *England* to *Virginia*, where he arriv'd in the Year 1662. and immediately put the People upon improving their Plantations, and advancing Manufactures. He summon'd an Assembly, and got an Act pass'd for building of *James-Town*. Each County was to build so many Houses, and some actually built their Quota, which notwithstanding the Act, were converted into Taverns and Eating-houses, and the Town was very little the bigger for 'em.

By Sir William's Behaviour on the Revolutions in *England*, one may perceive he was no Friend to the Puritans. Before the Civil War, he procur'd severe Laws to be made against them, and now he had an Act pass'd, laying great Restraints upon them, which not only drove many People out of *Virginia* to *Maryland* and other Colonies, but kept others from coming thither.

Clamours
in Virgi-
nia.

Tho the Order for all Ships to enter at *James-Town* was dispens'd with, yet the rigorous Circumscription of Trade, by the Act of Navigation, the Persecution of Dissenters, and the low Prices of Tobacco, rais'd great Clamours among the *Virginians*, fomented by some of *Cromwell's* Soldiers, who had been banish'd thither.

Berkin-
head's Con-
spiracy.

At last the Mutiny grew to such a Head, that several Planters and others enter'd into a Conspiracy against the Government: The Servants were the Chief Promoters of it; with a Design to kill their Masters, and seize their Plantations: Among these one *Berkinhead*, a Servant to Mr. *Smith* of *Purton* in *Gloucester* County, was one, and he repenting, discover'd it. Upon which notice was sent to the Governour at *Greenspring*, his Seat so call'd, who understanding that the Conspirators were to rendezvous at *Poplar Spring* near *Purton*, sent a Party of Militia-Horse to surprize them as they came. Accordingly some were taken, others made their Escape, and informing their

Fellows

Fellows of
such as were
appointed.
Berkinhead h
stow'd on him
Thanksgiving
the day on w
cution. The
Fort at *James*
for a Retreat
which Order
being loath t
over; they
Pieces of Ca
they shou'd b

In *England*
was thought
Prohibited th
were first lai
them. Thi
lower, and
in return p
the Planting
keep up the
the desir'd
refus'd to
sufficiently
ed again to
and the Ag
then at *James*
vernour of
Act void.
their Loss,
and all for
rope, bore
raise Disco
sturbances

Tho the
to expect
land, yet
ry's, the C
for their
also; the
an Assem

Fellows of the Discovery of the Plot, prevented such as were on the Road, from coming to the Place appointed. Four of the Conspirators were hang'd; *Berkinhead* had his Freedom, and 200 l. Sterling bestow'd on him for a Reward; an Anniversary Day of Thanksgiving was appointed on the 13th of Sept. the day on which the Plot was to have been put in execution. The King hearing of it, sent Orders to build a Fort at *James-Town*, to curb the Mutineers, and serve for a Retreat to the Governour on the like Occasion; which Orders were never obey'd. The *Virginians* being loath to be at the Charge, when the Danger was over; they only rais'd a Battery of some small Pieces of Cannon. A very poor Defence, if ever they shou'd be forc'd to make use of it.

In *England* another Act of Parliament pass'd, which was thought to be a Hardship upon this Colony. It prohibited their having any Foreign Goods but what were first landed in *England*, and thence exported to them. This reduc'd the Price of Tobacco still lower, and rais'd that of all European Goods. They in return prohibited, by an Act of their Assembly, the Planting of Tobacco for one Year, in order to keep up the Demand for it; but this Act had not the desir'd effect; because the Province of *Maryland* refus'd to consent to it, and stock'd the Market sufficiently to keep down the Price. They attempt'd again to have the Planting of Tobacco stinted, and the Agents of *Carolina* and *Maryland*, who were then at *James-Town*, consented to it. But the Governour of *Maryland* evaded it, and Proclaimed the Act void. Thus the poor Planters drudg'd on to their Loss, their Tobacco yielded little or nothing, and all sorts of Goods that were imported from *Europe*, bore very high Prizes, which was enough to raise Discontents and Murmurs, and produce the Disturbances that soon after happen'd.

Tho the *Virginians* had all the Reason in the World to expect a Compliance from the People of *Maryland*, yet they condescended to send Agents to *St. Mary's*, the Capital of the Provinces, as it were to Petition for their Consent. In which they were unsuccessful also; the Governour telling 'em, *He wou'd not call an Assembly on purpose.*

About this time there were Attempts made to prevent Ships unlading any where at the Master's Pleasure, that no Forreign Goods might be imported, which had not been landed in *England*.

It had been found impracticable to oblige all Ships to enter at *James-Town*, and afterwards disperse themselves up and down in the several Rivers whither they were bound; and were us'd to unload their Cargoes, and load again, even at the very Doors of the Merchants to whom they were consign'd; which gave them many Opportunities of bringing in prohibited Goods: wherefore his Majesty order'd that Forts should be built in the several Rivers; that all Ships should ride under those Forts; and those Places only be the Ports of Trade.

Had these Orders been obey'd, it would necessarily have caus'd People to have resorted to such Places; Houses would have been built, and Towns rais'd by degrees, without the Force of an Act; which has little Influence on the Wills of People, and in Free Governments, where Mens Properties are concern'd, the Laws are always tender of using too much Violence, unless the immediate Safety of the Commonwealth requires it.

The Plague and Fire happening at *London* when these Forts were about to be built, put a stop to the Undertaking, and it never was prosecuted afterwards; for want of which, the Dutch often insulted the Coasts in the Wars between *England* and *Holland*, and took the Ships out of the Harbours.

To defend them against any Invasion from the Enemy, a few Batteries were rais'd, which contributed little to their Security.

Sir *William Berkley*, to remedy the Evil of the low Price of Tobacco, earnestly recommended, and heartily encourag'd the Silk and Linnen-Manufactures, Pot-Ash and Hemp: He set an Example himself at his own Plantation; and it had been well for the Colony if they had industriously follow'd it.

The Indians all this while continu'd quiet; indeed they durst not offend the English, who were now grown so powerful, that they could send an Army of 6 or 7000 Men into the Field, and leave twice as many at home to look after their Plantations.

He

He sent out
dians, to mak
went from *App*
days time rea
they cross'd w
and then desc
found an incre
does and Turki
almost to rea
big as small Pl
Farther forw
scended backw
several days, a
perceive that
they suppos'd
ny's approach.

The Savage
ded to pass for
bins. They f
that made Sal
they suffer'd n
them: And n
Arguments he
forward, the
farther; so th

On the Re
of his Travels
solv'd to go i
it, nam'd the
ty Governou
vour of the
for his Depar
which ruin'd

In the Y
Enterprize,
Indians, ma
Harris with
as little Adv
gave a Cor
the South-V

He went
the Lake S
ble in two
was in an

He sent out Capt. Batt with 14 English, and 14 Indians, to make Discoveries. This little Company went from Appamatox in Charles-County, and in seven days time reach'd the Foot of the Mountains, which they cross'd with great Difficulty in three days more; and then descend'd into fruitful Vallies, where they found an incredible Quantity of Deer, Elks, Buffaloes and Turkies, so tame, that they would suffer them almost to reach them. They also found Grapes as big as small Plums.

Farther forward they came to a Rivulet, which descend'd backwards. They travell'd down that Stream several days, and coming to some Cabbins, they could perceive that Indians had lately been there, and as they suppos'd fled away at Capt. Batt and his Company's approach.

The Savages he had with him could not be perswaded to pass some Marshes that were beyond those Cabbins. They said there liv'd a Nation a little farther that made Salt, and sold it to their Neighbours; that they suffer'd no body to return who had been amongst them: And notwithstanding Capt. Batt us'd all the Arguments he could think of to perswade them to go forward, the cowardly Indians would not stir a step farther; so the Company were forc'd to return.

On the Report Capt. Batt made to the Governour of his Travels and Adventures, Sir William Berkley resolv'd to go in Person: He had made Preparations for it, nam'd the Man who was to have been his Deputy Governour, got the Assembly to pass an Act in favour of the Enterprize; and just as things were ready for his Departure, Col. Bacon's Rebellion broke out, which ruin'd the Design.

In the Year 1670. 4 or 5 Years before Capt. Batt's Enterprize, Col. Collet with 9 English Horse, and 5 Indians, march'd up in the Country; and so did Major Harris with 20 English Horse, and 5 Indians; but to as little Advantage as Batt's: After whom, Sir William gave a Commission to a German Surgeon to discover the South-West Parts of Virginia.

He went along the Foot of the Mountains as far as the Lake Sherre, and discover'd them to be passable in two places. This Man reported, that while he was in an Indian Town near the Mountains, there came

came 4 Savages on an Embassy to the King of that Town, from a King who liv'd beyond the Mountains.

He brought back an Emerald, and some Spanish Money which he had of the Indians bordering on the Lake there; and this rais'd Conjectures, that the Spaniards are seated near the back of those Mountains.

The Rebellion we are going to speak of, being one of the most extraordinary Events that ever happen'd in the English Plantations, we shall be larger in our Account of it, which we have taken from publick and private Authorities.

The Author of it, Col. *Nathaniel Bacon, Jun.* was a Gentleman who had been liberally bred in England, having study'd some time at the Temple: He was young, bold, active, handsome, and eloquent: His Merit advanced him to the degree of a Counsellor; and his good Qualities got him the Love and Respect of the People, who were at that time very much disaffected with the Government, and ready to take Fire; which *Bacon* perceiving, blew up the Coals of Dissention among them so much, that at last it burst out into a Flame.

Before we come to the Fact, it will be proper to let the Reader into the Causes of the Peoples Murmurs and Resentments; of which these four were the chief:

The Causes of it.

1. *The low Price of Tobacco in England; and the high Prices of all Goods exported thence to Virginia.*
2. *The Grants made by King Charles, of several Parts of their Country to Noblemen in England; in some of which several of their Plantations were included.*
3. *The Burdens laid upon them by the Parliament in England; and Taxes by the Assembly in Virginia.*
4. *The Disturbances given them by the Indians.*

Of all these Grievances, that of the Grants was the most intolerable: Their Property being given away from them, after they had been at great Trouble, Hazard and Charge, to make Settlements.

The Assembly taking the bad Condition of many of the Planters, by the vexatious Suits, and the Expence they were forc'd to be at about their Titles to their Planta-

Plantations, Secretary of England, to receive a new Tax for their Voyage, because the

on. After a Year, they had Redress.

their Rage enflam'd, it would be; and those compound

man. The Indians very quiet till some at their own Fire, to trade New-Tork.

When the and con- traded with Market, and Dutch stay'd peaceably; they'd themselves the A made of it, them; and in them as to rob them

The Indi by the Loss of Sir Wil which they them; and unity, the Cruelty to their Losses venting Murder

mentations, into Consideration; deputed Mr. Lud-
well Secretary of *Virginia*, and Col. Park to go to
England, to represent the Matter to the King, and pe-
tion for Redress.

A new Tax was levy'd, to defray the Charge of
their Voyage; and this was the more burthensome,
because the *Agents* did not succeed in their Negotia-
tion.

After a Year's Patience in waiting for News from
them, they had Advice, that there were little hopes
of Redress. Upon which they grew outrageous; and
their Rage ended in Rebellion. King *Charles* hearing
of it, would not hearken to their Agents Remonstran-
ces; and those of them who had Money, were forc'd
to compound with the Grantees for 3 or 400 *l.* a
man.

The Indians ever since their last Massacre, had kept *The Indi-
ans stir.*
very quiet till lately: And now they began to be trou-
some at the Head of the Bay of *Chesapeake*, and on
their own Frontiers. Those at the Head of the Bay
us'd to trade with the Dutch in *Monadas*, since call'd
New-York.

When the Indians travell'd thither, they pass, go-
ing and coming, by the Frontiers of *Virginia*, and
traded with the *Virginians*; who had the first of their
Market, and the Choice of their Furs. While the
Dutch stay'd at *Monadas* this Traffick went on very
peaceably; but as soon as the English, who had pos-
sess'd themselves of *New-York* and the Trade, under-
stood the Advantage their Countrymen in *Virginia*
made of it, they treacherously set the Savages against
them; and succeeded so well, that instead of calling
on them as Friends, they never came, but to murder
or rob them.

The Indians on their own Frontiers were provok'd
by the Loss of their Trade, which decay'd daily; and
by Sir *William Berkley's* Attempts for Discoveries,
which they apprehended was intended to destroy
them; and therefore, whenever they had an Oppor-
tunity, they never fail'd to shew their Hatred and
Cruelty to the English; who being grown peevish by
their Losses and Grievances, were glad of an Occasion
for venting their Fury on the Indians; and on the Cry
of Murders committed by them, most of the poorer
fort

fort demanded to be led against them, resolving utterly to extirpate all the Nations of the Savages. They gather'd together in riotous and tumultuous Bands running from one Plantation to another, without Head, crying out against the Barbarity of the Natives the Murder of their Countrymen, and engaging more and more every day to undertake an Expedition for Revenge.

*Sir. Wil.
Berkley
opposes
Bacon's
Designs.*

The Governour, who was jealous of his Prerogative, would not suffer them to judge when 'twas fit to make War; and the more they were for it, the more obstinate he was not to allow them to take Arms. However, they continu'd their Meetings, and Col. Bacon fell in with them, approv'd of their Zeal for the Service of their Country, aggravated the Calamities they endur'd by the Indians, and complain'd of the Want of a Regulation in Trade.

Bacon chosen General by the People.

The Multitude were transported with Joy that they had got a Man of his Quality and Merit among them; and immediately chose him their General: Which Post he accepted; and by his Eloquence and obliging Carriage so charm'd them, that they were all to a Man entirely at his Devotion.

He knew the Danger of the Step he had taken, and yet his Ambition, or his Interest, (for 'twas thought his Design was to engross the whole Indian Trade to himself) still spur'd him on to open Rebellion. He muster'd his Men, exercis'd them, and prepar'd them for Action, the Pretence being a War with the Indians, which was at that time a very plausible one: To reconcile his Ambition with his Duty, he sent to the Governour for a Commission; and order'd the Messenger to represent the Mischiefs the Savages did, so deplorably, that Sir William might think himself oblig'd by the Necessity of their Affairs, to make him General.

The Council had such an Esteem of Col. Bacon's Merit, that the Governour did not think it safe to deny his Request flatly; so he answer'd the Messenger, *He would consult the Council, and send him word what Resolution they came to about it.* But Bacon had not Patience to stay for the Result of their formal Debates. He sent again and again to Sir William, to issue out a Commission, and dispatch it away to him, that he might

might lead
ag, They had
and they r
Governour sent h

'Twas out
making Arms
with him, he
went to Jame

He took his
who, far fr
Thanks for h
the common

He laid be
Borderers; k
Savages; and
them from th
the future; if

The Govern
mission, com
ing too freely
which he ex
to be reven
sufficient to c

Bacon bro
and went out
Sir William
him; sendin
he landed at
shore at.

His Order
return to J
chastizing hi
and by fair V
his intended
persisted in
Sir William
were near
have reveng
ted upon h
ing the M
Murders an
which seem
hand.

might lead the Volunteers against the Indians; saying, *They had already chosen him for their General; and they resolv'd to begin the War, whether the Governour sent him the Commission, or not.*

'Twas out of Caution that he desir'd it, to justify his taking Arms; and finding Sir William prevaricated with him, he with forty of his Men in his own Sloop, went to James-Town himself, to get what he wanted: He took his Seat at the Council-Board, like a Man, who, far from having committed a Fault, deserv'd Thanks for his Zeal for the Publick Good, and against the common Enemy.

He laid before the Council the *miserable State of the Borders; how they were plunder'd and murder'd by the Savages; and how ready the Volunteers were to drive them from the Borders, and prevent such Calamities for the future; if they had a Warrant to do so.*

The Governour instead of granting Bacon a Commission, commanded him to disperse; and for speaking too freely before the Council, suspended him: By which he exasperated a Man, who had it in his Power to be reveng'd, when he himself had not Strength sufficient to oppose him.

Bacon broke up from the Council-Table in a heat; and went out, with an Intention to retire to his Men. Sir William fill'd a long Boat, and made after him; sending away some Horse to stop him when he landed at Sandy-Point, the Place he design'd to go ashore at.

His Orders were obey'd here; and Bacon forc'd to return to James-Town. The Governour instead of chastizing his Insolence, receiv'd him very graciously; and by fair Words, endeavour'd to dissuade him from his intended Enterprize: But Bacon was resolute, and persisted in his Demand of a Commission, knowing Sir William durst not do him any hurt; when there were near 1000 Men in Arms, who would severely have reveng'd whatever Punishment had been inflicted upon him: Besides, while they were disputing the Matter in Council, fresh News came of Murders and Robberies committed by the Indians; which seem'd to warrant Col. Bacon's Design and Demand.

How-

However the Governour, who was as jealous of his Prerogative, as he was zealous for the Welfare of the Colony, would not grant him the Commission, because it look'd as if it was extorted from him, and that there was a Power in *Virginia* superior to his own.

Comes to
James-
Town
with his
Army.

Bacon seeing he could get nothing by fair Means, made his Escape out of *James-Town*, and posted away to the Volunteers; of whom he led 6 or 700 to the Town, and drew them up in Battalia before the State-House, where the Assembly were sitting; so that he had now the Governour, Council, and Assembly of *Virginia* in his Power; and may be said to be Master of the Colony.

Forces the
Governor
to give him
a Commis-
sion.

The Assembly, besides that many of them wish'd well to *Bacon's* Enterprize, were afraid of offending him; so they drew up a Commission themselves, and presented it, with an Address to Sir *William Berkley*, desiring him to sign it.

By this Commission, he was constituted General of all the Forces in *Virginia*; and Sir *William*, much against his Inclination, sign'd it.

As soon as *Bacon* had it, he march'd towards the Frontiers, and was chearfully follow'd by his Men; and no doubt, had not Sir *William Berkley* done what he could to hinder his Proceedings, these Forces, under such a General, would have conquer'd all the Nations of the Indians to the Mountains.

'Tis true, the *Virginians* did not want Room, yet the Savages were so false and cruel to them of late, that it seems to have been their Interest to have got rid of such troublesome Neighbours; and so the People of *Virginia* generally thought at that time.

He is pro-
claim'd a
Rebel.

When *Bacon* had modestly withdrawn his Troops, to leave the Assembly free, the Governour prevail'd with them to consent that his Commission should be revok'd, which was done: Then Sir *William* proclaim'd him a Rebel; commanded his Followers to deliver him up, and disperse, on pain of being treated like Traitors: He also issu'd out Orders for raising the Militia; and made Preparations for a Civil War.

The People were generally exasperated at this double Dealing with Col. *Bacon*; and his Soldiers unanimously resolv'd to live and die with him. Instead of marching against the Indians, as they design'd, they

demand'd to
March they
sided with S
The Gove
of the Bay,
which was a
had the gre
having still
fore he had
A little
these Disor
100000 l. E
endanger'd
con's Death
leaving Jan
Col. *Bacon*
at Middle-
Council sig
publish'd a
and an Affo
fers, till the
Persons dep
They de
am Berkley
Civil War,
to the great
rry. That
Good; and
Proceedings
In the m
Friends tog
Reasons w
while they
The Gover
Bacon by
provided
Bay. So
and Renc
kill'd, and
Thus e
must hav
were reso
dur'd; a
Loyalty

demanded to be led back to *James-Town*; and in their March they fell upon the Lands and Houses of such as sided with Sir *William*.

The Governour fled to *Accomack*, on the other side of the Bay, hoping the Inhabitants of that County, which was at a distance from those Parts where *Bacon* had the greatest Interest, would espouse his Quarrel; having still no better Disposition to Peace, than before he had proclaim'd Col. *Bacon* a Rebel.

A little Moderation in him would have remedy'd these Disorders, which put the King and Colony to 100000 l. Expence to compose them; and would have endanger'd the Ruin of the Country, had not *Bacon*'s Death prevented it; for upon the Governour's leaving *James-Town*, and abdicating the Government, Col. *Bacon* assembled the Gentlemen of the Country at *Middle-Plantation*; himself and four others of the Council signing the Writ of Summons; where they publish'd a Declaration of the occasion of their meeting, and an Association to stand by *Bacon* against all Opposers, till the King was fully inform'd of the Matter, by Persons deputed by General *Bacon*.

They declar'd, among other things, that Sir *William Berkley* had fomented and stir'd up the People to a Civil War, and withdrawn himself from his Government, And publish'd a Declaration of the great Astonishment and Unsettlement of the Country. That the Army rais'd by *Bacon* was for the publick clarification Good; and that the Country justify'd him in all his Proceedings.

In the mean time Sir *William* was busy in getting his Friends together, to make head against the Rebels, whose Reasons wou'd have had little weight with King *Charles*, while they argu'd with their Swords in their Hands. The Governour was still obstinately bent on reducing *Bacon* by Force; and in order to it, several Sloops were provided to transport the Men he had rais'd over the Bay. Some of his Parties met with some of *Bacon*'s, and Rencounters happen'd; in which some Men were kill'd, and some taken.

Thus every thing tended to a Civil War, which must have had very terrible Effects, for *Bacon*'s Men were resolute, and enrag'd at the Hardships they endur'd; and Sir *William Berkley*'s, animated by the Loyalty of their Leader, were as furious and implacable

The Governour flies from him.

The Gentlemen join with him.

against the Governor.

cable as the Generals, whom they call'd and treated as Rebels.

Bacon was much Superiour in Numbers; but the Governour depending on Supplies from *England*, assur'd himself that He shou'd at last be too strong for him, and all his Adherents.

The King when he was inform'd of this Rebellion, was so far from hearkning to the Pretences of *Bacon's* Assembly, that he order'd a Squadron of Men of War to be fitted out, and a Regiment of Soldiers to embark aboard it for *Virginia*. This Squadron was commanded by Sir *John Berry*, and set Sail about *Christmas*, in the year 1676. The Hopes of these Succours

Col. *Bacon*
dies.

confirm'd the Governour in his Severity, and all Terms of Accomodation were offer'd to no purpose. Such was the dreadful Prospekt of Affairs in *Virginia*, when happily for the Peace of the Colony Col. *Bacon* dy'd at Dr. *Green's* House in *Glouster-County*. He was privately bury'd, and the Place kept very secret, to prevent his Enennies insulting his Body, as would have been done, cou'd the Corps have been found; for strict Enquiry was made after it, *With a Design* to expose his Bones to Publick Infamy.

Sir *William*
Berkley
returns.

The Death of the General broke all the Measures of the Malecontents; Col. *Ingram*, his Lieutenant General, and Col. *Walklate*, his Major General, laid down their Arms on promise of Pardon. The rest follow'd their Example, and Sir *William Berkley* return'd to *James-Town*, after *Bacon* and his Assembly had been about six Months in Possession of the Government of all the Countries on that side of the Bay, and had influenc'd the Affairs on the other side. Peace being restor'd, the Governour had leisure to punish the Criminals; but having promis'd them all Pardons, on their Submission, cou'd not do it without breaking his word. Col. *Johnson*, and Col. *Walklate* were turn'd out of all their Places, and incapacitated of bearing Offices in the Colony for the future. As for his Proceeding with the rest, he cou'd not come to any Resolution, till he had Orders from *England*, which he did not receive; for that Affair was left to Commissioners, that were sent on purpose by King *Charles*, to inquire into it; and the Lord *Colepepper* who succeeded him in the Government, was intrusted with the Power of punishing

punishing or
Disorders con
were very fata

James-Town
to the Ground
under *Bacon*, v
to the Houses
thus this Unf
that Name, su
recover'd ev'n

All Sorts
Stock ran to
of these Confu

cher'd the Inb
stroy'd the Pl
that the *Virgin*

plant them and
Bounds: The
their Liberty i

than Slaves to
Country in Pe
his Squadron

which landed
were kept in
for them; an

for *England*, l
ry Governour.

England, and
till he dy'd.

World to be
his Health, an
too much haff

Majesty. He
the King had
highly appro

He had be
Year 1640, t
ty eight year

pation, wher
tho not actual

He was do
ging Manufac
conveniencies h
Loyalty, or

punishing or pardoning those who had a hand in the Disorders committed in the late Rebellion, which were very fatal to the Country.

James-Town, the Capital of the Colony, was burnt to the Ground by Capt. *Richard Lawrence*, an Officer under *Bacon*, who, when his Men refus'd to set fire to the Houses, did it with his own Hands: and thus this Unfortunate City, which never deserv'd that Name, suffer'd so much, that she has not since recover'd ev'n the Condition she was then in.

All Sorts of Improvements were neglected, Stock ran to ruin, the Indians taking an Advantage of these Confusions, fell upon the Borders, and butcher'd the Inhabitants without Mercy. They destroy'd the Plantations on the Frontiers so much, that the *Virginians* have hardly to this day been able to plant them and stock them, much less to extend their Bounds: Tho the Savages are brought so low that their Liberty is precarious, and they are little better than Slaves to the English. *Bacon* was dead, and the Country in Peace before Sir *John Berry* arriv'd with his Squadron and the Regiment he had aboard, which landed in *February* following. The Souldiers were kept in pay, tho there was no Employment for them; and soon after Sir *William Berkley* went for *England*, leaving *Herbert Jeffreys*, Esq; his Deputy Governour. Sir *William* fell sick on his Arrival in *England*, and his Sicknesh confin'd him to his Chamber till he dy'd. The King who had all the Reason in the World to be pleas'd with him, enquir'd often after his Health, and forbad him to hazard it, by making too much haste to Court. Sir *William* never saw his Majesty. However he had the satisfaction to hear the King had done him the Honour to declare, He highly approv'd of his Conduct in *Virginia*.

He had been Governour of that Colony from the Year 1640, to 1678. when he dy'd. In all thirty eight years, if we take in the Time of the Usurpation, when his Commission was virtually in force, tho not actually.

He was doubtless a Great Friend to it by encouraging Manufactures and Building. And whatever Inconveniencies he was drawn into by the Warmth of his Loyalty, or Zeal for the Church, ought to be excus'd

1677.

Herbert
Jeffreys,
Esq; De-
puty Go-
vernour.

Sir Willi-
am Berk-
ley dies in
England,

His Cha-
racter.

for the Honour and Honesty of the Man's Intentions. Those who liv'd on the Spot, have a great Respect for his Memory, and they who are the best Judges of his Merit, almost speak of him as a wise and a just Governour.

Mr. Jeffreys's first Care after Sir William Berkley's Departure, was to make Peace with the Indians: To that purpose he held an Assembly at *Middle Plantation*, where *Bacon's* Convention met, and Overtures of Peace were agreed on and concluded in *May*, 1677. On the 29th of that Month, the Kings of the several Nations were invited to come and sign the Peace, and Partake in the Rejoicings of that Day, which the Governour celebrated with more than usual Solemnity, in Commemoration of his Majesty's Birth and happy Restoration.

A Solemn
Peace with
the Indians.

The Indian Kings and Queens came to the Place appointed, and were kindly receiv'd by the Commissioners and Council; And Silence being Proclaim'd, the Articles of the Peace were Publickly read, and each of them expounded by Interpreters. After which the Queen of *Pamunke* was desir'd to come within the Bar of the Court to Sign the Treaty in behalf of her self, and several Nations that were united under her Subjection. She did it cheerfully, and deliver'd the Instrument to the Governour, of which he gave her back the Counter-part; and on the Exchanging those Instruments the Field-pieces were discharg'd.

The Queen, and the other Indian Princes were nobly entertain'd by the English, and the next day return'd to their Kingdoms. This is the last formal Peace that was made with the Savages. And now they are sunk so low, that if they shou'd dare to give the English any Disturbance, a Troop of Militia-Horse wou'd cut 'em all to Pieces. They do the *Virginians* more good than harm by their Trade and Services, and are suffer'd to enjoy the vain Name of Kingdoms, tho' *Kentish Town* is an Empire, compar'd to the biggest of them, as will appear in another Chapter. The Governour and Assembly had giv'n the Law to them in this Treaty, which, tho' they thought hard measure, they were oblig'd to comply with.

Mr. Jeffreys
Chickely was

He did not
remembered,
bly, for bui
great Rivers
der'd to kee
munition we
vages. The
was frequent
past an Act
want of Shi
In the Ye
King had ma
and brought
land, to be

He summ
derstanding
count, as h
to keep him
wherein the
nour were
sent to some

The Lord
year of the
on account
a year for
made him
sions, into
at 30 s. for
20 s. for ea
since been
by an Act
ges, his Lo
turn'd very
Assembly
lowering t
try's being
where it p
der'd a Bi

The G
them, it
lue of the
with him

Mr

Mr. *Jeffreys* dy'd the following Year, and Sir *Henry Chickely* was appointed Deputy-Governour in his Place. 1678. Sir Henry Chickely Deputy Governor.

He did nothing Extraordinary, or worthy to be remembred, except procuring an Act of the Assembly, for building Magazines at the Heads of the four great Rivers, where Men in constant Pay were order'd to keep Guard, and Stores of Arms, and Ammunition were laid up, to the great Terror of the Savages. The same Assembly observing that Tobacco was frequently imported from *Carolina* and *Maryland*, pass'd an Act against it, to streighten those Colonies for want of Shipping.

In the Year 1679. the Lord *Colepepper*, whom the King had made Governour of *Virginia*, arriv'd there, and brought with him several Acts drawn up in *England*, to be pass'd into Laws. 1679. The Lord Colepepper Governor.

He summon'd an Assembly, and the Members understanding he had a Power to call such to an Account, as had been concern'd in *Bacon's* Rebellion, to keep him in a good Humour, pass'd several Acts, wherein the Authority and Interest of the Governour were enlarg'd, and he in return gave his Consent to some that were grateful to the Country.

The Lord *Colepepper* obtain'd a Salary of 2000 *l.* a year of the King, which before was but 1000 *l.* He on account of his Quality, got an Allowance of 150 *l.* a year for House-Rent, and turn'd the usual Presents made him by Masters of Ships, of Wine or Provisions, into a certain Sum of Money, settling the Rate at 30 *s.* for each Ship above one hundred Tun, and 20 *s.* for each below that Burden, which Duty has since been levy'd as strictly as if it had been given by an Act of the Assembly. Besides these Advantages, his Lordship had one in view, that wou'd have turn'd very well to account, had it taken effect. The Assembly taking into Consideration their Loss by lowering their Coin, which had occasion'd the Country's being almost drain'd of it by Exportion to Places where it pass'd for more than it did in *Virginia*, order'd a Bill to be brought in for raising it.

The Governour interposing in the matter, told them, it was the King's Prerogative to alter the Value of the Coin, and the Prerogative being intrusted with him, he wou'd do it by Proclamation. The Assembly

The History of Virginia.

sembly durst not oppose such an Argument. Those were not times to dispute the Prerogative Royal; so the Governour's Reasons were allow'd, and the Act dropt.

His Lordship having gain'd his Point, privately bought up all the light Pieces of Eight he could get, at 5 s. the Piece; and then put forth a Proclamation, to raise the Value of them to 6 Shillings: He soon after produc'd an Order to pay and disband the Regiment that had been sent over by Sir John Berry; and accordingly he paid them off with those Pieces at 6 s. a piece; and they were forc'd to take them at that rate.

This Lord however found very great Inconveniencies by his raising the Coin, as well on account of his own Sallary, his Duty on Ships, as of the King's Taxes, which were paid in Pieces of Eight, at 6 s. a piece: The loss was like to be more than his Gain, by injuring the poor Soldiers. He affected a Despotick way of governing; and by his Proclamation repeal'd several Laws. The Virginians began to be afraid that the Acts of their Assembly would stand in force no longer than the Governour should think fit; and that his *Will and Pleasure* would be set over them instead of Laws and Ordinances.

This occasion'd fresh Murmurs; and had not Bacon's Rebellion been so lately suppress'd, it might have ended in Mutiny. The Assembly at their next Session, to put a stop to the like Evils, pass'd a particular Act to provide against the ill Conveniences of them.

The Lord Colepepper did not stay quite a Year in Virginia, before he embark'd for England: He left Sir Henry Chickely his Deputy Governour, the Country well settled, and the Crop so good, that the Planters made too much Tobacco, by which the Market was glutted, and the Price fell yet lower: And this produc'd a new Riot; for some of the Inhabitants, to raise the Price, agreed with their Neighbours, not only to destroy their own Tobacco, but all the Plants round the Country, where-ever they found them, while they were yet in their Beds.

Accordingly they cut up their own first; and then did so in other Plantations, whether the Owners consented, or not.

They destroy'd a great deal of sweet-scented Tobacco, and threaten'd to cut up all; but they had not

A Riot about Tobacco.

not Courage
The Offend
were cond
cutting bein
and was dec
Assembly.

The Lord
year, began
Northern N
ral Counties.

These Cou
sentatives to
the Assembl
others were
would never
triv'd to get
that end, ra
tatives and
the sole Pow
Pretences se
ctions from
the Quarrel
his Majesty
to the Gove
Lord though
thern Neck,
were severa
these he bou
his Cousin
liv'd in the
which he di
standing he
Assembly,
engage as n
his Proprie
he was in E

This Ge
for him; b

Col. Geo
also were
Ludwell ha
but had no

The Pe
and they

not Courage enough to go through with their Design. The Offenders were seiz'd, imprison'd, try'd, and were condemn'd to be Hang'd: Their Plant-cutting being adjudg'd to be Felony and Sedition; and was declar'd to be so by an Act of the next Assembly.

The Lord Colepepper returning in the following year, began to think of trumping up his Title to the *Northern Neck*, a large Territory, containing several Counties. 1680.

These Counties had the Privilege of sending Representatives to the Assembly, as well as the other: And the Assembly being the Supream Court to which all others were to appeal, he was afraid his Propriety would never be allow'd by them; wherefore he contriv'd to get the Appeals out of their hands; and to that end, rais'd such Divisions between the Representatives and Council, that the former pretending to the sole Power of Appeals, were encourag'd in their Pretences secretly by the Governour, till he had Instructions from the King; to whom having represented the Quarrel to the disadvantage of the Representatives, his Majesty order'd that all Appeals should be made to the Governour and Council: And now this Noble Lord thought he might put in his Claim to the *Northern Neck*, by a Grant from the Crown. There were several others concern'd in the Patent; and these he bought off: After which, he prevail'd with his Cousin Mr. Spencer, Secretary of Virginia, who liv'd in the *Northern Neck*, to side with the Patent; which he did till he dy'd: For his Lordship, notwithstanding he had broken the old Constitution of the Assembly, thought fit to proceed by fair Means, and engage as many of the Inhabitants as he cou'd to own his Propriety; as he did Col. Philip Ludwell, when he was in *England*, in the Year 1690.

This Gentleman undertook to manage his Matters for him; but could make nothing of it.

Col. George Brent, and Col. William Fitzhugh, who also were Inhabitants of the *Neck*, engag'd, as Col. Ludwell had done, to serve him as their Proprietor; but had no better Success than Col. Ludwell.

The People of the *Neck* address'd the Assembly, and they to the King; which had no effect, because

they had no Agent in *England* to sollicite the Affair: So the Inhabitants being tir'd with expecting Relief in vain, and weary'd by vexatious Suits with the Proprietor's Agents, thought it their Interest to compound with him, and pay him Quit-Rent. The first that did it was Col. *Richard Lee*, one of the Council; whose Example was follow'd by the rest: And Col. *Robert Carter*, another of the Council, and one of the greatest Freeholders of the *Northern Neck*, is at this time the Proprietor's Agent.

We have been the longer on this Propriety, because it was the Occasion of altering the Constitution of the Government; and besides is a very large Parcel of the Colony.

In other things his Lordship's Administration was very commendable; he regulated several Abuses that had crept into the Practice of the Courts, and prevented the Chicanry, so much complain'd of in *England*, which was beginning to corrupt the Law, and lessen'd the Expence the Clerks had contriv'd to put their Clients to. He demolish'd the Forts built by Sir *Henry Chickely*, they being a great Charge, and of little use to the Country: In their stead, he procur'd an Act to be pass'd, for some Troops of Horse to range on the Borders by turns, till there was no more fear of the Indians.

1683. In the year 1683. he return'd to *England*, and would go thither no more: upon which *Francis Lord Howard of Effingham* was sent over Governour. The Lord *Colepepper* had declar'd his Kinsman Mr. *Spencer* President of the Council; tho there were other Members who with more reason pretended to that Honour, being Elder than he; and the oldest Counsellour us'd always to be President; as the President in the Absence of the Governour, or Deputy Governour, always supplies his Place.

1684. Mr. *Spencer's* Presidency was attended with nothing remarkable. And the next Year, 1684. the Lord *Howard* arriv'd, with the same Resolution to get Money as his Predecessor had done: He condescended to share the Fees with his Clerks; oblig'd all Lawyers and Schoolmasters to take out Licenses to teach and plead; for which they paid according to their Abilities: He extorted excessive Fees for sealing Probats

of

of Wills, and considering the He threw Money without Trials as much as in those Proclamations full force as Law for paying were permitted a Pound Tobacco repeal'd by Parliament in Money

To which O daring in that hour, especially in Money by the

This Lord, the Colony, land, to make *Ludwell* did a and a faithful Lordship reme

We are oblig'd to make bold ence the Reader than excuse th

In the Year long loaded many thousand rather than pay on this Com coming to the Parliament v Duke of Mon

The Bill would not h mouth had n by his Rebel

This heav ment to the source of a having kept Means to follow'd up

of Wills, and Letters of Administration, without considering the Value of the Estates of the Deceas'd: He threw Men into Prison, and kept them there without Trials: He repeal'd Laws by Proclamation, as much as in him lay; for the Judges did not mind those Proclamations, but allow'd the Laws to be in as full force as ever, one excepted; and that was the Law for paying Quit-Rent; by which the Planters were permitted to pay Quit-Rent in Tobacco at 2 d. a Pound Tobacco falling afterwards, that Law was repeal'd by Proclamation, and the Payment demanded in Money or Tobacco at a Penny a Pound.

To which Order the *Virginians* submitted, no Man daring in that Case to stand Trial with the Government, especially because the Quit-Rent was reserv'd in Money by the Words of his Patent.

This Lord, by many other Exactions, so exasperated the Colony, that they sent Col. *Ludwell* over to *England*, to make their Complaints to the King. Mr. *Ludwell* did all that could be expected from a wise and a faithful Agent; but did not prevail to have his Lordship remov'd.

We are oblig'd for Connection of things, sometimes to make bold with Chronology; and the Convenience the Reader will find in it, will, we hope, more than excuse the Freedom we take.

In the Year 1685. that severe Duty, which has so long loaded Tobacco, and been the occasion of selling many thousand Hogsheads, at 12 d. a Hoghead, rather than pay the Custom and Charges, was impos'd on this Commodity, three Months after King *James's* coming to the Crown: It was obtain'd when the Parliament were in a warm fit of Loyalty, just on the Duke of *Monmouth's* Landing.

The Bill had been read before, but 'tis thought would not have pass'd so easily, if the Duke of *Monmouth* had not landed opportunely, and quicken'd it by his Rebellion.

This heavy Imposition has been a great Discouragement to the Industry of the Plantation, and is the source of all the Miseries the Planters since suffer'd, having kept them poor, and depriv'd them of the Means to support themselves in the long War that follow'd upon the Revolution.

The Lord *Howard* summon'd an Assembly; who laid the first Tax impos'd upon Liquors imported from the other Plantations. The Pretence was for rebuilding the State-house; which had lain in Ashes ever since Capt. *Lawrence* burnt *James-Town*.

His Lordship also erected a Court of Chancery; and took away that Jurisdiction from the General Court: He assum'd the Office of Chancellour; and the Counsellours were his Masters. He would not hold this Court in the State-house, because the General Court us'd to sit there: And therefore in opposition to them, he heard Causes in a Dining-room in a private House.

He exacted exorbitant Fees in his New Court; and made it turn very much to account. This Novelty was laid aside on his Lordship's going for *England*; and the General Court again resum'd their Antient Jurisdiction; which was as old as the Colony.

As the Lord *Howard* had shown an extraordinary Joy on King *James's* Accession to the Throne; an Account of which was publish'd in the Gazette: So he as joyfully proclaim'd King *William* on the Revolution; and soon after went for *England*, leaving *Nathaniel Bacon* Esquire, Father of Col. *Bacon*, President: During whose Administration the Project of a College first began: A Scheme of it was drawn up by the Projectors, and presented to the President and Council; who approving of it, the Matter was prepar'd to be laid before the Assembly.

The President had not time to call one himself; for 'twas not long before *Francis Nicholson* Esq; arriv'd, with the Character of the Lord *Howard's* Lieutenant. This Gentleman on his Arrival, study'd to grow Popular, by all the winning Arts which Persons in Power make use of, to engage the People: He made himself familiar with them; was solicitous about improving Trade, and encouraging Manufactures: He instituted Publick Games; and allotted Prizes to such as excell'd in Riding, Running, Shooting, Wrestling, and Back-sword. He enter'd heartily into the Project of the College.

That the Project might not stand still for want of Encouragement from the Assembly, which was not then sitting, a private Subscription was propos'd,

and

Nath. Bacon Esq;
President.
A College
set on foot.

Fran. Nicholson
Esq; Lieut.
Governor.

and agreed
five hundred
Council setti
good Exam
buted gener
when the Li
bly, the Ma
engag'd in i
King *William*
for it; and
England, to

The Asses
ment of the
&c. and ano
for it avail'd
nor even *James*
fore 'twas bu
Mr. *Nichol*
these and all
himself alw
Court.

The Lord
pal Govern
ply'd by Sir
mour of *New*
Sir *Edmun*
vernment w
sentatives w
they suspen
the Mercha
for their Ea
open in all
sters of thei
under a For
the Door o
plentifully
pleasure.

In *Engla*
procur'd a
Parts of
into Conf
by reason o
'twas found

and agreed to by the Governour, and two thousand five hundred Pounds subscrib'd; Mr. *Nicholson* and the Council setting the other Gentlemen of the Colony a good Example. The *London* Merchants also contributed generously towards it: And in the next Year, when the Lieutenant Governour summon'd an Assembly, the Matter was mov'd to them; who zealously engag'd in it, drew up an Address to their Majesties King *William* and Queen *Mary*, to grant a Charter for it; and sent the Reverend Mr. *James Blair* into *England*, to present it, and sollicite the Affair.

The Assembly pass'd an Act for the Encouragement of the Linnen Manufactures, the Leather Trade, &c. and another for Cohabitation: Yet all the Laws for it avail'd nothing; no Town was built by them; nor even *James-Town* rebuilt to the State 'twas in before 'twas burnt in the Rebellion.

Mr. *Nicholson* pay'd an extraordinary Respect to these and all other Acts of the Assembly, governing himself always strictly by them in the General Court.

The Lord *Howard* was dismiss'd from being Principal Governour in the Year 1692. and his Place supply'd by Sir *Edmund Andros*; who had been Governour of *New-England*. 1692. Sir Edm. Andros Governor.

Sir *Edmund* arriv'd in *February*; and began his Government with calling an Assembly. These Representatives were so manag'd by the Governour, that they suspended the Law for Cohabitation, which the Merchants of *London* were against; and found it for their Ease and Advantage to have the Trade alike open in all parts of the Capital Rivers; and the Masters of their Ships could not endure to think of lying under a Fort, or at Key, when they could come up to the Door of a Planter or Factor; live merrily and plentifully at his House, and unload and load at pleasure.

In *England*, Mr. *Neal*, the famous Projector, had procur'd a Patent to be Post-Master-General of those Parts of *America*. This Assembly took the Patent into Consideration, pass'd an Act in favour of it; but by reason of the distance of one House from another, 'twas found to be impracticable.

Low-
thorp's
Phil. Transf.
Vol. 2. p.
104.

In the following Year there happen'd a most violent Storm in this Province, which stop't the Course of the antient Channels, and made some where never were any : By which means, between the Bounds of *Virginia* and *Newcastle* in *Pensilvania*, are many navigable Rivers for Sloops and small Vessels.

Sir *Edmund Andros* was very fond of introducing the Statutes and Laws of *England* ; and even such as related to particular Customs in that Kingdom ; which was like to have brought all things into Confusion in the Courts of Justice : For the Acts of the Assembly being despis'd, those Laws that were the best Title most of the Planters had to their Estates, were forc'd to give way to Customs and Usages adapted to the Tenures in *England* : By which the *Virginians* were alarm'd, as if they were all at once threaten'd to be outed of their Holds.

No body knew what was Law ; and a great Man was so free, as to declare frequently, *They had none of them any Right to their Lands* : Tho what he meant by it was a Mystery he either cou'd not or wou'd not unfold.

Sir *Edmund* brought over the Charter for the College ; and Dr. *Thomas Bray* went thither to be President of it ; carrying with him a Library, well chosen for the Uses it was to be put to.

Several Professors also were preparing to go over ; but all that was done and given towards it came to nothing : The People were very ready to subscribe, but not so ready to pay in their Money : However, Contributions were sent from *England* ; which were promoted by the Example of their Majesties King *William* and Queen *Mary*, of Glorious Memory ; who by their own Royal Bounty, invited others to assist so charitable an Undertaking : And there was Money enough rais'd to build the College ; of which the Foundation was laid soon after Sir *Edmond Andros's* Arrival.

This Gentleman set up several Manufactures, and Fulling-Mills ; and was earnest with the Planters to propagate Cotton : He regulated the Management of the Secretary's Office ; which had been mightily neglected since *Bacon's* Rebellion. He commanded all the Publick Papers and Records to be sorted, and kept

in

exact Order ;
was careful to
ould be sav'd, to
the Clerks in
by these and
great way in ga
He was endea
ould the State-ho
the People ;
ected it, had l
In the Year 16
d been at the
and the Frenc
come at *Virginia*
Capt. *Lytcot*,
per, Capt. *Stru*
ans out of a bu
ead of an Infe
of their Crew
e Infection spr
that River c
The Plantation
er it.
In *November*
went from *Vi*
nia, with the
mov'd the Seat
to *Middle-Pla*
City in Honou
the Form of
burgh.
He procur'd
er against the
Capitol. Som
any publick
The Impositi
England and *V*
now a Tax of
s. for each
his Year was
the Ships retu
of their Load
siful.

exact Order ; and when the *State-house* was burnt, was careful to have them preserv'd ; and all that should be sav'd, to be again sort'd and register'd : He put the Clerks into a Method of dispatching Business ; and by these and other commendable Acts, went a great way in gaining the Esteem of the People.

He was endeavouring to find out easy Means to rebuild the *State-house*, which might not be burdensome to the People ; and in all likelihood would have effected it, had his stay been longer.

In the Year 1697. Admiral *Nevil's* Squadron, which had been at the *Havana* looking after Monsieur *Poin-* and the French Squadron, touch'd in their return at *Virginia* : The Admiral, Commodore *Mees*, Capt. *Lyttot*, Capt. *Holms*, Capt. *Bellwood*, Capt. *Over*, Capt. *Studley*, Capt. *Foster*, all the Dutch Captains out of 6 but one, and most of their Men, were dead of an Infectious Disease ; which the Remainder of their Crew brought to *Virginia* with them : And the Infection spread in *James-Town*, and the Country in that River carrying off several of the Inhabitants : The Plantation continu'd sickly a long time after it.

In November, 1698. Colonel *Nicholson*, who 1689. went from *Virginia* to *Maryland*, return'd to Vir- Col. Ni- cholson
nia, with the Character of Governour ; He re-
mov'd the Seat of his Government from *James-Town* Governor.
to *Middle-Plantation* ; where he began to build a
City in Honour of the King ; mark'd out the Streets
in the Form of a *W*. and call'd the Town *Williams-*
burgh.

He procur'd a stately Fabrick to be built there, over against the College ; and gave it the Name of the *Capitol*. Some Persons, who were not endow'd with any publick Principle, were against this Expense : The Impositions with which they were loaded in *England* and *Virginia*, keeping them always low. And now a Tax of 15 s. upon each Christian Servant ; and 10 s. for each Negro, was laid upon them. Besides, this Year was very sickly, and the Crop so short, that the Ships return'd home with not above one third part of their Loading ; but the next was healthy and plentiful.

About

1700.

About the Year 1700. a Pirate came into Lynnhaven-Bay, near the Mouth of *James-River*, and took out some Merchant-Ships that were fall'n down there in order to sail for *England*. It happen'd that a fine Vessel came into the Bay, and saw the Pirate engaged with one of the Merchant-men. This Vessel slipped the Pirate, and got into the River; where the *Sloop*, a Fifth Rate Man of War, Capt. *Passenger* Commander, lay, being newly arriv'd from *England*.

There was another Man of War, a Sixth Rate, Capt. *Aldred* Commander, in *Elizabeth-River*; but that was on the *Careen*, fitting out for a homeward Voyage.

The Master of the small Vessel posted to *Kiquora* where the Governour happen'd to be at that time to send away his Dispatches for *England*; and Captain *Passenger* was also gone thither to wait upon him, and pay his Respects to him on his Arrival.

When the Captain heard of the Pirate's being in the Bay, he was for hastening to his Ship as fast as he could, in hopes to come up with him. The Governor desir'd him to stay a little, and he would accompany him; so he and Capt. *Passenger* put to Sea and getting between the Capes and the River, forc'd the Pirate to come to an Engagement.

The Fight was sharp and bloody ; but at last the Pirate struck, and surrender'd at Discretion ; the Captain of the Privateer and his Crew being to be left to the King's Mercy.

It was represented by the Agents of the Colony *New-York* to King *William*, that *Virginia* being secur'd from the Indians and French by *New-York*, as being a Barrier, the *Virginians* ought to contribute toward building the Fort there.

The King referr'd the Matter to the Assembly *Virginia*; and the Governour thinking it a reasonable Proposal, very zealously espous'd it. The Assembly however drew up a Remonstrance against it, to this purpose; *That neither the Forts then in Building, nor any other that might be built in the Province of New-York, could in the least avail to the Defence and Security of Virginia; for that either the French or the Indians might invade that Colony, and not come within 100 Miles of any such Fort.*

**The Governor
takes a Pri-
vateer.**

This Remon
Assembly: W
900 l. himf
Virginians; TH
perits to bear
spirit, which t
roud to imitat
the Governour's
Col. Quarry
a Memorial,
Queen Ann
as Governour
nia would not s
Majesty's Order
and, out of his
the Security of
900 l. to answer
ing on her Ma
the Revenues of
And as Col.
the Security of
encourage fur
New-England i
two New-Engla
or 12 Indian
here, he sent
In the Year
French Private
Embargo on
and falling in
Camels were
Whole Beasts w
not heard how
Virginians succ
Barbadians; v
ort of Carriag
On the 9th
violent Hurri
remarkable, b
accidents. In
shore in their
rafts and Rig
the Plantation

This Remonstrance put a stop to the Affair in the Assembly: Whereupon the Governour contributed 900 l. himself, the Sum that was demanded of the Virginians; This was so generous an Action, that it seems to bear some Resemblance with that Roman spirit, which the Heroes of all Ages since have been proud to imitate; and the Glory of it, was, what all the Governour's Enemies admir'd and envy'd.

Col. Quarry of Virginia, then in England, declar'd a Memorial, deliver'd to the Council of Trade after Queen Anne's Accession to the Throne; That as soon as Governour Nicholson found the Assembly of Virginia wou'd not see their own Interest, nor comply with her Majesty's Orders, he went immediately to New-York; and, out of his great Zeal to the Queen's Service, and the Security of her Province, he gave his own Bills for 100 l. to answer the Quota of Virginia; wholly depending on her Majesty's Favour, to reimburse him out of the Revenues of that Province.

And as Col. Nicholson was generous in promoting the Security of the Province of New York, so was he to encourage such as fought for the Defence of that of New-England in the time of the Indian War: When two New-England Women having surpriz'd and kill'd 10 or 12 Indians, and had a Gift from the Assembly there, he sent them also a very noble Present.

In the Year 1701. the Governour hearing the French Privateers were busy on the Coasts, laid an Embargo on all Ships, to prevent their going out, and falling into their hands. The same Year some Camels were brought thither in some Guinea Ships; those Beasts would carry 1200 Weight: But we have not heard how they thriv'd there; and suppose the Virginians succeeded with them no better than the Barbadians; who were soon forc'd to lay down that sort of Carriage.

On the 8th of October, 1703. there happen'd a very violent Hurricane at Virginia; which was the more remarkable, because that Country is not subject to such accidents. In this Tempest several Ships were driven ashore in their Harbours; and others damag'd in their Masts and Rigging, and much Mischief done by it in the Plantations.

1701.

1703.

In

1704.

In the following Year Col. *Nicholson* return'd to *England*, having in his Government deserv'd a better Character of the Province of *Virginia*, than the late Author of the History of that Country is pleas'd to bestow upon him. The Reception he met with at Court, is a sufficient Demonstration that her Majesty approv'd of his Conduct; and all the World must condemn that Historian, otherwise Judicious and Eloquent, for suffering a private Pique to prevail over the Justice and Gratitude which was due to the Merit of the Governour.

George
Earl of
Orkney
Governor.
Benjamin
Notte
Esq; Dep.
Governor.

He was succeeded by *George* Earl of *Orkney*, Lieutenant General of Her Majesty's Armies; whose Deputy is *Benjamin Notte* Esq; During their Authority nothing extraordinary has happen'd in *Virginia* which Colony is now in a safe and flourishing Condition, having no just reason to complain of any thing but those Taxes, which the Preservation of their Religion and Liberty at this time makes necessary.

CH A P. II.

Containing a Geographical Description of *Virginia*; Of the Towns, Ports, Rivers, Forts, &c.

IN the former Chapter we have shewn how several Provinces, that at first went all under the Name of *Virginia*, were divided from it, by Patents granted to other Proprietors; who gave them other Names as *New-England*, *New-York*, *Maryland*, &c. to the North; and *Carolina* to the South: All which were a part of the Country that was by Queen *Elizabeth* call'd *Virginia*.

In process of Time that Name was lost to all, except the Tract of Land lying along the Bay of *Chesapeake*; in which are included *Virginia* and *Maryland* and both in common Discourse, are still call'd *Virginia*: But the Province that's properly so call'd, is bounded on the North by the great River *Patowmack* which parts it from *Maryland*; and on the South

by *Carolina*: on the West that have so cover'd; and *Californian* S

The Bound and in the Year sideration to on, 'tis rec Point Comfort hundred Miles and North-V the *Californian* in 100 Miles

Both this ate on the Cape *Henry* North. The part 9 Fath above 7.

The Bay Degrees North up in the Leagues with Sailors call

It receives which, like to the *Humb* that 'tis said In it are planted.

Virginia 49 Parishe vacant. T ter V.

We shall the most been said, English fir Defence: 140 Miles broad as the South ders on C

by *Carolina*: On the East it has the *Virginian Sea*; and *Bounds.* on the West and North-West, those Wilderesses that have so often been in vain attempted to be Discover'd; and are suppos'd to stretch themselves to the *Californian Sea*.

The Bounds of this Country are not well settled; and in the Year 1703. the Assembly had it under Consideration to fix them: But by common Computation, 'tis reckon'd to reach 200 Miles North from *Point Comfort* at the Mouth of *Chesapeac Bay*, and two hundred Miles South, including all the Land, West and North-West, from the Western or *Virginian*, to the *Californian Sea*, with the Islands on both Seas within 100 Miles of the Continent.

Both this Province and that of *Maryland* are situated on the Great Bay of *Chesapeac*; whose Mouth is ac Bay. *Cape Henry* on the South, and *Cape Charles* on the North. The Water in the Channel is for the most part 9 Fathom deep; but in some places not above 7.

The Bay is eighteen Miles broad; and lies in 37 Degrees North Latitude. It runs about 100 Leagues up in the Country; and is seven Miles over, 60 Leagues within Land. This is what our Modern Sailors call the Capes of *Virginia*.

It receives into it abundance of Navigable Rivers; which, like those in the North of *England*, flowing into the *Humber*, all loose themselves in this Bay; so big, that 'tis said all the Shipping in *Europe* can ride there. In it are several little Islands; some of which are planted.

Virginia is divided into 25 Counties; in which are 49 Parishes; 34 with Incumbents on them, and 15 vacant. The latter are distinguish'd by the Letter *V*.

We shall begin with those that lie on *James-River*, the most Southern in the Province: 'Twas, as has been said, call'd *Powhatan* by the Indians. Here the English first settled, and built two Forts for their Defence: but these are since demolish'd. It runs 140 Miles up in the Country; and is near a Mile broad as high as *James-City*. The first County on the South side of it, is *Norfolk County*; which borders on *Carolina*.

In

In this Shire stands the Parish of *Elizabeth*; it contains 112019 Acres, and is water'd by *Elizabeth-River*, which rises in it, and runs into *James-River*, between *East-Bay* and *West-Bay*. The next is,

Princess-Ann-County on the Coast: In which are 98305 Acres of Land, and the Parish of *Lynhaven V.* below *Cape Henry*. The next is,

Nansemond-County: In which are 131172 Acres of Land, and three Parishes; *Upper Parish*, *Lower Parish*, and *Chuckatuck*, all vacant. The River *Nansemond* rises in this Shire, and falls into *James-River*, above *Bennet's Creek*. The next is,

Ile-of-White-County: In which are 142796 Acres of Land, and two Parishes, *Warwick-Squeek* and *Newport*. Here's also a Spring that vents almost as great a Source of Water as *Holy-Well* in *Wales*. The next is,

Surry-County: In which are 111050 Acres of Land, and two Parishes, *Southwark V.* and *Lyons-Creek*. The next is,

Henrico-County, the uppermost on the South-side of *James-River*; it contains 148787 Acres of Land, and two Parishes, *Henrico* and *Bristol*. The next over against it on the North-side of the River are,

Prince George and *Charles-City*, Counties: In which are 161239 Acres of Land, and three Parishes; *Martin Brandon*, *Wyanoke*, *Westover*. The Parishes in the three last Counties are all supply'd with Ministers. In the County of *Henrico*, there was a Town call'd *Henricopolis*, which is fall'n to decay. Twenty Miles above the Falls, is the *Monacan* Town, where the French Refugees have settled; and next below *Charles-County* on the North-side of the River is,

James-County: In which are 108362 Acres of Land, and five Parishes, of which one lies on the other side of the River, as does part of the County. The Parishes are *Wallingford* and *Wilmington*, *James-City*, *Merchants Hundred V.* on the South-side of the River, and *Bruton*. This is reckon'd the chief County, because,

James-City stands in it, in a *Peninsula* on the North-side of *James-River*, about 40 Miles from the Mouth of it. There are several Brick Houses in it; and Taverns and Eating Houses, for the Convenience of

of Voyagers: not many now
es in all. In
three Forts, a
been ruin'd by
ment, or rather
The Removal
by Col. Nichol
sions of Affem
building the C
Town in the
Humour of the
seem'd to forth
Houses and In
Sir William Be
sidence, call'd
that 'tis danger
In the same Co
Williamsburg
remov'd thithe
about 7 Miles
Town are 20
bilies and Coun
Advantages, n
founded there,
that of a Coun
rather Battery
were brought
Col. Nicholson
to be erected,
Form of a W
angle of it is y
tis probable
People shall t
turn to their
County to thi
Tork-Count
James-River,
Acres of *La*
Tork, and *N*
Mouth of *Y*
Warwick-C
land, and 2 l

of Voyagers and Travellers: But the Buildings are not many nor contiguous, not above 60 or 70 Houses in all. In this Town there were formerly two or three Forts, and many fair Streets; but they have been ruin'd by Fire and Revolutions in the Government, or rather in the Disposition of the Governours. The Removal of the Courts of Justice to *Williamstadt*, by Col. *Nicholson*; His residing and holding the Sessions of Assembly and General Court there, and the building the College there, help'd to keep *James-Town* in the mean Condition he found it; and the Hamour of the *Virginians* to live upon Plantations, seem'd to forbid that City to hope for an Increase of Houses and Inhabitants. Not far from *James-City* Sir *William Berkley* built a handsome House for his Residence, call'd *Greenspring*, where is a Spring so cold, that 'tis dangerous to drink of it in the Summer time. In the same County stands,

Williamsburgh; Which before the late Governour remov'd thither, was call'd *Middle Plantation*; 'tis about 7 Miles from *James-City* within Land. In this Town are 20 or 30 Houses, and the Publick Assemblies and Courts are held there; yet neither these Advantages, nor that of the College and Academy founded there, cou'd procure it a better Figure than that of a Country Village. Here is a small Fort or rather Battery mounted with 10 or 12 Guns, which were brought thither from *James-City* by order of Col. *Nicholson*, who caus'd a State-house or Capital to be erected, and several Streets to be laid out in the Form of a *W*; but we do not hear that a *V*, or one Angle of it is yet finish'd, or ever likely to be so: For 'tis probable that whenever the Government, or the People shall think of building a City, they will return to their Old Capital, *James-City*. The next County to this is,

York-County. It lies between the two Rivers, *James-River*, and *York-River*, and contains 60767 Acres of Land, and three Parishes; *Hampton*, *V. York*, and *New-Pokoson*. The latter stands at the Mouth of *York-River*. The next County to it

Warwick-County: In which are 38444 Acres of Land, and 2 Parishes, *Denby V.* and *Mulberry-Island V.*

The History of Virginia.

The River *Pokoson* rises in it, and runs into the Bay of *Chesapeac* near the Mouth of *York-River*. The next to this is,

Elizabeth-City and County, the least in *Virginia*, containing but 29000 Acres of Land, and one Parish. *Elizabeth-City*, which tho never very great, is less than when 'twas first built: It had then several good Houses of Brick and Stone, and a Fort was rais'd there in the Dutch-War; all which are Ruins already, there being a sort of Fatality which attends the Towns in *Virginia*, so that they are like never to come to any thing, unless the very nature of the Inhabitants is quite alter'd; for they have now nothing so little in their thoughts, as the building of Towns. The Parish-Church of *Elizabeth-City* is supply'd with a Minister. Crossing the Neck of Land to *Pokoson*, we come to the Mouth of *York-River*, which the Indians call'd *Pamunky*, a Name the upper Branch of this River in *King William's County* still retains.

This River is navigable 60 Miles with Great Ships, and with Ketches and Sloops 30 more. It runs the same Course with *James-River* for an 100 Miles, and so near it, that in some Places 'tis not above 5 Miles over Land from one to the other; which Land between them being so well accomodated for Navigation, and so near two such great Rivers, is best inhabited; and here the Richest Planters are seated. After the last Indian Massacre, 'twas propos'd to draw a Pale from one River to the other, and wholly clearing the Country of Savages, to live secure between the two Rivers, where they had the Conveniency of Ships coming within a few Miles of every House; we must go up higher into the Country, and following the Course of the River through *Elizabeth*, *Warwick* and *York-Counties*, before-mention'd, we come to,

New Kent; Containing 171314 Acres of Land. This is one of the largest and most populous Counties in *Virginia*. 'Tis water'd by the Southern Branch of the River *York*, and has two Parishes in it, *Blissland* and *St. Peter's*. The Western Bounds of this County, and the next, are certain Hills, out of which issue forth a Glittering Sand, like the Filings of Brass, which Sand was, as is shewn in the History, mistaken

ken, for Gold
ty to this ne

King William's
and one Par
it; 'tis the
South of th

King and
cres of Lan
St. Stephens.

into *James-R*
this County
and *New-Ken*

we come to,

Gloucester.

Country. I

Parish Chur

son. 'Tis p

Middlesex

navigable tw

Acres, and

of *Middlesex*

River, whic

40 Miles wit

Heads of *York*

of low mar

tains, as othe

the Falls, is

Essex-Cou

In this Cou

or Bog, call

long, and is

Beasts, whic

inaccessible.

least not so

this Count

Sittingburn

ter'd by *M*

which is *N*

Richmond

not seen;

old Survey

In these

Richmond,

County.

and *Patow*

ken, for Gold by the first Planters. The next County to this nearer the Falls is,

King William-County: In which are 84,324 Acres, and one Parish, *St. John's*: *Pamunky-River* runs thro' it; 'tis the Southern Branch of *Tork-River*. On the South of this lies,

King and Queens-County: Containing 131,716 Acres of Land, and two Parishes, *Straton-Major*, and *St. Stephens*. *Chicohomony-River* rises in it, and falls into *James-River*, near *Bromfield's* Plantation. From this County, returning thro' *King William-County*, and *New-Kent*, down the North-shore of *Tork-River*, we come to,

Gloucester-County; the best Peopl'd of any in the Country. It has 142,450 Acres of Land in it, and 4 Parish Churches, *Perse*, *Abington*, *Ware* and *Kingston*. 'Tis parted from,

Middlesex-County, by the River *Prankitank*, which is navigable twenty or thirty Miles up, containing 49,500 Acres, and one Parish, *Christ-Church*. The County of *Middlesex* lies on the South Shoar of *Rappahanock-River*, which is very broad, deep, and navigable 40 Miles within Land, where 'tis remarkable that the Heads of *Tork-River* and *Rappahanock-River*, issue out of low marshy Ground, and not of Hills and Mountains, as other Rivers do. Above *Middlesex*, towards the Falls, is *Rappahanock*; or,

Essex-County: Containing 140,920 Acres of Land. In this County and *Middlesex* lies the Great Swamp, or Bog, call'd the *Dragon-swamp*, 'tis near 60 Miles long, and is over-run with Bryars, Thorns, and wild Beasts, which herd there, because the Place being almost inaccessible, the Inhabitants can't come at them, at least not so easily as in the Woods and Savana's. In this County stands three Parishes, South *Farnham*, *Sittingburn V*, *St. Mary's*. The South-side of it is water'd by *Mattapony*, the Western Branch of *Tork-River*, which is Navigable. Above it are the Counties of,

Richmond and *Stafford*: A Survey of which I have not seen; they are new Counties, and are not in the old Surveys, going all by the Name of *Rappahanock*. In these are three Parishes, *North-Farnham* in *Richmond*, and *St. Pauls V*, and *Overworton* in *Stafford-County*. The next below it, between *Rappahanock*, and *Patomack*, is,

Westmoreland-County, which is very large; but our Author has not communicated the Number of Acres. It has two Parishes in it, *Copeley* and *Washing-ton*. Below it lies the County of,

Lancaster, On the North-Shore of *Rappahanock-River*; 'tis water'd by the River *Cartomain*, or *Coro-toman*, which runs into *Rappahanock-River*, about 3 Leagues from the Mouth of it. There are two Parishes in this County, *Christ-Church* and *St. Mary's White-Chappel*. The next to this and the last in the Province on the South Shoar of *Patowmack*, is,

Northumberland-County: In which are two Parish-Churches, *Fairfield* and *Bowtracy V*, and *Wiccomoco*. There is a River of the same Name *Wiccomoco*, which Rises in this County, and runs into the Bay, at the Mouth of *Patowmack-River*, which is the Northern Bounds of *Virginia*, and divides it from *Maryland*. The Neck of Land from *Wiccomoco* to the Bay is what goes by the Name of the *Northern Neck*, which we often mention'd in the first Chapter. We must now cross over the Bay: and all along the Shoar from *Cape Charles*, at the Mouth of the Bay, to the River *Pocemoke*, which divides it from *Maryland* on the Eastern Bounds, the Province of *Virginia* still continues, and there are two Counties in it:

Accomack; Which retains its Indian Name. This is the largest County in *Virginia*, and contains 200923 Acres of Land. 'Tis not so Populous as those on the other side of the Bay, and has but one Parish in it, that of *Accomack*, which is without a Minister. The River *Chiffoness* rises in this County, as do several others of less Note. The other County is,

Northampton. A narrow County that runs along in a Neck between the *Virginian-Sea*, and the Bay of *Chesapeac*. *Cape Charles*, in the most Southerly part of it, is opposite to *Cape Henry*, and those two Points of Land are what is commonly call'd, *The Capes of Virginia*. This County contains 99384 Acres of Land, and one Parish Church, that of *Hungers*, which is also without a Minister. Thus we have visited the whole Province, and have taken notice of the most remarkable things; but as there are no Towns, nor Mines, nor other Places worthy the Reader's Curiosity; so our Relation wants that Variety of

of Objects v
The *Apelcha*
of *Virginia*,
believe some
but we don't
Advantage t
with Earth,
at the Colleg
Rivers, the
the Falls of
Miles distant
there are No
Apumacuc, P
many Miles,
are scarce dis
but at other
only they se
occasion'd by
ny Rivers.
Rivers, rise a
Mountains;
Miles distant
the most Par
most all of 'e
Glas like Di
The Cliffs of
Iron Mine,
Mould are
raising an I
Virginia dar
ters are so in
left all other
There wa
call'd *Dales*
of the Indi
Country lyi
is the best in
full of Plan
there, the T
We have e
Indian Nat
small, and
that they ar
the Sugar-Il

of Objects which renders such Descriptions delightful. The *Apelchean* Mountains are in the Western Bounds of *Virginia*, and are stor'd with Minerals, if we may believe some Travellers who have spoken of them, but we don't find that they have been of any other Advantage to the *Virginians*, than to furnish them with Earth, for the Experiments of their Virtuoso's at the College. The whole Country is water'd with Rivers, the most noted of which we have treated of; the Falls of each of those Rivers, are but 15 or 20 Miles distant from one another; and besides them, there are *North-River*, *Eastermost-River*, *Pungoteque*, *Apumatuc*, *Poyanketank*, and others, that are Navigable many Miles, and well stor'd with Fish. The Tides are scarce discernable when the Winds hold at N. W. but at other times they flow as they do in *England*, only they seem not so large, which is thought to be occasion'd by the Tides diffusing it self into so many Rivers. The Original Springs that make all these Rivers, rise at the Foot of the *Appallaan* or *Apelchean* Lowth: Mountains; but the Cataracts or Falls are 60 or 70 *Phil.* Miles distant from those Hills. The Shoars are for *Transf.* p. the most Part Sandy. What Stones are there, are at 567, 568. most all of 'em hard and transparent. Some will cut Glas like Diamonds, and are equal to 'em in Lustre, The Clifts of these Rivers are full of great Veins of Iron Mine, and generally all the Highlands under the Mould are a meer Rock of Iron: The Charge of raising an Iron-Work is so great, that no Body in *Virginia* dares ventures on the Expence, or the Planters are so intent on Planting Tobacco, that they neglect all other Improvements.

There was another Town built in *James-County*, call'd *Dales Gift*; but 'twas ruin'd by the Incurfions of the Indians, Fire, and other Accidents. The Country lying between *York-River*, and *James-River*, is the best inhabited. The Banks of the former are full of Plantations; and the best Tobacco growing there, the Trade of the Colony tends most that way. We have elsewhere observ'd in what Counties the Indian Nations still remain. Their Towns are very small, and their Houses or Huts such mean Dwellings, that they are rather like the Cabbins of the Slaves in the Sugar-Islands, than the Habitations of free People.

The abundance of Rivers occasion abundance of Mills in this Country; some of their Springs send forth such a glut of Water, that in less than half a Mile below the Fountain-Head, they afford a Stream sufficient to supply a Grift-mill. All these Rivers are full of Creeks, in which the Planters employ an infinite number of Sloops and small Boats, to convey their Tobacco and Merchandize from and to the Ships that lie in the greater Rivers, or in the the less. We have said little of the greatest River of them all, *Patomack*, because 'twill as properly come under the Article of *Maryland*, being the Boundary of that Province, on the Western-side of *Virginia*. It cannot be expected that in so little a Map as that is which is annex'd to this History, so full a Description can be made of *Virginia*, as in the large one; but this is the newest Survey: And the Country is divided into the Counties that are the present Divisions of it, there being at this time *s* new ones; *Prince George*, *Princess Anne*, *King William*, *King* and *Queen*, *Richmond* and *Stafford*. In the former Surveys there were but 19 Counties: In this all of them are included, together with as many Plantations as wou'd stand in so much room; and the same Care has been taken in the Maps of the other Countries.

of the Inhab
Their Go
and Custo
Servants
Strength

WHEN the
dians w
Keconghans,
metocks, the
jaboges, who
now stands.
Country lyin
ver. On the
of the *Young*
Rappahanock,
the *Moraugh*
Country on
Barlow and
gandacoa, an
ward of the
Florida. So
made War o
of them; th
Death, fell b
tries. All
occasion'd p
and partly b
Masters of
Possess'd: 7
of Humanit
Liberties, a
them, whic
they were
Borders of
of *Virginia*

C H A P. III.

*Of the Inhabitants ; and first of the Indians :
 Their Government , Religion, Manners,
 and Customs : Of the English, Masters,
 Servants , and Slaves : Their Numbers,
 Strength and Way of Living.*

WHEN the English first discover'd *Virginia*, the Indians were divided into several Nations, as, the *Kecongthans*, the *Weanocks*, the *Arrahattocks*, the *Apometocks*, the *Nansemonds*, the *Chesapeacs*, the *Pasaboges*, who possess'd the Ground where *James-City* now stands. These Tribes or Divisions inhabited the Country lying on the River *Powhatan*, or *James-River*. On the River *Pamunke* there dwell the Nations of the *Youngtanunds*, and the *Mattapoments*. On *Rappahanock*, or *Toppahanuck-River*, the *Manahoacs*, the *Moraughtacunds*, and the *Cuttatowomens*. The Country on which the English landed, when *Capt. Barlow* and *Capt. Aridas* discover'd it, was call'd *Wingandacoa*, and the King of it *Wingina*. It lies Southward of the Bay of *Chesapeac*, near the Frontiers of *Florida*. Sometimes the King of one of these Nations made War on the rest, and conquer'd three or four of them ; the Dominion of which generally after his Death, fell back to the natural Princes of those Countries. All these Nations are now entirely ruin'd, occasion'd partly by their Feuds among themselves, and partly by their Wars with the English, who are Masters of all the Countries which they formerly Possess'd : The English for their Convenience, or out of Humanity, suffer'd them to enjoy their Lives, and Liberties, and frequently enter'd into Leagues with them, which the faithless Savages kept no longer than they were forc'd to it. Those who dwell upon the Borders of the Province, which only retains the Name of *Virginia* at this day, were the most treacherous

T 4

and

and cruel to the English of all the Indian Nations. The People of *Wigandaces* were affable and courteous to the first Adventurers, while *Grangamineo*, *Wingina's* Elder Brother reign'd. His Wife also did many good Offices to the English, who afterwards attempted to settle on the Island of *Roanoke*: But after *Grangamineo's* Death, *Wingina*, who perhaps lik'd them better for Dealers than for Neighbours, behav'd himself very treacherously towards them; And when a Party of 'em was going towards the Kingdom of the *Mangoacs*, in quest of Copper Mines, he stir'd up several Tribes against them, and particularly *Temortan*, Prince of the *Moratoes*, whose Father *Ensenore* prevented his falling upon them; and *Menatomon* King of one of those Tribes, courted their Friendship by Presents of Pearl, as did *Okisco* King of the *Weopomeocs*, who submitted to become Tributary to the Queen of *England*. *Wingina* finding all his Contrivances to destroy them were disappointed, thought it his Interest to affect a Friendship for them, as the other Kings did; but this Friendship lasted no longer than till he had an Opportunity to shew his Treachery, and when he thought he had 'em at an Advantage, he fell upon them, who putting his wild Army to flight, took him Prisoner, and cut off his Head. The English being forc'd to abandon those Settlements, Capt. *Smith* founded the present one, as we have elsewhere related, in the Dominions of *Powhatan*, King of *Wicomoco*, who warr'd with the English all his Life-time, except a few Intervals of Peace, and the same did his Successor *Oppecancanough*, the last Prince of any Fame of the Savages. They fell to decay after his Death, and tho they committed several Murders on the Borders; was rather like the Sallies of Robbers from their lurking Holes, than the Incurfions of a warlike Nation. They are now brought so low, that the English are not in the least fear of them, having it in their Power to extirpate them whenever they please; but they serve them in Hunting and Fowling, and other Services; which is the chiefest, if not the only Cause of their Preservation. One may judge by *Oppecancanough's* Greatness, who we are told cou'd bring 20000 Men into the Field, that had all the Indian Tribes been united, it wou'd have been impossible to have made

Settlement v
brought over,
Of all the Nat
time two or th
together, the
down on the F
who they live i
may perceive
are reduc'd s
appears visibly in
They are r
habit higher
lish; to w
dian Arrows,
Protection.

Matomkin,

Gingoteque,

Kiquotan,
Matchepungo,
Occahanock,
Pmigoteque,
Omancock,
Chicomessex,
Nanduye,

Gangascoe,

Wyanoke,

Settlement with such small Numbers as the English brought over, or from time to time sent to *Virginia*. Of all the Nations that were then in being; at which time two or three thousand Bow-men liv'd in a Town together, the few that remain are scatter'd up and down on the Frontiers of the English Plantations; and so they live in Towns, or what some call Cities, we may perceive by the following Account of them, they are reduc'd so low, that the Hand of Providence appears visibly in their Destruction.

They are much more afraid of the Indians who inhabit higher up in the Country, than of the English; to whom they pay Tribute of three Indian Arrows, and 20 Beavers Skins, each Town, for Protection.

On the North-side of the Bay,

In *Accomac* are 8 Towns, viz.

- Matomkin*, Lately almost depopulated by the Small-Pox.
- Gingotoque*, What is left of this Place is now part of the Kingdom of a Prince, who reigns over a Nation of *Maryland*-Indians.
- Kiquotan*, Almost ruin'd.
- Matchepungo*, Some few Families remain there.
- Oecahanoek*, There a few Families are also yet in being.
- Pungotoque*, Govern'd by a Queen; a small Nation.
- Omancock*, Has but 4 or 5 Families.
- Chiconessex*, Not many more.
- Nanduye*, Govern'd by an Empress, to whom all the Nations on the Coasts are Tributary.
- Gangascoe*, In the County of *Northampton*, bordering on *Accomac*, as numerous as all the other Nations put together

On the South-side of the Bay are,

- Wyanoke*, In Prince *George* County, almost come to nothing. The Remains of this Tribe are gone to live with other Indians.

Appa-

As to their Religion, they have all of 'em some dark
 notion of God; and some of them brighter ones, if
 the Author may be believ'd, who had this Confession
 from the Mouth of an Indian, *That they believ'd God*
is universally beneficent: That his Dwelling was in
Heaven above; and the Influences of his Goodness reach'd
the Earth beneath: That he was incomprehensible in his
excellence; and enjoy'd all possible Felicity; That his Du-
ration was eternal; his Perfection boundless; and, That
he possesses everlasting Indolence and Ease. So far the
 Savage talk'd as rationally of the Being of a God, as a
 Christian Divine or Philosopher could have done: But
 when he came to justify their Worshipping of the De-
 ity, whom they call *Okee*, his Notions were very He-
 rodox: He said, *'Tis true God is the Giver of all good*
Things, but they flow naturally and promiscuously from
him; that they are shower'd down upon all Men indiffe-
rently, without Distinction: That God does not trouble
himself with the impertinent Affairs of Men; nor is con-
cern'd at what they do, but leaves them to make the most
of their free Will, and to secure as many as they can of the
good Things that flow from him: That therefore it
is to no purpose either to fear or worship him: But
the contrary, if they did not pacify the evil Spirit,
it would ruin their Health, Peace, and Plenty,
being always visiting them in the Air, Thunder,
Storms, &c.

As to the Idol which they all worship, and is kept
 in a Temple, call'd *Quiocasan*; He seem'd to have a
 very indifferent Opinion of its Divinity, and cry'd
 out upon the Juggling of the Priests--- This Man does
 not talk like a common Savage; and therefore we
 may suppose he had study'd the Matter more than his
 Countrymen; who for the generality pay a great
 deal of Devotion to the Idol, and worship him as their
 chief Deity.

Their Priests and Conjurers are highly reverenc'd
 by them: They are given extreamly to Panwawing
 or Conjuring: And one of them very lately conjur'd a
 shower of Rain for Col. Byrd's Plantation in a time of
 Drought, for two Bottles of Rum. We are not apt
 to give Credit to such supernatural Events; and had
 we not found this in an Author who was on the Spot,
 we should have reject'd it as a Fable.

Their

Their Priests promise fine Women Eternal Spring and every Pleasure in Perfection in the other World which charm'd them in this ; and threaten them with Lakes of Fire and Torments, by a Fairy in the Shape of an old Woman. They are often bloody in their Sacrifices ; and offer up young Children to the Devil. They have a superstitious Ceremony among them which they call *Huskanawing*, and is perform'd thus ; They shut up ten or twelve young Men, the most deserving among them, about 20 Years of Age in a strong Inclosure, made on purpose, like a Sugar Loaf, and every way open like a Lattice, for the Air to pass through. They are kept there for several Months ; and are allow'd to have no Sustenance, but the Infusion or Decoction of poisonous intoxicating Roots ; which turns their Brain, and they run stark mad.

By this 'tis pretended they lose the Remembrance of all former things, even of their Parents, Treasure Language, as if they had drunk of the Water of Oblivion, dipt out of the Lake *Lethe*.

When they have been in this Condition as long as their Custom directs, they lessen this intoxicating Potion ; and by degrees the young Men recover the Use of their Senses : But before they are quite well they are shewn in their Towns ; and the Youth who have been *huskanaw'd*, are afraid to discover the least sign of their remembering any thing of their past Lives ; for in such case they must be *huskanaw'd* again, and they are disciplin'd so severely the second time that it generally kills them.

After the young Men have past this Trial, they are *Coucaroufes*, or Men of Quality in their Nations, and the Indians say they do it, to take away from Youth all childish Impressions, and that strong Partiality to Persons and Things, which is contracted before Reason comes to take place.

The Indian Priests, to command the Respect of the People, make themselves look as ugly and as terrible as they can. The Conjurers always share with them in their Deceit, and the Gain by it : The Indians consult both of them before they go on any Enterprize. There are no Priestesses or Witches among them. They erect Altars on every remarkable Occasion

and have Temples, in which their Kings and Queens are worshipp'd. They have no other way of communicating with the Deity, is by Hiccupping, by Units and Tens, but they have no Winters ; and the budding time of the Year, the Harvest, the Months, the Day into the Spring of the Summer, a String, or with relates a Pocahontas, Lord of her own, *Matamaccmack*, Father, command to tell the People Number. Un- not a Stick, but he would be to his Stick. At how many Peas the Stars in the Sand on the such is the I. They esteem of all Engager the most un- Their Maid of them happy for Fortune others that de- out the Indian al, which for are very spirit- men generally ing Infants is born, they pl- er, and then

Spring and have Temples built like their common Cab-
 Worlds, in which their Idol stands, and the Corpse of
 em with their Kings and Rulers are preserv'd.
 he Shape They have no sort of Literature among them; and
 in their way of communicating things from one to ano-
 the Devil, is by Hieroglyphicks. They make their Ac-
 g them counts by Units, Tens, Hundreds, &c. as the English
 perform'd; but they reckon their Years by Cohonks or
 len, the Winters; and divide every Year into five Seasons:
 of Age The budding time, the earing of the Corn, the Sum-
 e a Sugar-her, the Harvest, the Winter.

the Air The Months they count by Moons. They divide
 r several the Day into three parts; The Rise, Power, and low-
 nce, bu- ring of the Sun: And keep their Accounts by Knots
 oximating a String, or Notches on a Stick. Of which Capt.
 run start Smith relates a pleasant Story; That when the Prin-
 embrance ces Pocahonta came for England, a Coucarouse, or
 Treasure- lord of her own Nation attended her; his Name was
 t of Obliv- Uttamaccomack: And King Powhatan, Pocahontas's
 father, commanded him when he arriv'd in England,
 to tell the People, and give him an Account of their
 Number. Uttamaccomack, when he came ashore,
 is long a- got a Stick, intending to count them by Not-
 ating Po- ches; but he soon found that his Arithmetick
 cover the- would be to no purpose; and threw away
 quite well- his Stick. At his Return, the King ask'd him,
 outh who- How many People there were? and he reply'd, Count
 the least- the Stars in the Sky, the Leaves upon the Trees, and
 their pass- the Sand on the Sea-shore, and you will know how many;
 'd again- as such is the Number of the People in England.
 ond time- in such is the Number of the People in England.

They esteem the Marriage-Vow as the most sacred
 of all Engagements; and abhor Divorces: Adultery
 is the most unpardonable of Crimes amongst them.

Their Maidens are very Chaste; and if any one
 of them happens to have a Child before Marriage,
 her Fortune is Spoilt. This Account contradicts
 others that describe them to be common Prostitutes;
 but the Indians and the Virginians disown the Scan-
 dal, which some Authors lay to their Charge: They
 are very spritely and good-humour'd, and the Wo-
 men generally handsome. Their manner of hand-
 ling Infants is very rough; As soon as the Child is
 born, they plunge it over Head and Ears in cold Wa-
 ter, and then bind it naked to a Board, making a hole
 in

in it in the proper place for Evacuation. Between the Child and the Board, they put some Cotton-Wool or Fur, and let it lie in this Posture, till the Bone begin to harden, the Joints to knit, and the Limb to grow strong. Then they loosen it from the Board and let it crawl about where it pleases. From this Custom 'tis said the Indians derive the Cleanness and Exactness of their Limbs, which are the most perfect for these Qualities in the World. Some of 'em are of a Gygantick Stature, live to a greater Age and are stronger than others; there being never a Dwarf, crooked, bandy-legg'd, or ill-shapen Indian to be seen. Some Nations of 'em are very tall and large-limb'd, and others are short and small: Their Complexion is a Chestnut brown and Tawny. They paint themselves with a Pocone-root, which stains them of a reddish Colour. They are clear when they are Young. Greasing and Sunning makes their Skin turn hard and black. Their Hair for the most part is cole-black; so are their Eyes: They wear their Hair cut after several whimsical Modes; the Persons of Note always keeping a long Lock behind. The Women wear it very long, hanging at their Backs, or twisted up with Beads, and all the better Sort adorn their Heads with a kind of Coronet; the Men have no Beards, and to prevent their having any, use certain Devices which they will not communicate to the English.

Their Cloaths are a Mantle girt close in the middle and underneath a Piece of Cloth ty'd round the Waist and reaching down to the middle of the Thigh. The common Sort only tie a piece of Cloth or Skin round their Middle. As for their Food they boil, broil, or roast all the Meat they eat: *Homony* is their standing Dish, and consists of Indian Corn soak'd broken in a Mortar, and then boil'd in Water over a gentle Fire for 10 or 12 Hours together. They draw and pluck their Fowl, skin and paunch their Quadrupedes; but dress their Fish with their Scales on, without gutting: They leave the Scales, Entrails and Bones, till they eat the Fish, when they throw the Offals away. Their Food is chiefly Bevors, Turtle, several Species of Snakes: Broth made of Deer Humbles, Pease, Beans, &c. They have no fe

Meals

Meals, they
nothing but
Corn, Wild
They eat it al
They travel
They live up
Tree, upon a
bit them to
should steal th
When the
up a Canoo of
it on the Riv
want it, othe
Their way
Calumet of
has given a l
Pipe is as fo
larger and b
it, and then
gives it to th
Peace; if not
round the Co
The Diseas
to be cur'd:
live Heats and
As for Aches,
they use Cauf
their Physic
taught the Na
Knowledge is
cate it, prete
stery they m
Their Ric
Pearl. The
the Peak lik
piece of Cock
the English
noke were
value on the
ping Quant
and formerly
They had
em over:
Shells; thei

Meals, they eat when they are hungry ; and drink nothing but Water. Their Bread is made of Indian Corn, Wild Oats, or the Seed of the Sun Flower : They eat it alone, and not with Meat.

They travel always on Foot, with a Gun or Bow. They live upon the Game they kill ; and lie under a Tree, upon a little high Grass. The English prohibit them to keep Corn, Sheep, or Hogs, lest they should steal their Neighbours.

When they come to Rivers, they presently patch up a Canoo of Birch Bark, cross over in it ; and leave it on the River's Bank, if they think they shall not want it, otherwise they carry it along with them.

Their way of receiving Strangers is by the Pipe or Calumet of Peace : Of the latter *Pere Hemmepin* has given a large account in his Voyages ; and the Pipe is as follows ; They fill a Pipe of Tobacco, larger and bigger than any common Pipe, light it, and then the chief of them takes a Whiff, gives it to the Stranger, and if he smoaks of it, 'tis Peace ; if not, War : If Peace, the Pipe is handed all round the Company.

The Diseases of the Indians are very few, and easy to be cur'd : They for the most part arise from excessive Heats and Colds, which they get off by Sweating. As for Aches, and settled Pains in the Joints or Limbs, they use Causticks and Scarifying. Their Priests are their Physicians ; and from their Childhood are taught the Nature and Use of Simples ; in which their Knowledge is excellent ; but they will not communicate it, pretending 'tis a Gift of God ; and by the Mystery they make it the more valuable.

Their Riches consist in Furrs, Peak, Roenoke, and Pearl. Their Peak and Roenoke are made of Shells ; the Peak like an English Buglas ; the Roenoke is a piece of Cockle, drill'd through like a Bead. Before the English came among them, this Peak and Roenoke were all their Treasure, but now they set a value on their Furr and Pearl, and are greedy of scraping Quantities together. The Pearl is good ; and formerly was not so rare as 'tis at this time.

They had no Iron Tools before the English brought 'em over : Their Knives were sharpen'd Reeds or Shells ; their Axes sharp Stones : They rub'd Fire, by turning

turning the End of a hard piece upon the side of one that is soft and dry, which at last wou'd burn. They fell'd great Trees by burning them down at the Root, having ways of keeping the Fire from ascending: They hollow'd them with gentle Fires, scrap'd the Trunk clean; and this made their Canoo's, of which some were 30 Foot long. They are very good Handicrafts Men; and what they do is generally neat and convenient.

In the first Chapter we have said enough to shew, that the Government of the Indians was Monarchical: Their Kingdoms descended to the next Heir, Male or Female; and they were very exact in preserving the Succession in the right Line. If, as it often happen'd, one great Prince subjected the other, those Conquests commonly were lost at his Death, and the Nations return'd again to the Obedience of their natural Princes. They have no written Laws; neither can they have any, having no Letters. Their Lands are in common, and their *Werowances* or Judges, are all Lord Chancellours, deciding Causes, and inflicting Punishments, according as they think fit. These *Werowances*, and the *Coucarouses*, are their Terms to distinguish their Men of Quality: The former are their War Captains, and the latter such as have pass'd the Trial of Huskanawing. Their Priests and Conjurers have great Authority among them. They have Servants whom they call *Black Boys*; and are very exact in requiring the Respect that is due to their several Qualities.--- And thus much of the Indians, who from a State of Nature and Innocence, in which the English found them, are now infected with the European Vices of Drunkenness, Avarice and Fraud, having learn'd nothing of the new Comers, but what has serv'd to render their Ignorance the more detestable.

We must now treat of the English Inhabitants, their Rise, Numbers, Distinction, and way of Living. We have seen in the beginning of this Treatise, from what small beginnings the English Colony rose to the State it is in at present: And it cannot be imagin'd, that the first Adventurers there were Men of Quality and Fortune, whatever the Proprietors in *England* were: Men of Estate wou'd not leave their Native Country,

of

of which the
 seek an Habitat
 that deter'd si
 ways deter the
 and became sett
 Fortunes, rem
 great by their
 Gentlemen of
 those in Eng
 Herald-Office
 Colony are in
 Honours, in
 which is got b
 the honest Me
 the Men of Hon
 the worse for
 earer a-kin tha
 'Twas a long
 born on the
 small number o
 anters being
 ruple to buy
 hat could give
 Women were n
 ny was come
 is transported
 end their For
 of Conscience v
 reign of Char
 which, several
 Rump and Olic
 By this mea
 Numbers, that
 atation near
 in Virginia, in
 habitants of
 ants, who are
 plantations. C
 a proportion
 Numbers of t
 ears, it has be
 re fall'n into
 their Parents,
 as they say, T

of one
They
Root;
nding:
d the
which
Handi-
eat and
shew,
narchi-
Heir,
in pre-
as it of-
other,
ath, and
of their
s; nei-
Their
Judges,
and in-
ink fit-
re their
The for-
such as
Priests
g them.
ys; and
s due to
the Indi-
ence, in
ed with
ce and
ers, but
e more
ts, their
3. We
m what
ne State
d, that
ity and
were:
ountry,
of

which the English are of all Men most fond to
seek an Habitation in an unknown WilderNESS: And
that deter'd such from going thither at first, will al-
ways deter them. 'Tis true, as the Colony encreas'd,
and became settled, Men of good Families, and small
Fortunes, remov'd to *Virginia*, thriv'd and grew
great by their Industry and Success: And thus many
Gentlemen of *Virginia* may boast as good Descents
as those in *England*: But there's no need as yet of an
Herald-Office to be set up at *James-Town*; and the
Colony are in the right to make slight of such empty
Honours, in comparison of the substantial Profit
which is got by Planting and Traffick. Wherefore
the honest Merchant, and industrious Planter, are
the Men of Honour in *Virginia*; and it would not be
the worse for *England*, if Industry and Honour were
nearer a-kin than some vain Persons make them.

'Twas a long time before *Virginia* saw a Race of En-
glish born on the spot; which was occasion'd by the
small number of Women that came over; the first
Planters being so hard put to it, that they made no
scruple to buy a Wife, and to accept of any Woman
that could give a tolerable Account of her Virtue.
Women were not so scarce afterwards; when the Co-
lony was come to a sort of Perfection, whole Fami-
lies transported themselves thither from *England*, to
send their Fortunes, and others to enjoy that Liberty
of Conscience which was deny'd them at home, in the
Reign of *Charles I.* and his Son *Charles II.* Besides
which, several Royalists remov'd thither during the
Rump and *Oliver's* Usurpations.

By this means the Colony has so encreas'd in
Numbers, that there are now by the nicest Com-
putation near 70000 Men, Women, and Children
in *Virginia*, including the French Refugees, the
Inhabitants of the *Northern Neck*, and the Negro Ser-
vants, who are but a few, in comparison to the Sugar-
Plantations. Of these the Men are more numerous
in proportion than the Women, occasion'd by greater
Numbers of them going over thither; tho' of late
years, it has been customary for young Women, who
are fall'n into Disgrace in *England*, or are ill us'd by
their Parents, to transport themselves thither; and,
as they say, *Try their Fortunes*, which have often been

U

very

very favourable. The People of *Virginia* are, as in *England*, distinguish'd by the Names of Masters and Servants. The Distinctions of the Masters are by their Offices or Birth; and of the Servants, by such as are for Life, and such as are for a Term of Years. The Negroes and their Posterity are all Servants for Life; the white Men and Women for a many Years as they bind themselves: And if they don't bind themselves by particular Indentures, the Laws of the Country oblige them to serve till they are four and twenty Years of Age, if they are under Nineteen when they commence their Service: if above, the term is set to five Years; and then they are as much entitul'd to the Liberties and Privileges of the Place, as any of the Inhabitants or Natives are. Their Masters, when their Times are out, are oblig'd to give each Servant 15 Bushels of Corn, and two new Suits of Cloaths, Linnen and Woollen; besides each of them may take Possession of 50 Acres of unpatented Ground, if he can find any; which is a Privilege that makes a Noise, and is tempting to the poor Creature who go over, but is not worth the naming, for the Crown will purchase it at any time.

The Laws of *Virginia* take great Care for the good Usage of Servants, as to Necessaries, Diet and Cloath. And the Labour of the Country, which consists chiefly in Tilling, Manuring the Ground, Sowing and Planting Tobacco is so easy, that as hard Work as is represented to be, the Day-Labourers in *England* are much the greater Slaves, if hard Work, and hard Living, are Signs of Slavery.

The Servants and Slaves are never listed in the Militia of the Country; but every Freeman from Sixteen to Sixty Years of Age, is enroll'd, and oblig'd to muster once a Year. Their Number is in all 9522 of which 2363 are Light-Horse, and 7159 Foot and Dragoons, according to the following Schedule, taken in the Year 1703. By which the Reader will have a clear View of the Strength of *Virginia*; without including the *Northern Neck*, or the French Refugees at the *Monachan-Town*, which may encrease the Number of Souls to near 70000.

Counties
Names.

Henrico,
Prince George
and
Charles-City,
Warrey,
County of Wight,
Nassamund,
Norfolk,
Princess Anne,
James-City,
York,
Warwick,
Elizabeth-City,
New-Kent,
King William,
King and Queen,
Glocester,
Middlesex,
Essex,
Richmond,
Stafford,
Westmoreland,
Lancaster,
Northumberland,
Accomack,
Northampton,

Besides the English hundred of *Beaufort* over thither had a very rich Town above the Falls of the River, forming the Indian Nation of the *Monachan* Town where the French

Counties

Counties Names.	Number of Souls.	Males.	Females and Children.	Militia.	Horse.	Foot & Dra- goons.
Henrico,	2413	915	1498	345	98	247
Prince George	}	4045	1406	2639	625	203
and Charles City,						
Warrey,	2230	880	1350	350	62	288
Isle of Wight,	2714	841	1873	514	140	374
Namsumund,	2530	1018	1512	591	142	449
Norfolk,	2279	717	1572	380	48	332
Princess Anne,	2037	686	1351	284	69	215
James City,	2990	1297	1693	401	123	278
York,	2357	1208	1149	390	68	322
Warwick,	1377	482	895	201	49	152
Elizabeth City,	1188	469	719	196	54	142
New Kent,	3374	1325	2049	420	120	300
King William,	1834	803	1031	}	698	189
King and Queen,	2842	1244	1598			
Glocester,	5834	2628	3206	594	121	473
Middlesex,	1632	776	856	199	56	143
Essex,	2400	1090	1310	438	139	299
Richmond,	2622	1392	1230	504	122	382
Stafford,	2033	863	1170	345	84	261
Westmoreland,	2736	1131	1605	451	133	318
Lancaster,	2155	941	1214	271	42	229
Northumberland,	2099	1168	931	522	130	392
Accomack,	2804	1041	1763	456	101	355
Northampton,	2081	712	1369	347	70	277

60606 | 25023 | 35583 | 9522 | 2363 | 7159

Besides the English Inhabitants, there are now several hundred of French Refugees Families, who were sent over thither by King William. These Refugees had a very rich Territory assign'd them, twenty Miles above the Falls of James-River, on the South-side of the River, formerly the Habitation of a Warlike Nation of the Indians, call'd the *Monachans*; and the Town where the French Protestants settled, is call'd the *Monachan Town*.

The Assembly has granted them great Privileges and been bountiful in their Charity to them, for their Encouragement. They are also very much oblig'd to the Generosity and Protection of Col. Byrd whose Friendship has been serviceable to them on many Occasions. They are an industrious People; have made excellent Wine there, even of the Wild Grapes and are upon several Improvements, which will be very much to their own Advantage, and that of the Colony.

'Tis computed that the Number of Souls which either came over at first, or since, or have been born in the Country, amounts to near twelve hundred French. And the *Northern Neck* being larger than the largest of the other Counties, and almost as populous, may contain about six thousand: So that the whole Number of Souls in the Province of *Virginia*, exclusive of *Maryland*, is about 70000.

As to the Customs and Manners of the *Virginians* they are the same with the English; and one may as well go about to describe the Manners and Customs of any one particular County of *England* separate from the rest.

Their Diet is somewhat different; so is their Cloathing, as also their Sports and Pastimes, and Diseases occasion'd by the difference of the Climates: Beside Beef, Mutton, and Veal, which the *Virginians* have in plenty, tho' not so good in its kind as we have in *England*, they have Pork, Bacon, and all sorts of Tame and Wild Fowl, better than any of the several Kinds that are in *England*.

Pork is sold from 1 d. to 3 d. a Pound; a large Pullet for 6 d. a Capon for 8 d. Chickens 3 s. a Dozen. Deer 8 s. a Head. The Bread which the better sort of People use, is generally made of Wheat: The poorer eat Pone, made of *Oppone*, or Indian Meal. Their Kitchen-Gardens supply them with all sorts of Roots, Sallats, and Pot-herbs. Their Drink is according to their Circumstances; the Gentlemen brew small Beer with English Malt: Strong Beer they have from *England*; as also French Wine and Brandy, with which they make *Punch*; or with Rum, from the *Caribbean* Islands, or Spirits of their own distilling, from Apples, Peaches, &c. *Madera* Wine is the most common

and the m
e Poor brew
Indian Corn
er sorts of Po
asant. They
pit-Coal in ma
that they ma
ought it wort
Their Cloath
s of Distinct
and Cost can
lightest Stuf
en. The Men
st-Indies, wea
Linnen Jack
Gowns. Th
to Dress, from
land, of Bri
their Houses
fter Shells,
me.
Their Sports
different from
e Indians to co
alking Horse
alking Head:
the Huntsma
the Deer; an
m. They ha
s being the
ention it in thi
Their Hares
ags: The Ha
d then they ar
o have other
d Horse-hunt
young People
d sometimes v
h as are foal'
d no body kn
e is free to
o they are of
y Savage Cre
fit for use.

privileges and the most noble of all their strong Drinks. The Poor brew their Beer with Mellasses and Bran, Indian Corn dry'd in a Stove. They have several other sorts of Potables, which are very wholesom and pleasant. They burn Wood every where, tho there is Pit-Coal in many places; but Wood being so plentiful that they may have it for cutting, no body has thought it worth while to dig for Coal.

Their Cloaths are brought from *England* for Persons of Distinction, and are as much in the Mode as in that Country and Cost can make them: They are generally of the lightest Stuffs or Silks, both for Men and Women. The Men for Coolness, as in other parts of the *West-Indies*, wear in the Heat of the Summer Fustian and Linnen Jackets; and the Women Linnen or Muslin Gowns. They have almost all their Necessaries, to Dress, from *England*. Their Buildings are as in that Country, of Brick, Timber and Stone, the outside of their Houses being cover'd with Lime made of oyster Shells, much more durable than English Plaster.

Their Sports are Deer-hunting, Hare-hunting; and different from the English Chase: They learnt of the Indians to come up to the Deer under the blind of a walking Horse, as the Savages did under that of a walking Head: They teach a Horse to walk gently by the Huntsman's Side, to cover him from the Sight of the Deer; and so they have an Opportunity to kill him. They have other ways of Deer-hunting; but as being the most remarkable, I have chosen to mention it in this place.

Their Hares they hunt with Mungrils or Swift-dogs: The Hares generally hole in a hollow Tree, and then they are smoak'd out by the Hunters. They have other sorts of Hunting, as Vermine-hunting, and Horse-hunting; the latter is much delighted in by the young People, who pursue wild Horses with Dogs, and sometimes without them. These wild Horses are such as are foal'd in the Woods in the Hill Country; and no body knowing whom they belong to, every one is free to catch and keep as many as he pleases: tho they are of the English Breed, they are as shy as any Savage Creature; but this sort of Cattle seldom fit for use.

They have several other Sports, as taking wild Turkeys and Wolves in Snares, Fishing, Fowling, and Catching of Beavers; which is an excellent Pastime. 'Tis said that these last Creatures live in a sort of Monarchy like Bees, and are very kind and obedient to their Sovereign.

The Diseases most incident to the Place are Cold caught by the irregular Conduct of People at the first Arrival; Gripes and Fluxes, occasion'd by the same means, the English eating too greedily the pleasant Fruits of the Country; Cachexes or *Tan*, which is a violent Scurvy, the *Seasoning* here, as in other parts of *America*, is a Fever or Ague, which the Change of the Climate and Diet generally throws new Comers into; The Bark is in *Virginia* a Sovereign Remedy to this Disease.

The *Virginians* have but few Doctors among them and they reckon it among their Blessings, fancying the Number of their Diseases would encrease without that of their Physicians. The few they have study and make use of Simples most, with which the Woods are plentifully furnish'd.

We will conclude this Account of the Inhabitants of *Virginia*, with a short Character of them. They are a prudent, careful, generous, hospitable People, their Houses being open to all Travellers whom they entertain as heartily as Relations or Friends; and that sordid Wretch who offends against this laudible Custom of his Country, is the Object of every one's Contempt.

As for the Convenience of Society, the Gentlemen's Houses are at not much greater Distance from one another, than they are in *England*. The Planters are almost all sociable; and as every thing towards making their Friends welcome is cheaper than in *England*, so the Entertainments there are larger, the Reception more sincere, and the Mirth of the Company more hearty than in most of our Gentlemen's Houses; among whom Hospitality is so far out of Fashion, that a Man who pretends to it is reckon'd a Sot or a Bubble; and the costly and pernicious Vices that were introduc'd in the place of it in the last Century, has banish'd it from that Countrey where it formerly flourish'd, to the eternal Prai

Praise of our
Posterity.

Of the Gov
Laws, Co
ces, and

THE Govern
sident, and
was the first Pro
abrogated, the
Company or
Gates, Sir Geor
joint Governou
nours and their
the President a
more Authority
some Persons.

When K. Cha
n'd the Form
Council for the
gislative in the
pointed before,
vernments unde
to the Assembly
vernour and C
Cognizance of
stical and Civil
unless the Matt
three hundred
Queen and Co
there never was
don Persons fo
der, and rep
Pleasure be kn
Power in this
He is subject
presents her P
or dissents from

Praise of our Ancestors, and the Shame of their Posterity.

C H A P. IV.

Of the Government of Virginia ; Of the Laws, Courts of Judicature, Publick Offices, and Revenues.

THE Government of *Virginia* was at first by a President, and a Council of twelve. Mr. *John White* was the first President; and when the Presidency was abrogated, there was a Commission granted by the Company or Proprietors in *England* to Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, and Capt. *Newport*, to be joint Governours. We don't find that the Governours and their Council had any more Power than the President and his Council ; but the Name gave more Authority to their Acts in the Imagination of some Persons.

When K. *Charles I.* dissolv'd the Company, he continu'd the Form of the Government by a Governour and Council for the Executive Power, and plac'd the Legislative in the Assembly. The Assembly had been appointed before, and met several times during the Governments under the Company. The chief Court next to the Assembly is the *General Court*, held by the Governour and Council, who are Judges of it, and take Cognizance of all Causes Criminal, Penal, Ecclesiastical and Civil. There is no Appeal from this Court, unless the Matter in dispute amounts in value to above three hundred Pounds, and then Appeals lie to the Queen and Council in *England*. In Criminal Cases there never was any Appeal, but the Governour can pardon Persons for any Crime whatsoever, except Murder, and reprieve ev'n for that till her Majesty's Pleasure be known therein. Indeed the Governour's Power in this and the other Plantations is very great : He is subject only to the Queen's Commands, and represents her Person in his Government ; he assents to or dissents from the Acts of Assembly, as he thinks

fit, and by his Assent passes 'em into Laws. He Calls, Prorogues and Dissolves the Assembly: He Calls and Presides in the Council: He makes Justices of the Peace; all Officers of the Militia under the Degree of a Lieutenant General: Puts out Proclamations: Is the Keeper of the Seal of the Colony, and disposes of the Queen's Lands according to the Charter and Laws of the Country: all Payments out of the Treasury are order'd by him, or in his Name: He is Vice-Admiral by Virtue of a Commission from the Admiralty, and has a Salary of 2000 *l.* a Year; formerly 'twas but 1000 *l.* and about 500 *l.* Perquisites; 200 *l.* a Year was added by the Assembly in favour of Sir *William Berkley*; and the Lord *Colepepper* got it encreas'd to 2000 *l.* a Year, and 150 *l.* a Year House-rent, which, with the Perquisites, make it worth near 3000 *l.* a Year to the Governour, and more if he oppresses the People, as too many Governours have done. When the Governour and Deputy Governour are absent, the Administration falls to the President of the Council for the time being, who has a Salary of 500 *l.* a Year only, added to what is given him as a Counsellor, which is a very small Allowance. The Queen nominates the Counsellors by Letter or Instruction, which says no more, but that they be sworn of the Council. The Governour can fill up the vacant Places of such as die, or are remov'd without staying for Orders from *England*. These Counsellors have an equal Vote with the Governour at the Council-Table in many things, and are a Check upon him, if he offers to exceed the Bounds of his Commission, in calling Assemblies, disposing of the Publick Revenue, placing and displacing Officers, Votes and Orders of Council, publishing Proclamations, making Grants, and passing all Patents. They are the Upper House in the Assembly, and claim a negative Voice to all Laws.

Their Salary in all is 350 *l.* a Year, which is divided amongst them, according to their Attendance on General Courts and Assemblies: The Lower House of the Assembly consists of the Representatives of the Counties, two for each, and one for *James-City*; in all 51. The College also has Power by their Charter, to send a Member to the Assembly.

The

The Assembly-M
Virtue of a Writ
in every Church
Day of Election
these Assembly-M
of Parliament in
with that of the
very much influ
mour; and after
Lower House an
Governour's Ass
be confirm'd by
her Negative, th
bilities meet once
Besides the Gove
ters are,

The Auditor
whose Salary
Money.

The Secretary
Jennings,
amount to a

The Treasurer
is 6 *l.* per
his Hands.

Collector of the

These are G
Colony. There
of Courts, Sher
riffs Place of ea
Allowance of 1
other Advantag

The Assembly-Men are chosen by the Freeholders, by Virtue of a Writ directed to the Sheriff, which is read in every Church and Chappel in the County, and the Day of Election then appointed. The Privileges of these Assembly-Men are the same with the Members of Parliament in *England*, and the Power much the same with that of the House of Commons, only they are very much influenc'd by the Pleasure of the Governour; and after their Acts have regularly past the Lower House and Upper House, and have had the Governour's Assent, they must send to *England* to be confirm'd by the Queen; but till she has declar'd her Negative, they are in full Force. These Assemblies meet once or twice a Year, as occasion requires. Besides the Governour and Council, the Publick Officers are,

The Auditor of the Revenue, Dudley Diggs, Esq; whose Salary is $7\frac{1}{2}$ per Cent. of all the Publick Money.

The Secretary and President of the Council, Edmund Jennings, Esq; whose Fees and Perquisites amount to above 400 l. a Year.

The Treasurer, William Byrd, Esq; whose Salary is 6 l. per Cent. of all Money that passes through his Hands.

Collector of the Customs, Col. Gawen Corbin.

These are General Officers and Servants of the Colony. There are other little Officers; as Clerks of Courts, Sheriffs, and Surveyors, &c. The Sheriffs Place of each County is very profitable by an Allowance of 10 per Cent. out of all his Receipts and other Advantages. The Revenues of *Virginia*, arise,

1. By the Queen's Quit-rents 2 s. for every 100 Acres.	1200 l. a Year.
2. By the Act for the Support of the Government, 2 s. for every Hoghead of Tobacco exported; 15 d. a Tun for every Ship; 6 d. Poll for every Passenger; Fines and Forfeitures, Waifs and Strays, Escheats of Land, and Personal Estate for want of a lawful Heir.	3000
3. By the Act reserv'd to be dispos'd of by the Assembly, 4 d. a Gallon on Wine, Rum and Brandy; 1 d. a Gallon on Beer, Cyder and other Liquors, 15 s. for each Servant not being a Native of <i>England</i> and <i>Wales</i> , and 28 s. for each Slave or Negroe.	1200
4. The College-Revenue, a Duty on Skins and Furs.	100
5. The Duty of 1 d. a pound on all Tobacco exported to the other Plantations, and not carry'd directly to <i>England</i> , King <i>William</i> gave it to the College.	200
	3700

The General Court, of which we have made some mention, is also call'd the Quarter Court, as being held every Quarter of a Year. There are inferior Courts, which are kept every Month in each County, and are call'd the County-Courts, or Monthly Courts, where Matters that are not of the highest Moment, such as do not relate to Life or Member, or exceed a certain limited Value, are try'd. From these Courts there lies an Appeal to the Quarterly Courts: In which no Action can be originally brought under the value of Ten Pounds Sterling. The Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, and other Officers,

cers, are every Man do it for Interest to that as Dis Lawyers v land all co The Justice each Coun them and dren that vide for the of Parliam all her M tutes and to the Affa the Queen things hav the Usages all Cases in being an ex all the othe Reader to i

Of the C

WHEN other resolv'd to large Con vout Pers pel among es, and and Instr was set up for the b ted many were Hop

Year. cers, are Judges of these County-Courts. In which every Man may plead his own Cause, or his Friends do it for him, the *Virginians* understanding their Interest too well to incourage Lawyers; believing that as Diseases wou'd be brought in by Doctors, so Lawyers wou'd create Suits; a Mischief we in *England* all complain of, but despair of seeing remedy'd. The Justices of the Peace also hold Courts yearly in each County to look after Orphans, and take care of them and their Estates, to provide for those Children that are Fatherless, and have no Body to provide for them. The Laws of *Virginia* are the Acts of Parliament and Statutes of *England*, which affect all her Majesty's Dominions in general; the Statutes and Acts of the Assembly, which relate only to the Affairs of this Colony, in particular Orders of the Queen and Council in *England*, which in many things have the Force of Laws in the Plantations; the Usages of the Country, or the Civil Law, by which all Cases in the Admiralty are adjudg'd. But there being an excellent Collection of the Laws of this and all the other Plantations already publish'd, I refer the Reader to it for a larger and clearer account of them.

CHAP. V.

Of the Church, and Church-Affairs, and the College in Virginia.

de some
s being
e inferi-
in each
Month-
highest
ember,
From
quarterly
iginally
sterling,
er Offi-
cers,

WHEN the Nobility, Gentry, Merchants, and others, first got a Grant of this Country, and resolv'd to make a Settlement upon it, they receiv'd large Contributions to carry it on from several Devout Persons, who were for propagating the Gospel among the Indians, building Schools, Churches, and settling Ministers for their Conversion and Instruction. To this end a great Lottery was set up in *London*, the Profits of which were for the benefit of the Colony; and what instigated many charitable People to put Money into it, were Hopes that a good part of it wou'd be laid out

out on the use for which it was by them intended. This Lottery was drawn in *St. Paul's Church*; but we do not find that the Money was employ'd as those Religious Persons wou'd have had it, or that there have been many Converts made by the English in this Country. The Religion of the *Virginians* is the same as in the rest of her Majesty's Dominions: The Body of the People are Members of the Church of *England*. There are some few Dissenters, and might have been more, had they not been persecuted by *Sir William Berkley*. Whether the *Virginians* glory in it or not, or honour the Memory of this Governour the more for it, we can't tell; but *Puritans* were certainly always discountenanc'd by him. In the Year 1641. *Mr. Bennet* went to *Boston* in *New-England* to desire in the Name of some other Gentlemen, that two or three Ministers might be sent them. *Mr. Phillips*, *Mr. Thompson*, and *Mr. Knowles*, a late Dissenting Minister in *London*, came thither, where they were kindly entertain'd by private Persons, but the Governour and his Council, forbade them to Preach, and order'd, *That such as wou'd not conform to the Ceremonies of the Church of England shou'd depart the Country.*

There are forty nine Parish-Churches in the Province, of which thirty four are supply'd with Ministers, and 15 vacant. It were to be wish'd that care was taken to supply them with such Divines as might, by their Example as well as by their Preaching, invite People to a Religious Life; the Indian Darkeness being not more gloomy and horrid than what some of the Meaner Sort of *Virginians* live in, and their Parsons for the most part don't take much Pains to lead 'em into the Light of the Gospel. In each Parish there is a Church built either with Timber, Brick or Stone, and decently adorn'd with all things proper for the Celebration of Divine Service. In large Parishes there's a Chappel of Ease, and sometimes two for the Convenience of the Parishioners. The Minister of the Parish preaches in them alternately, and each of 'em has a Reader to read Prayers in his Absence. The Minister's Maintenance is settled at 16000 *l.* Tobacco each, yearly, besides Perquisites, as 40 *s.* for a Funeral Sermon, 20 *s.* for a Marriage.

The

The Parish
Gentlemen
call'd the P
of one of
Place. Th
the sole Pow
be of the Ve
be conforma
are the Chur
Orders of th
the Parsons
and to prese
Power of I
sters, is lodg
are only two
ings in this
the Ordinar
points a Con
Visitations o
Clergy, for
by the stric
ment have h
low in *Virg*
Assemblies h
have 'em, to

In the Ye
they past an
ing and prop
none to prea
ordain'd by
And in 1663
great Restr
Zeal, to pr
Consequenc
those moder
ought not to
try to the R
Chapter of
of a College
Plantation,
Charge of th
Mary, who
of Land, th
exported fro

The Parish-Affairs are govern'd by a Vestry of twelve Gentlemen chosen out of the Inhabitants; these are call'd the Patrons of the Church, and on the Death of one of them the Survivors elect another in his Place. They have the Presentation of Ministers, and the sole Power of all Parish-Assessments: No Man can be of the Vestry, but what subscribes an Instrument to be conformable to the Church of *England*; two of these are the Church-Wardens, whose Business it is to keep the Orders of the Vestry obey'd, to collect the Parish and the Parsons Tobacco, to keep the Parish Accounts, and to present all Profaneness and Immorality. The Power of Induction upon the Presentation of Ministers, is lodg'd in the Governour's hands by Law. There are only two Presbyterian, and three Quakers Meetings in this Colony. The Bishop of *London*, who is the Ordinary of this and all the other Plantations, appoints a Commissary here, whose Business is to make Visitations of Churches, and have the Inspection of the Clergy, for which he's allow'd 100 *l. per Annum*, and by the strict hand that the Clergy and Government have held over Dissenters, they have been kept low in *Virginia*, and never encreas'd there: The Assemblies having done what their Governours would have 'em, to discourage them.

In the Year 1642. Sir *W. Berkley* then Governour, they pass an Act to prevent Dissenting Ministers preaching and propagating their Doctrines. They admitted none to preach in their Churches, but such as were ordain'd by some Bishop of the Church of *England*: And in 1663. Sir *William Berkley* being still Governour, great Restraints were laid upon them by a mistaken Zeal, to prevent their getting ground. Of what ill Consequence this has been to the Colony, I leave to those moderate *Virginians* to determine, who think they ought not to sacrifice the true Interest of their Country to the Revenge or Pride of a Party. In the first Chapter of this Treatise, we have hinted the Project of a College, which afterwards was built at Middle-Plantation, now call'd *Williamsburgh*, mostly at the Charge of their late Majesties King *William* and Queen *Mary*, who gave 2000 *l.* towards it, and 20000 Acres of Land, the Duty of 1 *d.* a pound on all Tobacco exported from *Virginia* and *Maryland* to the Plantations,

The History of Virginia.

tions, and the Surveyor-Generals Place, which was then vacant. He also granted them the Privilege of sending a Member to the Assembly. The Assembly afterwards added a Duty on Skins and Furrs. The whole Profit amounts now to above 400 *l.* a Year, and the Revenue encreases yearly. The Foundation was to consist of

A President.

Six Masters, or Professors; the Chief Master was to have 100 *l.* a Year.

100 Scholars, Graduates or Non-graduates.

They were enabled to purchase and hold to the value of 2000 *l.* a Year, and were to be govern'd and visited by certain Gentlemen nam'd in the Charter, who were to be call'd the Governours and Visitors; and upon the Death of any one of them, were impower'd to choose another in his Place. One of these was to be Rector, and their number in all to be 18. They were to name the President, Masters, and other Officers of the College, and had Power to make Statutes and Ordinances. The Building, when perfect, was to consist of a Quadrangle, and two sides of it were carry'd up. The Kitchen, Brew-house and Bake-house were finish'd.

The Professors were to read on all the liberal Sciences, on Agriculture, Architecture, Art Military, Navigation, Gardning, Trade, and Manufactures, once a Week from *Easter* to *Michaelmas*, and twice a Week from *Michaelmas* to *Easter*. They began upon Experiments of Plants, Minerals, and were assisted by the French in the *Monachan* Town; their own Lead, Iron and Copper Mines in the *Appallean* Mountains were under their Consideration, when the Fire put an end to their College and Studies. There were such Expectations of the Revenue, which wou'd be rais'd by all Tobacco exported to the other Colonies, that they talk'd of adding four itinerant Professors to the Resident, each to have 120 *l.* a Year, and these were to travel into *Europe*, *Asia*, *Africa*, and the other Parts of *America*, to make Inquisitions in natural and experimental Phylosophy for the use of this Univerfity: They were to take an Oath to write nothing

nothing that
College was
occasion to b

The first
was *Bray*,
tions in *E*
ry. They p
mencement
there was a g
ters came th
Sloops from
It being a n
perform the
themselves h
on this occas
if they had
time the Cle
into the Indi
to send for
dreadful Fire
finish'd, and
Project seem
be in a bett
can think of

nothing that they cou'd not prove to be true. The College was to bear their Charges, but they had no occasion to be at such Expence.

The first President of the College was Dr. *Thomas Bray*, who procur'd considerable Contributions in *England*, towards collecting a Library. They proceeded so far, that they had a Commencement there in the Year 1700. at which there was a great Concourse of People : several Planters came thither in their Coaches, and several in Sloops from *New-York*, *Pensilvania* and *Maryland*. It being a new thing in *America* to hear Graduates perform their Academical Exercises, The Indians themselves had the Curiosity to come to *Williamsburgh* on this occasion, and the whole Country rejoic'd as if they had some relish of Learning. About this time the Clergy here translated the Practice of Piety into the Indian Language, and the College intended to send for a Printer from *England*. Since that a dreadful Fire seiz'd this Building before it was quite finish'd, and consum'd it to Ashes, under which the Project seems to lie bury'd, and the Colony must be in a better Condition than now 'tis, before they can think of reviving it.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Climate, the Soil, and its Productions, as Trees, Seeds, Plants, Roots, Fruits, and Flowers.

WE may imagine by the Situation of the Country, that the Climate is Healthy, and indeed it generally agrees well with English Constitutions. 'Tis full of Rivers, and consequently the Soil very fruitful. The Sickness that the English who go thither complain of, is occasion'd by Folly, Intemperance, or Carelessness; and a sober prudent Man will not only find every thing that preserves and confirms Health, but also all things that are charming by the Beauty of the Prospect, and the Delight, the Fragrancy of the Fields and Gardens, the Brightness of the Skye, and Serenity of the Air affects the Ravish'd Senses. The greatest Disturbance the People meet with there, are terrible Claps of Thunder, which however do very little Harm, the excessive Heats of the Summer, against which the Inhabitants are defended by the cool Shades of the Woods and Groves, and stinging Insects, as Frogs, Snakes, Muscketa's, Chinchies, Seed-takes and Red-worms. The Rattle-Snake is most talk'd of, and his Bite without a present Application, is infallibly Death; but the Remedies are so well known, that there's ne're a Servant, and scarce a Slave who cannot cure it immediately, by applying the Rattle-snake's Heart to it, which restores the Patient in two or three hours. Besides, 'tis very rare here, that these or any of the other poisonous Snakes are to be seen. The Musketa's are troublesome, like Gnats in Marshy Ground in *England*, but are only found in the Fenny places there. They are stronger, and continue longer than the Gnats in *England*. As to the other Insects, there are ways to get rid of them, and the trouble they put the People to is not worth naming. The Winter in all *Virginia* does not continue above three or four Months, *December, January, February, and March*, of which thirty or

forty days on severe, but a long. The R. Heats of the S. July, and Au. the fresh Bre contribute m Comers, and

The Soil in and under it Brick; but a the Soil varies Low, and M'em, makes t The Highland good Crops o in Strength s ry rich, being and this Soil without man and Rushes li in general is Mouth of th Rice, Hemp, cold, hungry, berries, and C Poplars, Pine Hockly, Swe here in great Rivers is a v Chinkapins, Elder, Hasel, and Poplar. and its Prod Trees of an Pasture-grou Quarries of being at this merly work lated in the ster of Hem pany, wrote was found s bounds in ev

forty days only are very bad Weather. The Frosts are severe, but attended with a clear Skye, and don't last long. The Rains are frequent and refreshing, and the Heats of the Summer, which are most violent in *June*, *July*, and *August*, are much mitigated by them, and the fresh Breezes that are common in this Country contribute much to render the Heat tolerable to new Comers, and hardly sensible to the Inhabitants.

The Soil in general is a rich fat Mould 3 foot deep, and under it a Loam, of which they make a fine Brick; but according as the Situation is moist or dry, the Soil varies. 'Tis distinguish'd into 3 Sorts, *High*, *Low*, and *Marshy*, all which having Sand mix'd with 'em, makes their Land warmer than *Old England*. The Highlands are most Sandy: However they bear good Crops of Tobacco, only the Soil does not hold in Strength so long as the Low-Lands, which are very rich, being a blackish Mould about a Foot deep, and this Soil will hold its Strength 7 or 8 Crops, without manuring. Their Marsh-Lands bear Sedges and Rushes like ours, and are unimprov'd. Their Land in general is as good as in *England*. That at the Mouth of the Rivers is moist and fat, and produces Rice, Hemp, and Indian Corn. There are Veins of cold, hungry, Sandy Soil, where Huckleberries, Cranberries, and Chinkapins generally grow. Also Oaks, Poplars, Pines, Cedar, Cypress and Sweet-Gumms, Hockly, Sweet-Myrtle, and the Live Oak are found here in great Quantities. The Land higher up the Rivers is a various Soil, and stor'd with Chelnuts, Chinkapins, Oaks, Walnut, Hickories, Dogwood, Elder, Hasel, Locust, Sassafras, Elm, Ash, Beech, and Poplar. The Land at the Heads of the Rivers, and its Productions, are also various. Here are Trees of an incredible Bigness, and Plenty of Pasture-ground, Physick-Earth, Dyers-Wares, Coal, Quarries of Stone, Iron and Lead Mines; Col. *Bird* being at this time searching for one, which was formerly work'd, but destroy'd at the Massacre, as is related in the first Chapter; and Mr. *Wittaker*, Minister of *Henrico*, before the Dissolution of the Company, wrote home, That not far from the Fall, there was found some Silver Ore. Thus we see *Virginia* abounds in every thing that is for the Pleasure or Pro-

fit of the Inhabitants. We shall now describe some of the chief Productions of the Soil, and speak first of the Timber-Trees, of which the most useful are Oak, Cedar, Cypress, Firs; two sorts of Elm, Walnut and Ash. The Oaks are commonly of so prodigious Bigness, that they will measure two Foot square at 60 Foot high. The first Ships that went to *Virginia* were us'd to Load with Cedar and Clapboard, but some richer Commodities have been exported. There is not much of this Timber sent abroad, tho the Country was then full of Woods; they were so clear from Bushes, Bryars and Underwood, that a Man might have been seen above a Mile and a half, among them; and the Trees stood at that distance, that a Cart or Coach might have been driven between the thickest of the Trees, they having no Boughs to a great Height, yet they were so tufted, that they afford a very comfortable Shade in Summer. Yet tho the Grapes are juicy and plenty, all that have attempted to fall into the Wine-Trade, to raise Vineyards, and make Wine, have never been able to bring their Designs to perfection. The Reasons are, because the Fir and Pine-tree, with which the Country abounds, are noxious to the Vine; and the Experiments that have been made were in the Low-lands, subject to the Pine, and near the Malignant Influence of the Salt Water. This ruin'd Monsieur *Jamart* a French Merchants Vineyard on *James-River*, near *Archer's Hope-Creek*; and Sir *William Berkley's* had the same Inconveniences, and the same Fate. Several French *Vignerons* were sent over in 1621. the Year before the Massacre, and wrote over very promising Letters of the Country and the Vineyard they were raising; but that Bloody Treason of the Savages, put at end to them and their Undertaking, which the French Refugees at the *Monacan* Town talk of reviving. There are Plenty of Shrubs as well as of Timber, and besides the Berry, we have before-mention'd, there is a Brier growing something like the Sassa-parilla. The Berry is as big as a Pea round, and of a bright crimson Colour. Besides the Sassafras Tree, whose Root was formerly one of the best Commodities that came from hence, here are several sorts of Gums and Drugs, and most of the Shrubs that grow

grow in *Eng*
whole Count
riety of Plan
kind of eithe
Virginia, and
pleasant.

Of Stone-F
simmons or
Cherries, wh
and larger tha
ches like Gra
red within.
grows up high
Plenty of Pe
some of 'em c
mon, and rel
in abundance
The Plums t
Murrey Plum
ripen so kind
Plum is like
Putchamimes
a Damesin, to
eaten ripe, 't
green, is dang
lions. Their
Cherry, all
cultivating, a
ready treated
that 50 Butts
been made of
less than 11 o
den are the
Quinces in *V*
Quince-Drin
Grapes; the
sembling a C
ry; the Mac
maucks, a Fr
of Strawberry
as well the
mons do not
the *Virginian*
tives us'd to

grow in *England*, or other parts of *Europe*. The whole Country is interspers'd with an incredible variety of Plants and Flowers, there being scarce any kind of either, which does not thrive wonderfully in *Virginia*, and the Fruits are equally plentiful and pleasant.

Of Stone-Fruits, they have here Plums, and Persimmons or *Putchamines*. Here are three sorts of Cherries, which are as plentiful as they are in *Kent*, and larger than the English. The one grows in Bunches like Grapes; the other is black without, and red within. The third is the Indian Cherry, and grows up higher than the others do. Here is such Plenty of Peaches, that they give 'em to their Hogs; some of 'em call'd Malachotoons, are as big as a Lemon, and resembles it a little. Quinces they have in abundance; as also Pumpions and Muskmelons. The Plums that grow here are the black, and the Murrey Plum. The English sorts of Plums do not ripen so kindly as they do in *England*. Their Wild-Plum is like our *White-Plum*. The Persimmons or *Putchamines* are of several Sizes, from the Bigness of a Damesin, to that of a Bergamot Pear; when 'tis eaten ripe, 'tis as delicious as an Apricock; but if green, is dangerous, and causes Gripes and Convulsions. Their Taste and Colour resemble those of a Cherry, all those Fruits grow wild, and without cultivating, as most of those do that we have already treated of. Apples and Pears are so plentiful, that 50 Butts of Perry, and as many of Cyder have been made out of two Orchards, few of which have less than 11 or 1200 Trees. The Bergamot and Warden are the most common. There's great store of Quinces in *Virginia*, of which the People us'd to make Quince-Drink. Their Messamines are a kind of Grapes; the Cheinquamine's a kind of Fruit, resembling a Chesnut; the Rawcamen, like a Gooseberry; the Macoquez, a kind of Apple; Mattaquesumaucks, a Fruit like an Indian Fig; Matococks a kind of Strawberry; *Oconghtanamins*, like a *Caper*. Figs grow as well there as in *Spain*; but Oranges and Lemons do not thrive. Besides the Common Acorns, the *Virginians* find another sort with which the Natives us'd to make a sweet Oil to anoint their Joints;

and another sort of Acorn better than the Ordinary, the Indians dry'd and kept for their Winter Food, when Corn was scarce: Of Roots, they have the Puccoon and Musquaipern, the Juice of which is of a pleasant Colour, and the Indians made use of it to paint their Bodies and Warlike Arms. The Tockawaeigh, a very wholsome and savory Root. Shumack, Chapacour, and the famous Snake-root, so much admir'd in *England* for being a Cordial, and an Antidote in all Pestilential Diseases. There is no kind of Garden-root, but what they have in perfection; Sallad-Herbs, and Pot-herbs grow there spontaneously, as do Purslain, Sorrel, &c. Their Flowers are as fine as any in the World; such as the Crown-Imperial, the Cardinal-Flower, the Mocassin-Flower, the Tulip-bearing-Lawrel, the Tulip-Tree, the Locust like the Jessamine, the Perfuming-Crab-Tree, and the Assentamin, a kind of Pink. They have plenty of Musmelons, Water-Melons, Pumpions, Cushaws, Macocks and Gourds. Their Cushaws are a kind of Pumpions of a blewish-green colour, streak'd with white. Their Macocks are a less sort of Pumpions: There are several kinds of them: The Savages never eat the Gourds, planting them only for the Shells, which serve them instead of Flaggons and Cups. The Indians had Pease, Beans, and Potatoes, before the English came among them; but the Staff of their Food was their Corn; of which we have giv'n a large Description in the History of *New-England*.

Plantain of all sorts grow wild in the Woods; as also Yellow-Dock, and Burdock, Solomon's-Seal, Egri-mony, Centery, Scabions, Groundsel, Dwarf-Elder, Yarrow, and White Maiden-hair; Alarum is gather'd on the Sides of the Hills, and Soldanalla on the Bay-side. Their Dillany grows a Foot and half high: The Water distill'd from it, the best Medicine for the Worms: The Turbil and Mechoacan, or Roots exactly like 'em, grow there.

Tobacco is the standing Commodity of the Country, and is so beneficial to the Planter, and so natural to the Soil, that all other Improvements give place to that. Indeed they could turn their Hands to nothing that would employ so many Slaves and Servants, and require so little Stock to manage it, or take up such a large

large Tract of Land. Corn was sown in *America* cou-
England, that
like a Dock:
be manag'd
Fruit or Flow-
to all the Inju-
vourable to i-
by it. The
first so good as
greatest Reput-
and *Maryland*
not known how
have it all from
let it run to Se-
the Sprouts from
When it was s-
in the Sun, and
Planters sow th-
ners in *Englan*
there a Month,
well weeded.
of ones hand,
Weather, and
co-Hills. In a
high, and they
bottom Leaves
they may be
Leaves in 6 W-
The Planters p-
the Horn-Worm
ing and Sucker
or a Month; by
to turn to brow-
is a Sign of it
you must cut 'e
Day, then heap
and the next
where every P-
venient distanc-
the end of whic
moist Weather

large Tract of Land ; for the same Ground that is Planted every year with Tobacco, wou'd produce, if Corn was sown there, more than all the Plantations in *America* cou'd consume. This Plant is so common in *England*, that we need not describe it: 't grows much like a Dock: And whereas in our Gardens it must be manag'd with as much care as the choicest Fruit or Flower, in *Virginia* they leave it expos'd to all the Injuries of the Weather, which is very favourable to it, and 'tis seldom that the Crop suffers by it. The Tobacco of this Plantation was not at first so good as 'tis now. That of *Brasil* had once the greatest Reputation all over *Europe*, but now *Virginia* and *Maryland* has the best Price in all Markets. 'Tis not known how the Indians cur'd theirs: They now have it all from the English. 'Tis said they us'd to let it run to Seed, only succouring the Leaves, to keep the Sprouts from growing upon and starving them. When it was ripe, they pull'd them off, cur'd them in the Sun, and laid them up for use. The *Virginia* Planters sow the Tobacco-Seeds in Beds, as the Gardeners in *England* do Colwort-Seeds; they leave them there a Month, taking care all that time to have them well weeded. When the Plants are about the breadth of ones hand, they are remov'd in the first rainy Weather, and transplanted into what they call *Tobacco-Hills*. In a Month's time the Plants will be a Foot high, and they top them, and then prune off all the bottom Leaves, leaving only 7 or 8 on the Stalk, that they may be the better fed by the Top, and these Leaves in 6 Weeks time will be in their full growth. The Planters prune off the Suckers, and clear 'em of the *Horn-Worm* twice a Week, which is call'd Worming and Suckering; and this Work lasts three Weeks or a Month; by which time the Leaf from green begins to turn to brownish, and to spot, and to thicken, which is a Sign of its ripening. As fast as the Plants ripen, you must cut 'em down, leave 'em in the Field for half a Day, then heap them up, let 'em lye and sweat a night, and the next day carry them to the Tobacco-House, where every Plant is hang'd one by another, at a convenient distance, for about a Month or 5 Weeks; at the end of which time they strike or take 'em down in moist Weather, when the Leaf gives, or else 'twill crum-

ble to dust; after which they are laid upon Sticks, and cover'd up close in the *Tobacco-House* for a Week or a Fortnight to sweat, and then opening the Bulk in a wet day, the Servants strip them and sort them, the top-Leaves being the best, and the bottom the worst Tobacco. The last Work is to pack it in Hogheads, or bundle it up, which is also done in a wet Season; for in the curing Tobacco, wet Seasons are as necessary as dry, to make the Leaf plyant, which wou'd otherwise be brittle and break. They take a great deal of Pains with it now, and with all their Trouble can scarce make it turn to account. The English have carry'd over a thousand several sorts of the Productions of Nature, and have found all to succeed there: They have had such extraordinary Success with Apples and Pears, that there's never a Planter but has an Orchard, and makes large Quantities of Cyder and Perry, which is some of their common Drinks, and there is nothing in *England* belonging either to a Garden or Orchard, but what they have or may have there in as great or greater Perfection.

C H A P. VII.

Of the Beasts, Birds, and Fish.

THE Beasts that are peculiar to this Country, are the Aronghena, somewhat like a Badger. The Assapanic, or flying Squirrel. The *Mussascus*, a kind of Water-Rat. The Utchunquois, a Wild-Cat. The Opassum, a certain Animal, whose Female has a Bag under her Belly, wherein she carries her young ones. The Woods are stock'd with Deer, the same in kind with ours in *England*, and larger and fatter for the most part. There are Racoons, Beavers, Otters, Foxes, Wild-Cats, Martins and Minks in the Freshes. The Indians are dextrous in catching them, and keep the Secret to themselves, that they may preserve the Furr Trade, which otherwise the English wou'd soon drive them out of. Lyons, Leopards,

pards, Elks, are met with some other Furs are not much was not over wild or tame Cattle that English breed as in *England*.

Having m the Reader v of it: This it extends in like Wings; rather Skip Tree. The Tail like a R the False B Young, is th a loose Skin to the Flesh after they ha the hinder p small hand t they are full fly when a go to rest o have learn'd gest part of are bred in in the true o grow there in perfect S They then o in and out a took the D fasten'd to they becam hurt to the o her Young. which yiel are caught Rivers. T cause the C

pards, Elks, Bears and Wolves, especially the latter, are met with in *Virginia*, tho not so frequently as in some other Parts of *North America*, and the Wolves are not much bigger than English Foxes. This Country was not over-stock'd with any kind of Beasts, either wild or tame, when the English discover'd it, and the Cattle that are now to be found there, are all of English breeding : Horses are as plenty and as good as in *England*.

Having mention'd the Flying-Squirrel, we think the Reader will not be displeas'd with a Description of it: This Creature has a fleshy Substance, which it extends in its skipping from one Tree to another, like Wings ; and by the help of these, he will fly or rather Skip 30 or 40 yards at a time, from Tree to Tree. The Opassum has a Head like a Hog, and a Tail like a Rat, 'tis about the bigness of a Cat ; and the False Belly, in which the Female carries her Young, is thus describ'd by one that saw it. 'Tis like a loose Skin quite over the Belly, which never sticks to the Flesh, but may be look'd into at all times, after they have been concern'd in Procreation. In the hinder part of it is an Overture big enough for a small hand to pass, and thither the young ones, after they are full hair'd, and strong enough to run about, fly when any Danger appears ; or when they go to rest or suck, and continue to do so till they have learn'd to live without their Dam. The strangest part of this Description, is, that the young ones are bred in this false Belly, without ever having been in the true one. They are form'd at the Teat, and grow there for several Weeks together, till they are in perfect Shape, and have Strength, Sight, and Hair : They then drop off, and rest in this False Belly, going in and out at pleasure : The Person from whom we took the Description, says, he has seen them thus fasten'd to the Teat, from the bigness of a Fly till they became as large as a Mouse. Neither is it any hurt to the old one to open the Bag, and look in upon her Young. Some Panthers, Bufaloes and wild Hogs, which yield equal Pleasure and Profit to the Hunter, are caught up in the Country near the Heads of the Rivers. The reason of there being few Sheep, is because the Country is not yet clear'd of Wolves ; all

other Beasts that are reckon'd wild, do no damage to the *Virginians*, flying from the Face of a Man whenever they see one; and the Planters, by Pasture-Fences, secure their Cattle and Hogs from them. There were no Rats nor Mice there, when the English first landed; but they soon multiply'd so from the English Shipping, that once there was like to have been a sort of *Rat-Plague* among the Planters. The Virginian Water-Rat, or *Mussascus*, smells like Musk. Pole-cats and Wefels are sometimes to be seen there, but the Plenty of Hares and Rabbits make amends for it.

There is no Country more remarkable for the variety of Birds in it than *Virginia*, where the Woods and Groves in the Spring, Summer, Autumn, and almost all the Year, are render'd as delightful by the Musick of their feather'd Quires, as by the Coolness of their Shades, or the Fragrancy of their Flowers. Among these the Rock-Birds are the most diverting: They love Society so well, that whenever they see Mankind, they will perch upon a Twig near the Person, and sing the sweetest Airs in the World. The next is the Humming-Bird, who revels among the Flowers, and licks off the Dew and Honey from their Leaves. 'Tis not half so large as an English Wren, and its Colour is a shining Mixture of Scarlet, Green and Gold. There are Black-birds with red Shoulders that come in prodigious Flights out of the Woods about the Fall of the Leaf; a sort of Nightingal, whose Feathers are very gay, of a Crimson and blew Colour; but it seldom or never sings. The Mock-Bird comes in about *March* and stays till *June*, and in bigness and colour is like a Thrush. The Herons there are very large, and the Partridges very small. There's great variety of Wild Fowl, as Swans, Geese, Brants, Sheldrakes, Ducks, Mallard, Teal, Blewings, Cranes, Curlews, Snipes, Woodcocks, Oxe-Eyes, Plover, Larks, Pheasants, Pigeons; and which is best of all 'em, wild Turkeys, much larger than our tame; they are in Season all the Year. The *Virginians* have several ingenious Devices to take them; among others a Trap wherein 16 or 17 have been caught at a time.

As for Fish, that 'tis hard of the Stories, mainly Roman, such as Shoals above Water, Canoo with half an hour World are be, ginian Sea-C, which some an any Fish, but or the Rivers. to this Coun to eat, but l fting in it. then they are *America*; suc and a Fish in no Name as Toad-Fish, w till 'tis like to plentiful in are as big as in the Shells. fish found on have been se Brooks and F up to Spawn through wit also at that t and Lamprey In the Salt V are Shoals of thing like a *Virginians* e and red Dru fish, Bass, C backs, Ma Shrimps, M Mullers, E in the Riv and are eat are not eat

As for Fish there's such prodigious plenty of em, that 'tis hardly credible to an European. Some of the Stories that have been told of it, are certainly Romantick, and are rejected as fictitious, such as Shoals of Fish, swimming with their Heads above Water, and to be taken by Hand, loading a Canoo with Fish in the open Sea by one Indian, in half an hour; but 'tis certain that no Rivers in the World are better stor'd than theirs, and that the Virginian Sea-Coast abounds in Cod and Sturgeon, of which some are eight foot long. Indeed there's scarce any Fish, but what may be caught either in the Sea or the Rivers. And yet there is only one sort peculiar to this Country, which is the Stingrafs. 'Tis good to eat, but has a long Tail with a very dangerous sting in it. There are other strange Fishes; but then they are also to be found in most parts of *North-America*; such as the Coney-Fish, Rock-Fish, Cat-Fish, and a Fish in the form of a Dragon, to which there's no Name as yet assign'd in our Language. The Toad-Fish, when 'tis taken out of the Water, swells till 'tis like to burst. Muscles and Oysters are very plentiful in *Virginia*, and so large, that some of 'em are as big as a Horses Hoof. Pearl has been often found in the Shells. The Indians had large, but the English found only Seed-Pearl, of which good Quantities have been sent to *England*. In the Spring-time the Brooks and Fords are so full of Herrings, which come up to Spawn there, that 'tis almost impossible to ride through without treading on them. The Rivers are also at that time stock'd with Shads, Rock-Sturgeon, and Lampreys, which fasten themselves to the Shad. In the Salt Water at certain times of the Year, there are Shoals of other Fish; such as the *Old Wife*, something like an Herring, and the Sheeps-head, which *Virginians* esteem in the number of their Best. Black and red Drumms, Trouts, Taylors, Green-fish, Sun-fish, Bass, Chub, Place, Flounders, *Virginian* Flat-backs, Maids, Wives, small Turtle, Crabs, *Virginian* Shrimps, Needle-fish, Breme, Carp, Pike, Jack, Mullets, Eels, and Perch. These are to be found in the Rivers and Brooks all the Summer long, and are eaten by the People. Those that follow are not eaten: The Whale, Porpus, Shark, Dog-fish,

Garr,

Garr, Thornback, Saw-fish, Frog-fish, Land-Crabs, Fidlers and Periwinkles. Many of these Fish will leap into Canoes and Boats, as the English or Indians cross a River; and there's such Quantities of them, that they often tire the Sportsmen with taking 'em. Whereas in *England*, they are generally tir'd for want of it. The manner of Fishing-Hawks preying upon Fish, is very diverting. The Sport is to be seen every Summer in the Mornings, and sometimes all day long. These Hawks are wonderful eager after their Game, when the Fish first come in the Spring. In the dead of the Winter 'tis suppos'd they fish further off at Sea, or remain among the uninhabited Islands upon the Sea-Coast. They have often been seen to catch the Fish out of the Water, and as they were flying away with their Quarry, the Bald Eagles have taken it from them again. The Fishing-Hawk will hover over the Water, and rest upon the Wing some Minutes together, and then from a vast height dart down directly into the Water, plunge into it for the space of half a Minute, and at last bring up a Fish with him, so big, that he can hardly carry it. When he is on the Wing he shakes himself so strongly, that the Water comes off of him like a Mist, and then he flies to the Woods with his Prey, unless the Bald-Eagle intercepts him, and takes it away from him. This Bird, as soon as he perceives the Fishing-Hawk, with his Game in his Mouth, pursues him, and strives to get above him in the Air, which if he can do, the Hawk lets his Fish drop, and the Eagle leaves him to take up his Prey, which he shoots after with such surprizing Swiftness, that he catches it in the Air, before it falls to the Ground. These Fishing-Hawks, when the Seasons are extraordinarily plentiful, will catch a Fish, and loiter about with it in the Air, on purpose to have a Chace with the Eagle for it; and if the Eagle does not come, he'll make a daring Noise, as if it were to defy him. This Sport has frequently been seen by the English, and by the Description of it must certainly be extremely pleasant to the Spectators.

of the Coin
and from
Europe
Revenue
in: The
to Engla
under.

WHO the co
ter or Ex
of any for T
English and S
lowering of
the Coin to t
more than it d
are either Gol
Gold of the S
Money. Ther
this Country
Government,
of the Coin, is
little it has. A
nience, unles
oblig'd to hav
Coin, which
made to effe
expected and
in this Plant
enough for
rers and Tra
commencing
by this mean
veral Coins t

C H A P. VIII.

Of the Coins in Virginia : Of the Trade to and from England, and other Parts of Europe and America : The Prodigious Revenue that the Customs of Tobacco brings in : The Advantage that Trade has been to England, and the Disadvantages it lies under.

THO the common way of Traffick there is by Barter or Exchange of one Commodity for another, or of any for Tobacco; yet there is some Silver Coins, English and Spanish, and were much more, till the lowering of the Value tempted People to export the Coin to the other Plantations, where it went for more than it did in *Virginia*. The Chief of their Coins are either Gold of the Stamp of *Arabia*, or Silver and Gold of the Stamp of Spanish *America*, or English Money. There's very little of either kind to be seen in this Country for the Reasons above-mention'd : The Government, round about it, often raising the Value of the Coin, is the Cause that *Virginia* is drain'd of the little it has. And 'tis impossible to prevent this Inconvenience, unless all the Colonies on the Continent were oblig'd to have one and the same Standard for their Coin, which there have lately been some attempts made to effect, tho without the Success that was expected and desir'd. The Scarcity of Money is such in this Plantation, that Gentlemen can hardly get enough for Travelling Charges, or to pay Labourers and Tradesmens Wages. It occasions also the commencing many vexatious Suits for Debt, which by this means are contracted. The Value of the several Coins that are there, is as follows :

The

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
The Spanish Double Doublon, . . .	03	10	00
The Doublon, consequently, . . .	01	15	00
The Pistole,	00	17	06
Arabian Chequins,	00	10	00
Pieces of Eight (except of <i>Peru</i>) } weighing 16 penny Weight, }	00	05	00
French Crowns,	00	05	09
<i>Peru</i> Pieces of Eight, and Dutch } Dollars, }	00	04	00

And all English Coin as it goes in *England*.

The Trade of this Colony, as well as that of *Maryland*, consists almost entirely of Tobacco; for the Country would produce several extraordinary Commodities fit for Trade; yet the Planters are wholly bent on planting Tobacco, that they seem to have laid aside all thoughts of other Improvements. This Trade is brought to such Perfection, that the *Virginia* Tobacco, especially the sweet-scented, which grows on *York-River*, is reckon'd the best in the World, and is what is generally vended in *England* for a Home Consumption. The other sorts, call'd *Oranoc*, and that of *Maryland*, are hotter in the Mouth; but they turn to as good an Account, being in demand in *Holland*, *Denmark*, *Sweden*, and *Germany*. Of this Commodity 30000 Hogsheads have been exported yearly, which besides the other Advantages that the English reap by it, have clear'd 5 *l.* a Hogshead in a Foreign Market, and encreas'd the General Stock of the Nation, 150000 *l.* a year. The whole Trade of Tobacco is indeed one of the most Profitable of all the English Commerce, it employs above 200 Sail of stout Ships every year; and brings in between 3 and 400000 *l.* to her Majesty's Treasury one year with another. Tho this Calculation may seem too extravagant to such as know nothing of this Trade, and to some who make guesses of the Trade in general only, from their own in particular, yet it will appear to be Modest to all that have experience in the Matter. There are 200 Sail of Ships freighted with this Commodity *Communibus Annis*, from the whole Bay: In which we include the

Province of
n't reckon th
Tobacco; in
e suppose to
e Duty of thos
Tobacco each
10000 *l.* for th
orted will not
the Excheque
ack, and part
0000 *l.* for th
ported, the
e 70000 Hog
30000 *l.* a year
to the Exche
his War-time
just Calculati
e whole, ca
g that the
ave escap'd m
maica, and
ate, with s
number of Shi
pretend to be v
rade, have as
een Ship'd off
ear, and 400
re rather too
oth with refer
nd the Addit
stock. But w
ou'd by our c
on; and to r
ible to the Re
stly this Tra
s well as in th
pool has had
hence in a Y
e year with
or 10 Sail en
and the City o
year Duty fo
ear improbab
orm'd by Bri

Province of *Maryland*; and, one with another, we
 don't reckon they carry less than 300 Hogsheads
 of Tobacco; in all 70000 Hogsheads; of which half
 we suppose to be sold and spent in *England*; and
 the Duty of those 35000 Hogsheads, at but 400 weight
 of Tobacco each, will come to 8 *l.* a Hogshead, and
 30000 *l.* for the whole. The other half which is ex-
 ported will not produce above a 5th part so much
 to the Exchequer, because all the Imposts are drawn
 back, and part of the Subsidy; yet allowing but
 10000 *l.* for the Duty of the 35000 Hogsheads
 exported, the whole Amount of the Customs for
 the 70000 Hogsheads of Tobacco, will come to
 40000 *l.* a year; and so much it certainly brings
 into the Exchequer in a time of Peace. For in
 this War-time our Trade is more uncertain; and
 just Calculation of this Branch of it, in part, or in
 the whole, cannot now be made, tho' consider-
 ing that the *Virginia* and *Maryland* Merchants
 have escap'd much better than those of *Barbadoes*,
Jamaica, and the *Charibbee* Islands, our Esti-
 mate, with some abatement, according to the
 number of Ships lost, may stand good. Some who
 pretend to be very well acquainted with the *Virginia*
 Trade, have assur'd us, that 100000 Hogsheads have
 been Ship'd off from *Virginia* and *Maryland* in a
 year, and 40000 of 'em spent in *England*: If so, we
 are rather too short in our Account than too long,
 both with reference to the Calculation of the Customs,
 and the Addition the Trade makes to the National
 Stock. But we have kept as close to Truth as we
 cou'd by our own Experience, and the best Informa-
 tion; and to render what we have said the more cre-
 dible to the Reader, 'tis necessary he shou'd know how
 fastly this Trade is improv'd in all Parts of *England*,
 as well as in the Port of *London*. The Town of *Le-*
verpool has had 50 Sail of Ships unlade at her Key from
 hence in a Year, for several Years past, reckoning
 one year with another; many of the out-Ports have
 10 or 15 Sail employ'd yearly in the *Virginia*-Trade,
 and the City of *Bristol* is said to pay above 60000 *l.*
 year Duty for Tobacco her self, which will not ap-
 pear improbable, if what we are very credibly in-
 form'd by *Bristol*-Men is true, that one Ship belong-
 ing



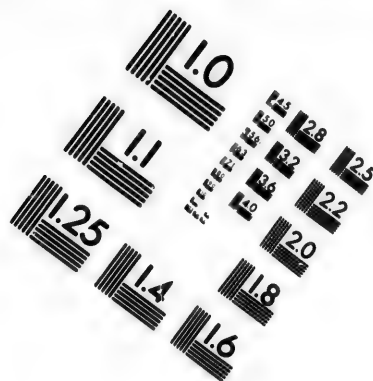
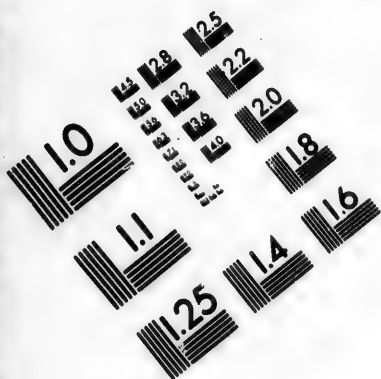
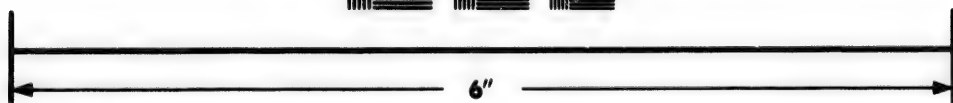
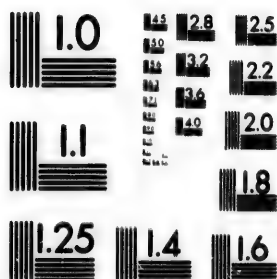


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

2.4
2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
2.0
1.8

11
10
01

ing to that Port, call'd the *Bristol-Merchants*, have paid a or 10000 *l.* Custom, every year for the Twenty years last past. And very often 30 or 40 Sail of Ships have come into the *Severn* at a time bound for *Bristol*; besides Runners and Stragglers. If the Out-ports together send 100 Sail to *Virginia* in a year, as we think we have sufficiently prov'd, *London* will more than make up the other 100. And what we have said of the Trade and the Customs, will seem very rational and certain.

Besides the vast Advantage that accrues to the National Stock, by the Exportation of *Tobacco* from *England* to all other Parts of *Europe*; we must consider, how beneficial this Trade is, by the prodigious Number of Hands it employs, and Families it maintains, in *England* and *Virginia*: No less than Seventy thousand *English* Souls in *Virginia*; as many in *England*. There are vast Quantities of Manufactures exported from hence daily to this Colony; who have all their Necessaries for Cloathing, Labour, and Luxury, from *England*: And those Commodities that are sent hence lying most among Handicraft-Traders, are such employ the most Hands, feed the most Mouths, and consequently are the most beneficial to the Publick, such as *Weavers*, *Shoemakers*, *Hatters*, *Ironmongers*, *Turners*, *Joiners*, *Tailors*, *Cuylers*, *Smiths*, *Bakers*, *Brewers*, *Ropemakers*, *Hosiery*, and indeed all the Mechanicks in *England*; their Manufactures being good Merchandise in *Virginia*, when the Ignorance or Avarice of some Merchants do not glut the Market. The Commodities sent thither, besides *Linnen*, *Silks*, *India* Goods, *Wine*, and other foreign Manufactures, are Cloth coarse and fine, *Serges*, *Stuffs*, *Bays*, *Hats*, and all sorts of *Haberdashers* Ware, *Houghs*, *Bills*, *Axes*, *Nails*, *Adzes*, and other *Iron-Ware*, *Cloaths* ready-made, *Knives*, *Bisket*, *Flower*, *Stockings*, *Shoes*, *Caps* for Servants; and in short, every thing that is made in *England*.

They formerly drove a considerable Trade with *Pipe-Staves* and *Hoops*, from *Virginia* to *Madera*, *Terceras*, *Fial*, and the other Islands call'd the *Azores*; but lately *New-England* and *New-York* have almost driv'n the *Virginians* out of that profitable Trade.

Trade. T
from the S
Tobacco, w
ort of Peo
roes, and
better th
ants and
provisions t
Exchange
or notwit
their own,
free, as h
t they ar
provide
fetch
ral Trade
Tobacco,
Commodity
reater Pri
nly capab
er-Trade,
lofin. The
otton, and
driving the
World, and
formerly in
reat Charg
ature, sin
wanting En
ral of the
they did no
went abo
en oblig'
wanting of
neously in
mes in a
e as Flax
ce of G
eth's Re
English neg
; not so
askets, Fi
nians mig
and Pro

Trade. They still keep part of the Trade to and from the Sugar-Islands, on account of the *Tork-River* Tobacco, which is most smoak'd among the better sort of People; tho' the *Oranoc* will serve the Negroes, and the worst of the White Servants, as well to Virginia better than the sweet-scented. The *Virginia-Merchants* and Planters export Tobacco, Cattle, and other Provisions to *Barbadoes* and the *Leward Islands*; and the *Exchange* bring back Rum, Melasses, and Sugar. For notwithstanding they make good Brandy of their own, and might have Sugar from their Sugar-tree, as has been prov'd by many Experiments; yet they are so lazy, that they will be at no pains to provide themselves with any thing which they can fetch elsewhere for Tobacco. There are several Trades which they might fall into, beside that of Tobacco, and which would be a Service to that Commodity, because the less of it was made, the greater Price it would bear. The Country is certainly capable of large Improvements, by the *Timber-Trade*, and its Appurtenances, as Pitch, Tar, and Rosin. They might also manufacture Flax, Hemp, Cotton, and even Silk; the three first Commodities thriving there as well as in any Country in the World, and the Mulberry-Tree feeding Silk-Worms formerly in abundance. *Edward Diggs Esq;* was at great Charge and Pains to promote the Silk-Manufacture, since it was given over by others; but wanting Encouragement, he also gave it over: Several of the late Governours have, for Reasons which they did not think fit to reveal, discourag'd all such who went about Manufactures; and the Planters have been oblig'd to stick to their old Drudgery, the Planting of Tobacco. Silk-Grafs grows there spontaneously in many places, and may be cut several times in a year. The Fibres of this Plant are as strong as Flax, and much stronger than Hemp: A Piece of Grogram was made of it in *Queen Elizabeth's* Reign, and presented to her; and yet the *English* neglect it, and make no manner of Use of it; not so much as the *Indians* did, who made their Baskets, Fishing-Nets and Lines with it. The *Virginians* might also drive as good a Trade with Cattle and Provisions, Horses, Cows, Oxen, Beef, Pork,

Pork, &c. as the People of *New-England* and *Carolina* do to the Sugar-Islands: But all their Thoughts run upon Tobacco, and they make nothing of those Advantages, which would enrich an industrious People.

Indeed the Naval Stores that might be brought thence to *England*, for the Queen's and Merchants Service, are of such Consequence, that 'twould be well, if some Care was taken to oblige them to Manufacture 'em, and due Encouragement was given to do it. It seems a little unaccountable, why the *English*, whose Plantations are so well furnish'd with those Commodities, should be at the Charge of buying them in the *Baltick* with Ready Money; such as Pitch, Tar, Rosin, Turpentine, Plank, Timber, Masts, Yards, and Cordage. *New-England* and *Virginia* would plentifully supply all our Naval Wants, and we should not then be oblig'd to the People of the North, who do not always deal friendly or fairly by us. The *Virginians* are so far from thinking of improving these Manufactures, that tho' they see others send thither to build Ships, they seldom or never do it themselves. They not only neglect making a Trade of Provisions, but even to provide a necessary Store against an accidental Scarcity, contenting themselves with a Supply of Food from Hand to Mouth; insomuch that if a scarce year should come, there would not be enough in the Country to subsist them three Months. The only Excuse that the *Virginians* can plead for their Laziness is, that their Industry was never encourag'd. Their Want of Towns hinders them from receiving many Advantages by the Fruitfulness of their Soil: for the People who inhabited them would take those Commodities off their Hands, which every Planter in the Country is furnish'd with at home. By this Want of Cohabitation, they are incapable of making a beneficial Use of their Flax, Hemp, Cotton, Silk, Silk-Grass, and Wool; which might otherwise supply their Necessities from their Towns; and their Tobacco would enrich them, as we have shew'd elsewhere. The greatest of their Discouragements is the high Duties on their Commodities, the Custom being often ten times as much as

T
the Prime C
is no Abatem
for high Freig
Crop, the D
which may
when his Go
the Factor's
Proceed com
only disappo
his Bills that
forc'd to pay
or forc'd to f
who, having
him insensib
at a mean
Bills, he is f
at dear Rates
he goes upon
bluthes to e
lawful. If
Factors take
twill hardly
remedy'd, y
Trade, whic
And how can
so often an
these things,
we may ven
two to this
who think
but their ov
presentation
the Manager
They make
when there i
join with the
a Harbour f
to cruise;
them so run
the Merchant
the Seamen
Practices of
when he was
the Country

the Prime Cost. And if it wants in Goods, there is no Abatement for it, no Consideration for Losses, for high Freight and Premio's of Insurance, for a small Crop, the Dearness of Hands, and other Accidents which may prove the Ruin of this Plantation: For when his Goods come to Market, after Custom and the Factor's Bill for Commission is paid, the Neet Proceed comes to little. The poor Planter is not only disappointed in the Value of his Goods, but his Bills that he drew come back protested, and he is forc'd to pay exorbitant Interest, to prevent being su'd, or forc'd to sign Judgments to the Merchant there; who, having got the least Hold of his Estate, feeds him insensibly with Money, till the whole follows at a mean Rate. If this Fate does not attend his Bills, he is forc'd to buy the Necessaries at home, at dear Rates, which he wrote for to *England*; and if he goes upon Trust, 'tis at such Prizes, that a Usurer blushes to extort, but Custom makes it look like lawful. If he sells his Tobacco in the Country, the Factors take Care to beat down the Price so low, that it will hardly pay for cultivating. How can all this be remedy'd, you say, in War Time? By securing their Trade, which would make Insurances unnecessary: And how can it be secur'd? That Question has been so often answer'd to such as have the Care of these things, 'tis needless for us to decide it here. This we may venture to say, that the sending a Ship or two to this or other Colonies, under Commanders who think themselves Admirals, and defy all Power but their own, will never answer the End. A Representation of which was made to those that have the Management of these Affairs, in which 'twas said, *They make it their Business to oppose Authority, and when there is any Faction in any Place, they are sure to join with them against the Governour; They will lie in a Harbour for a Week together, without once going out to cruise; by their ill Usage of their Men, they force them to run away from the Ship, and then they ruin the Merchants and Trade of the Place, by pressing away the Seamen from the Vessels.* Some Instances of the ill Practices of these Captains are mention'd. One of them, when he was at Virginia, neither spar'd the Gentlemen of the Country, the Queen's Officers, nor the Governour him-

The History of Virginia.

himself, because they would not suffer him to marry a Gentleman's Daughter, when at the same time he had a Wife and Children at London. Upon which he attempted the Lives of the Gentlewoman's Father, several of her Relations, especially of a very worthy Gentleman, one Col. Cary, who courted the young Lady. The Governour was forc'd to secure the Peace: The Province being all in an uproar by this Man's extravagant Actions. The Council of Maryland complain'd of another, representing, He was fitter for Bedlam than to command a Ship. And another at New-York, When the Lord Cornbury order'd him to take several Vessels laden with Provisions on her Majesty's Account, in Pennsylvania and Carolina, and convoy them to Jamaica, excus'd himself, saying, His Ship was laid up, and unrigg'd. They might have been ready before Christmas, but he would not go till the 25th of March, promising then to set Sail. However, he lay in the Harbour till the latter end of May; all which time her Majesty paid Demurrage, the Provisions lying on board, which is great Damage. He refus'd to obey the Orders he receiv'd to touch at Carolina, and take those Vessels under his Convoy.

But should we go about to write a History of all the Complaints that have been made against such Officers as these, for their Miscarriages in America, one might add another Volume to these of the Plantations.

A State of Virginia.

We have also seen a State of Virginia, drawn by an Inhabitant of North-America, and presented to the Lords of Trade in England. The People are very numerous, dispers'd thro' the whole Province. Their almost sole Business is planting and improving Tobacco, even to that degree, that most of them scarce allow themselves time to produce their necessary Provisions, and consequently take little Leisure to busy themselves about Matters of State. They have always been respectful and obedient to Government, &c. Again, On every River of this Province there are Men in Number from ten to thirty, who by Trade and Industry have got very compleat Estates. These Gentlemen take Care to supply the poorer sort with Goods and Necessaries, and are sure to keep them always in their Debt, and consequently dependant on them. Out of this Number are

chosen

chosen her
and Officer
nlemen have
from their
vernment
They confide
to her Maj
sides on the
they ought
her Majesty
themselves
in English
Records of
govern them
almost stand
ble House of
follows in th
to we leave

The Soci
count they
rica, tell us
and about
College, er
Youth, in
A Maintona
by Disuse is
rishes are no
In Princess
tical Profess
Society hav
Wallace of E
Of the C
already, but
count of it
Charter give
a publick F
and a Presi
&c. and in
and Mary C
Professors an
mer-School,
destroy'd by
sm did this
this Provinc

chosen her Majesty's Council, the Assembly, the Justices and Officers of the Government. Many of these Gentlemen have apply'd themselves of late Years to procure from their Governours good Laws, for the better Government and Improvement of the Country, &c. Again, They consider this Province is of far greater Advantage to her Majesty, than all the rest of the Provinces besides on the Main; and therefore falsely conclude, that they ought to have greater Privileges than the rest of her Majesty's Subjects. Further, The Assembly think themselves entitled to all the Rights and Privileges of an English Parliament, and begin to search into the Records of that Honourable House, for Precedents to govern themselves by. The Council imagine, they almost stand upon equal Terms with the Right Honourable House of Lords. We think a great Part of what follows in this Representation might have been spar'd, so we leave it as we found it.

The Society for propagating the Gospel, in the Account they have publish'd of their Success in America, tell us, Virginia is divided into fifty Parishes, and about thirty Chapels. Here was also a noble College, erected for the Education of the American Youth, in the Studies of Divinity and Philosophy. A Maintenance for the Students has been settled, but by Disuse is impair'd in many Places. Several Parishes are not supply'd with Ministers, particularly in Princess Ann's County. There was no Mathematical Professor in William and Mary College. The Society have paid to Mr. Tyliard 20 l. and to Mr. Wallace of Elizabeth City Parish 15 l. in Books.

Of the College above-mention'd, we have spoken already, but since that have met with a better Account of it. A lately Fabrick was rais'd, a Royal Charter given, with ample Privileges and Immunities, a publick Fund was allotted for the Endowment of it, the Society and a President appointed with an honourable Salary, for propagation, &c. and in Honour of the Founder it was call'd William and Mary College. But it could not be furnish'd with Professors and Students, nor advanc'd above a Grammar-School, before the whole College was unfortunately destroy'd by Fire. And the great Service Col. Nicholson did this Society, and the Cause of Religion, in this Province, while he was Governour, has been

See an Account of the Society &c. p. 26.

The History of Virginia.

often acknowledg'd by them, in Publick and Private.

We have nothing further to observe relating to *Virginia*; but that on the Death of Mr. *Notte*, my Lord *Orkney's* Deputy in the Government of this Colony, Col. *Hunter* was appointed his Successor in that honourable Post, *A. D. 1767*. On which he embark'd for his Province, and in his Passage was taken by the French, and carry'd into *France*: From whence he return'd into *England*, and now waits for a Convoy to *Virginia*.

We have only to add a List of the Chief Officers, Civil and Military, as is done in the other Parts of this Treatise.

Col. *Hunter*, Governour.

Edmund Jennings, Esq; President.

Dudley Diggs, Esq;
Benjamin Harrison, Sen' Esq;
Robert Carter, Esq;
John Custis, Esq;
 The Reverend Mr. *James*
Blair,
Philip Ludwell, Esq;
Henry Duke, Esq;
Robert Quarry, Esq;
John Smith, Esq;
John Lewis, Esq;
William Churchill, Esq;

} Counsellors.

Commissary to the Bishop of *London*, the Reverend
 Mr. *James Blair*.

Auditor of the Revenue, *Dudley Diggs*, Esq;

Secretary, *Edmund Jennings*, Esq;

Receiver General, *William Bird*, Esq;

Collector of the Customs, Col. *Gawen Corbin*.

Attorney General, *Stephen Tompson*.

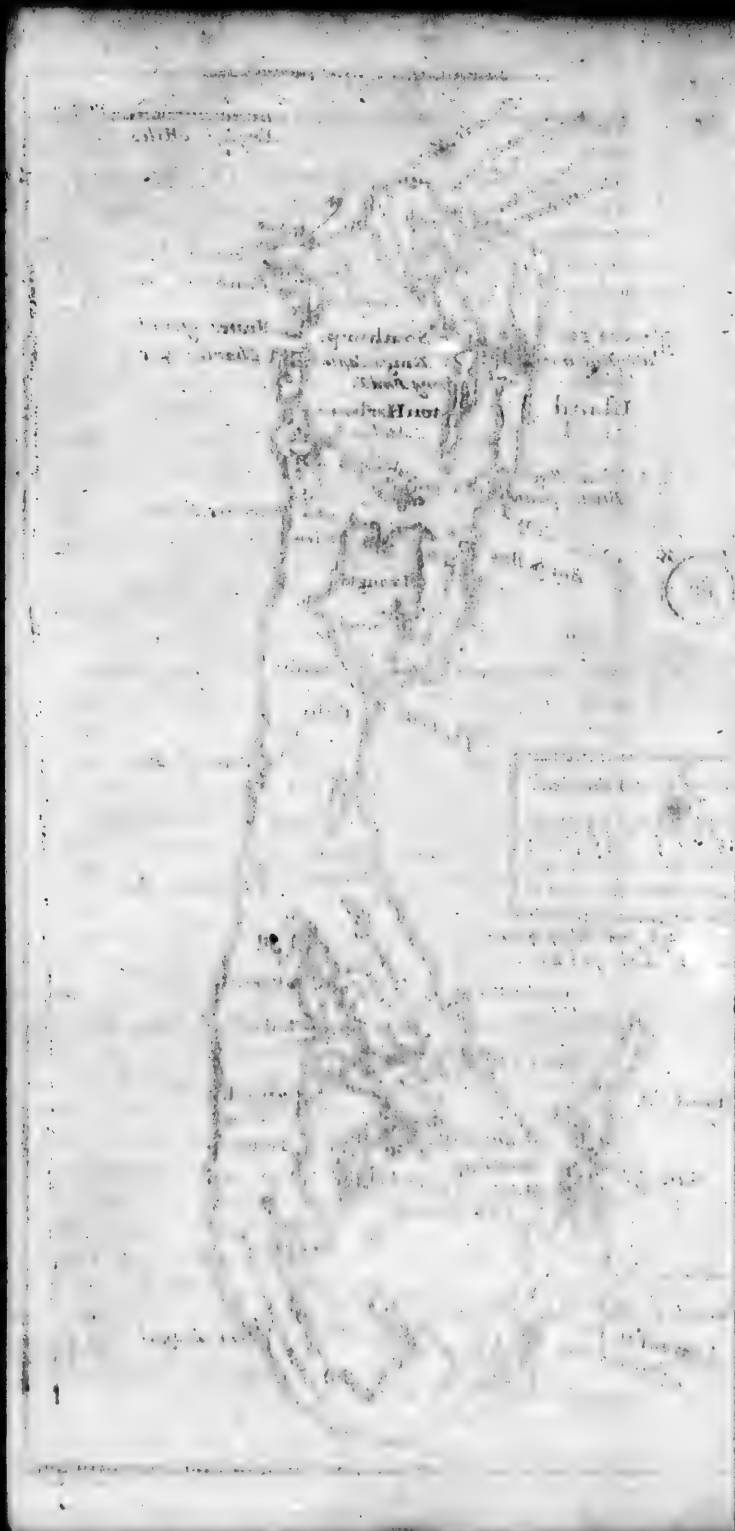
nd Pri-
relating
Norte,
t of this
uccessor
n which
Passage
France:
nd now
Officers,
Parts of

Reverend

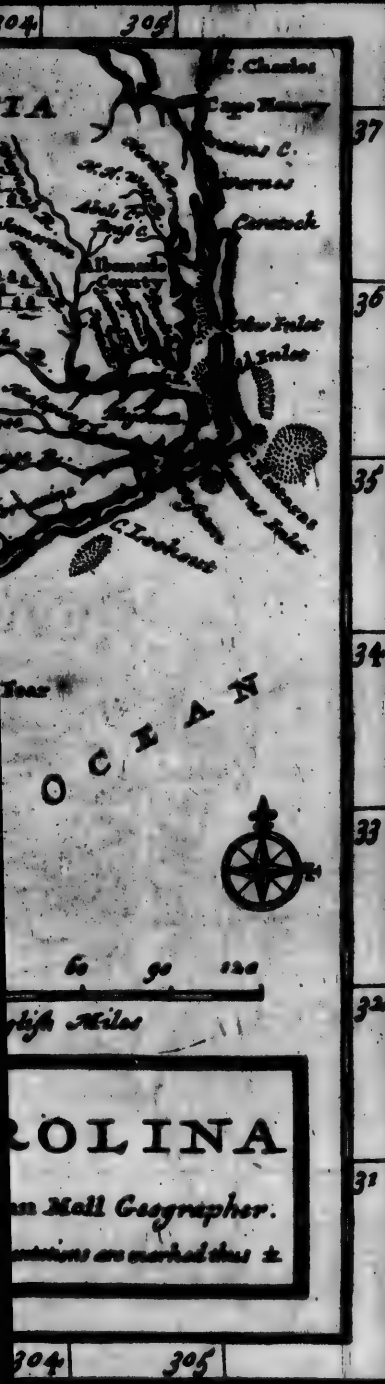
;

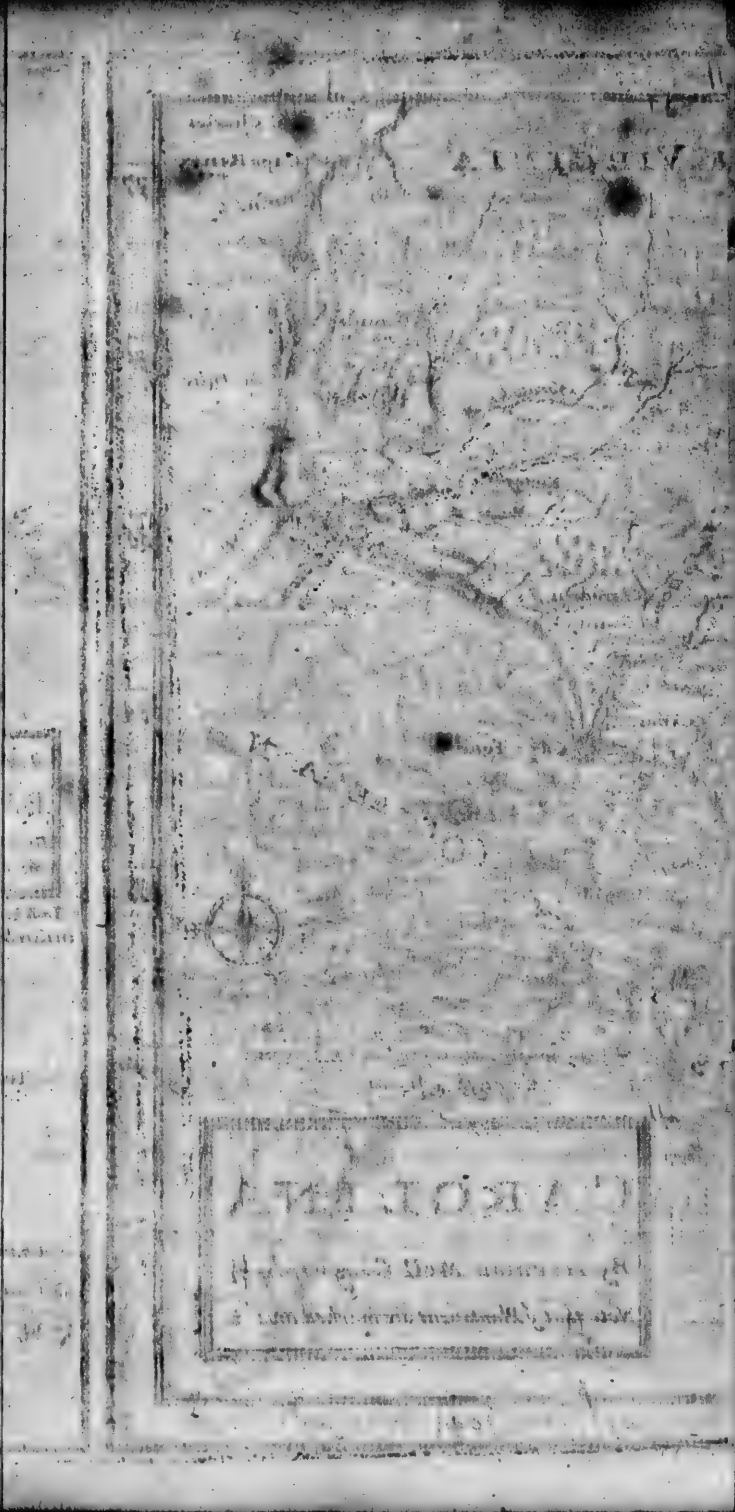
in.

THE



177.





H

C

Contains
Settlements
the
other
prefe

W

Proprietor
says, H
Sir Seba
Bristol,
Discover
having
North-
any aut
not even

THE HISTORY OF CAROLINA.

CHAP. I.

Containing an Account of the Discovery and Settlement of this Province, and of all the Wars, Factions, Disturbances, and other Events there, from that time to the present.

WE are not ignorant of the Pretences of *Discovery*, the Concern'd in this Province, who affirm, 'twas discover'd by *Sebastian Cabot*. Mr. *Archdale*, one of the Proprietors, in his printed Description of *Carolina*, says, *Henry the VIIIth. about the Year 1500. furnish'd Sir Sebastian Cabot with Shipping, (He was born at Bristol, tho his Father was a Venetian,) to make a Discovery; and he sail'd upon the Coast of Florida, and having sail'd along the Continent a considerable way North-East, return'd. But this does not appear in any authentick Historian; nor that Sir Sebastian Cabot ever got so far to the South.*

The History of Carolina.

Carolina is the Northern part of the vast Region of America, which was discover'd by *John Ponce de Leon*, in the Year 1512. He made Land about 30 Degrees from the *Aequator*, near the River of *San Matteo*, the most Southerly part of this Province. He sail'd thither from the Island of *Porto Rico*, and gave the Country the Name of *Florida*, for that the Face of it has the Resemblance of a continual Spring.

Castell of
America.

The Spaniards, who passionately desir'd to secure it to themselves, eight Years afterwards sent *Vasquez de Ayllon* to make a further Discovery of it, as belonging to *Charles V.* in whose Name *de Leon* had taken Possession of it. He came upon the North Coast, and call'd the North North-West River by the Name of *Jordan*. He did nothing memorable, except this infamous Action, of inviting many of the Natives aboard his Ships, where when he had got them, he hoisted Sail, and carry'd them into miserable Bondage.

In the Year 1526. *Charles V.* Emperor of Germany and King of Spain, sent *Pamphilio Narvesi* to Florida, who stay'd so long in the South-West part of this Country, which is the most barren, that, says my Author, they were fain to eat one another, his Crew having spent their Provisions.

Ten Years afterwards *Ferdinando a Soto* came hither in the search of Gold and Silver Mines, having a little Army of 900 Foot, and 300 Horse. Himself, and three Parts of his Soldiers, dy'd, either thro' Want, or by Sicknefs, or the Indians; and the rest were led back by *Lewis Moscos* to *New Spain*, tho not without great Difficulty, for the Natives setting upon them several times in their March, kill'd all that fell into their Hands.

This unfortunate and expensive Expedition so discourag'd the Spaniards, that for several Years they made no more Attempts in these Parts, and indeed they search'd no further than that Part of the Continent which lies opposite to the Gulph of *New Spain*, and not within and beyond the Streights of *Bahama*, which includes that part of the Country we are now treating of, and which is the most fertile and rich, abounding in several merchantable Commodities.

The

The F
long Tra
of Charle
to be sen
to Jean
arriv'd at
Matteo,
gree.

The ne
The next
the Char
hemarle R
being safe
called Ch
Royal, in
via, now
was made

The Ci
diers mut
tis true,
the Spani
with many
Admiral
he had no
Colony.

in the Nor
and in his
Author, I
mity, tha
and prob
they not
Master of
ons. A

France, b
who was
Ships to
call'd Can
the Fren
and the M
who was
arriv'd h
and was
find no C
Labour

The French perceiving the *Spaniards* neglected this long Tract of Land, Admiral *Coligny*, in the Reign of *Charles IX.* procur'd two of the King's Ships to be sent thither, the Command of which he gave to *Jean Ribaut*, who after a Voyage of two Months, arriv'd at the River of *Dolphin*, between that of *San Matteo*, and that of *May*, lying about the 30th Degree.

The next River to that of *May*, he call'd the *Seine*. The next to that, the *Somme*; then the *Loire*; then the *Charente*, and the *Garonne*. At the Mouth of *Alabama* River, then call'd the *Great River*; the Port being safe and commodious, he built a Fort, which he call'd *Charles Fort*, and gave it the Name of *Port Royal*, in 32 Degrees of Latitude, bordering on *Virginia*, now *North Carolina*, where the first Settlement was made by any European Nation.

The Civil Wars raging in *France*, *Ribaut's* Soldiers mutiny'd, for want of Supplies. The Natives, 'tis true, were very kind to them, out of Hatred to the *Spaniards*; but they could not furnish them with many Necessaries which they wanted; and the Admiral was so engag'd in Politicks at home, that he had not Leisure to provide for the Wants of his Colony. So *Ribaut* having made some Discoveries in the North-East part of *Florida*, return'd to *France*, *Ibid.* and in his Return, if Credit may be given to an old Author, his Company were reduc'd to such Extremity, that they kill'd and eat one of their own Men; and probably would have done so by others, had they not accidentally met with an *English* Ship, the Master of which furnish'd them with some Provisions. A Peace being concluded 2 Years after in *France*, between the Papists and Protestants, *Coligny*, who was then in Favour at Court, procur'd other Ships to be sent to this Country, which was now call'd *Carolina*, from Fort *Charles*, as that was from the French King. The Command of those Ships, and the Men aboard, was given to *Lewis Laudener*, who was order'd to carry on the Settlement. He arriv'd here the 20th of *June*, 1564. with 3 Ships, and was kindly receiv'd by the *Indians*, but could find no Gold and Silver Mines, tho he spent much Labour and Time in search after them. His Provisions

sions being almost all gone, and the Natives either unable, or unwilling to furnish him with more, *Laudoner* resolv'd to return also to *France*; and as he was preparing to depart, *Jean Ribaut* arriv'd with 3 Ships, which had so good an Effect on the *Indians*, that they seem'd to be as welcome to them as to the *French*. The Kings of *Homoloo*, *Seravatri*, *Almacam*, *Malica*, and *Castri*, waited upon *Ribaut*, to congratulate his Arrival, and promis'd to conduct him to the *Apalataan* Mountains, which part *Carolina* from *Virginia*.

The *French* conceiv'd great Hopes of this Settlement, but all vanish'd on the Arrival of the *Spaniards*, who with a Squadron of Ships and Land Forces, drove the *French* out of their Forts, kill'd *Ribaut*, and 600 Men, after having given them Conditions of Life, and oblig'd *Laudoner*, with a few of his Countrymen who remain'd alive, to return to *France*.

The *French* King took no notice of this Act of Violence committed on his Subjects, because they were Protestants; and indeed 'tis thought *Coligny* intended by this Settlement, to secure a Retreat for himself, and his Brethren of the Reform'd Religion, in case they were conquer'd in *France*. *Peter Melanda* commanded the *Spaniards*, who dislodg'd the *French*, and so provok'd the *Indians* by his Cruelty and Injustice, that they were very ready to revenge themselves when Opportunity offer'd, as it did not long after; for Capt. *De Gorgues*, a *French* Gentleman, at his own cost, fitted out three stout Ships, and with 280 Men sail'd to *Carolina*, where he took the Fort, and put all the *Spaniards* within it to the Sword. They had built two other Forts, which he easily reduc'd, and serv'd the Garrisons as he did that of Fort *Charles*. He demolish'd them, and was assisted by the Kings of *Homoloo*, and *Seravatri*.

The *French* travell'd into the Dominions of the great King of *Apalacha*, near the Mountains, where they converted many *Indians* to Christianity. These *Indians* were more civil than those to the Northward, their Kings Dominions larger, and their Manners, in a great measure, resembled the *Mexicans*.

Dav. of
Kid, p.
247.

We do
any Settle
ted to re
1567. lay
Reign of
1622. sev
facres of
were drive
vince of M
where the
Mallicans
is said to
Mr. *Bright*
where he
trymen, w
Relation of

It will
see a Descri
glish settle
lated in a l
est River, o
Sea, is the
whence, ab
the Promon
the *French*
their Planta
Helens, are
Oristanum
4 Leagues f
from Ostan
is 5 Leagu
Leagues; t
Saron 9, to
lying in 31
San Matthe
'Twill be
Carolina, to
and the old
shall not pr
where we
right.

This Cou
pean Nation
then, that a

Wo

We do not find that Monsieur de Gorgues made any Settlement here; or that the Spaniards attempted to recover the Country; which from the Year 1567. lay deserted by all European Nations, till the Reign of King Charles II. of England. In the Year 1622. several English Families flying from the Massacres of the Indians in Virginia and New-England, were driven on these Coasts, and settled in the Province of Mallica, near the Head of the River of May, where they acted the Part of Missionaries among the Mallicans and Apalachites. The King of the Country is said to have been baptiz'd; and in the Year 1635. Mr. Brigstock, an Englishman, went to Apalacha, where he was honourably entertain'd by his Countrymen, who were there before him; and from his Relation of the Country ours is taken.

It will not be unacceptable to the Curious, to see a Description of Carolina, as it was before the English settled there, which we find very distinctly related in a Discourse Printed A. D. 1644. The nearest River, of any Note, to Virginia, falling into the Sea, is the Jordan, which lies in 32 Degrees; from whence, about 20 Leagues downwards to the South, is the Promontory of St. Helens, near Port-Royal, which the French chose for the best and surest Place to begin their Plantations. Between the River Jordan and St. Helens, are Oristanum, Ostanum, and Cayagna; Oristanum lying 6 Leagues from St. Helens; Ostanum 4 Leagues from Oristanum; and Cayagna 8 Leagues from Ostanum. From St. Helens to Dos Baxos Haven is 5 Leagues. From thence to the Bay de Asapo, 3 Leagues; thence to Casarufium 3, to Capula 5, to Saron 9, to S. Alcany 14, and to S. Peter 20 Leagues, lying in 31 Degrees of Latitude. The next Place is San Mattheo, 5 Leagues from St. Peter.

'Twill be difficult for an Inhabitant of the present Carolina, to reconcile all these Names to the Modern, and the old Description to the New; wherefore we shall not pretend to it, at least but occasionally, and where we can be almost sure that we are in the right.

This Country having been abandon'd by all European Nations for near 100 Years, it seem'd reasonable then, that any one who would be at the Expence of settling

settling upon it, and cultivate it; should possess it; and the Pretence of *Sebastian Cabot's* discovering it, gave the Crown of *England* a Title to it, which King *Charles II.* asserted: For some Noblemen and Gentlemen begging it of him, he made a Grant of it, by a Patent, bearing date the 24th of *March, 1663.* to *Edward Earl of Clarendon*, then Lord High Chancellor of *England*, *George Duke of Albemarle*, *William Lord Craven*, *John Lord Berkley*, *Anthony Lord Ashley*, *Sir George Cartaret*, *Sir William Berkley*, and *Sir John Colliton*: Who, to use the Words of the Grand Charter, being excited with a laudable and pious Zeal, for the Propagation of the Gospel, beg'd a certain Country in the Parts of *America* not yet cultivated and planted, and only inhabited by some barbarous People, who had no Knowledge of God, &c. wherefore the King granted them all that Territory in his Dominions in *America*, from the North End of the Island call'd *Lucke-Island*, which lies in the Southern *Virginian Sea*, and within 36 Degrees of *N. Latitude*; & to the West as far as the South Seas; and so Southerly, as far as the River *San Mattheo*, which borders on the Coast of *Florida*, and is within 31 Degrees of North Latitude, and so West, in a direct Line, as far as the South Seas aforesaid: With all Royal Fisheries, Mines, Power of Life and Limb, and every thing necessary in an absolute Propriety, paying a Quit-rent of 20 Marks Yearly.

We are not to enter into the Merits of the Cause, nor inquire by what Right King *Charles* became possess'd of this Province, and *Carolina* to be a part of his Dominions in *America*; 'tis enough for us, that he gave the Proprietaries such a Charter, and that they proceeded towards a Settlement by virtue of it, which was in a few Years effected. Whatever has been said of the French and Spaniards, 'tis but just that if one Nation does not think a Country worth cultivating, and deserts it, another, who has a better Opinion of it, may enter upon it, by the Law of Nature and Reason.

The Proprietaries, after they had got their Charter, gave due Encouragement for Persons to settle in this Province, and there being express Provision made in it for a Toleration, and Indulgence to all Christians in the free Exercise of their Religion, great Numbers

bers of *P*
England,

This T
that we w
in upon it
and free
legal Way
unto such
within the
really in t
cannot, or
and Cerem
and subscri
lish'd in th
es and Dis
each Time
restrictions
Let us no
nt to the
o grant Li
better Auth
olina, publ
ince.

The first
people that
and absolute
and ample Pr
made in any
be 96, 101
Institutions
aries word
Natives of th
ations, are a
ary, Ignora
use them
arts to plant
tions concer
they will e
be reason
; therefor
ast the Dis
compact with
Violation
be without

bers of Protestants, Dissenters from the Church of England, retir'd thither.

This Toleration appears so firm by this Charter, that we wonder any Palatine could presume to break in upon it. The King granted the Proprietaries full and free License, Liberty and Authority, by such legal Ways and Means, as they shall think fit, to give unto such Person and Persons, inhabiting, and being within the said Province, or any Part thereof, who really in their Judgments, and for Conscience sake, cannot, or shall not conform to the Liturgy, Form, and Ceremonies of the Church of England, and take and subscribe the Oaths, and Articles, made and establish'd in that behalf, or any of them, such Indulgences and Dispensations in that behalf, for, and during such Time and Times, and with such Limitations and Restrictions, as they, &c. shall think fit.

Let us now see what the Proprietaries did, pursuant to the Power the King had invested them with, to grant Liberty of Conscience. We cannot have a better Authority than the *Case of the Dissenters in Carolina*, publish'd lately by a Gentleman of this Province.

The first Proprietors were so sensible that nothing could P. 27.
people that Province, and enrich it, but an universal and absolute Toleration, that they made the most express and ample Provision for such a Toleration that ever was made in any Constitution in the World, as may be seen in the 96, 101, 102, 106 Articles of the Fundamental Constitutions: Which provide, as the Lords Proprietaries word it in those Constitutions, That since the Natives of that Place, who will be concern'd in our Plantations, are utterly Strangers to Christianity, whose Idol- P. 36.
try, Ignorance, or Mistake, give us no Right to expel or use them ill, and that those who remove from other parts to plant there, will unavoidably be of different Opinions concerning Matters of Religion, the Liberty whereof they will expect to have allow'd them; and that it will be reasonable for us, on this account, to keep them; therefore, that sure Peace may be maintain'd, amidst the Diversity of Opinions, and our Agreement and compact with all Men may be duly and faithfully observ'd, the Violation whereof, upon what Pretence soever, cannot be without great Offence to Almighty God, and great Scandal

Scandal to the true Religion, which we profess: And also that Jews, Heathens, and other Dissenters, from the Purity of the Christian Religion, may not be scar'd, and kept at a Distance from it, but by having an Opportunity of acquainting themselves with the Truth and Reasonableness of its Doctrines, and the Peaceableness and Inoffensiveness of its Professors, may by good Usage and Persuasion, and all those convincing Methods of Gentleness and Meekness, suitable to the Rules and Designs of the Gospel, be won over to embrace, and unfeignedly receive thy Truth. Therefore the said Constitutions provided for their Liberty, but declar'd, That no Person above seventeen Years of Age, shall have any Benefit or Protection of the Law, which is not a Member of some Church or Profession, having his Name recorded in some one religious Record.

Thus did these Lords Proprietaries take care, that Persons of all Professions in Religion should be protected and secur'd in the free Exercise of them; and the Reader thus prepossess'd with the Laws of the Country, on which the Government of the Colony is intirely founded, will be the better able to judge of the Principles of those Men, who in the Sequel of this History, we shall find endeavouring to overturn the most considerable Articles of these Fundamentals for great Numbers of Protestant Dissenters from the Church of England, removing with their Families to Carolina, when there were so many Inhabitants, that a Form of Government was necessary, the Proprietaries agreed on that abovemention'd, call'd, the Fundamental Constitutions, consisting of 120 Articles sign'd by the Duke of Albemarle, then Palatine of the Province; the Lord Craven, the Lord Ashley, Sir John Colliton, the Lord Cornbury, the Lord Berkley, Sir George Cartaret, the 1st of March, 1699. Which Constitutions, as is expressed in the last Article, shall be, and remain the sacred and unalterable Form and Rule of Government in Carolina for ever.

They were drawn up by that famous Politician the Earl of Shaftsbury, one of the Proprietors, and the only one that could be suspected of having the least Inclination to favour the Dissenters. The first Article of these Fundamentals, is, that a Palatine shall be chosen out of one of the Proprietaries, who shall con-

George
Duke of Albemarle
Palatine.

tinue during
the other
tive Power
prieties
Archdale,
They centre
Palatine of
authoriz'd
This is call'd
in Carolina
Principals.

By the
be three
one call'd a
Parliament
puties, the
Fundament
Cassiques
Landgraves
not summe
Account;
Deputies an
chosen by t
Commons
one House,
should mee
Occasion re
those of th
Court, the
Court, the
there are th
Mr. Archda
ter gener
Royal Pr
Time it
of Consc
Time; a
not to ha
And the
the Gre
graves an
and are b
prietyors

And also from the other Proprietaries. The Palatine has the executive Power in most Cases, and the rest of the Proprietaries have their Places and Privileges. Mr. Archdale, in the before-mention'd Treatise, says, They center'd all their Power in four of them, viz. in a Palatine of their own choosing, and three more, who were authoriz'd to execute the whole Powers of the Charter. This is call'd the Palatine's Court; and their Deputies in Carolina execute it as they are directed by their Principals.

By the Fundamental Constitutions, there are to be three Hereditary Noblemen in every County, one call'd a Landgrave, and 2 call'd Cassiques. The Parliament consists of the Proprietors, or their Deputies, the Governour and Commons; and by the Fundamentals should have 25 Landgraves, and 50 Cassiques to make a Nobility: But the Number of Landgraves and Cassiques is very small, and they are not summon'd to make an Upper-House, on that Account; so the Governour and the Proprietors Deputies arrogate that Title. The Commoners are chosen by the Free-holders of every County, as the Commons in England; and all were at first to sit in one House, and have equal Votes. This Parliament should meet once in every two Years, and oftner, if Occasion require. The Courts of Justice are, besides those of the Palatine's Court, the Chief Justice's Court, the High-Constables Court, the Chancellor's Court, the Treasurer's Court, the Chamberlain's Court, the High-Steward's Court: Besides which, there are the Great Council and the Hundred Courts.

Mr. Archdale, on this Head, tells us, "The Charter generally, as in other Charters, agrees on Royal Privileges and Powers, but especially at that Time it had an over-plus Power to grant Liberty of Conscience, tho at home was a hot persecuting Time; as also a Power to create a Nobility, yet not to have the same Titles as here in England: And therefore they are there by Patent, under the Great-Seal of the Province, call'd Landgraves and Cassiques, in lieu of Earls and Lords, and are by their Titles to sit with the Lords Proprietors Deputies, and together make the Upper
"House,

" House, the Lower House being elected by the
 " People. These Landgraves are to have four Ba-
 " ronies annex'd to their Dignities, of 6000 Acres
 " each Barony; and the Cassiques two Baronies, of
 " 3000 each, and not to be divided by Sale of any
 " Part. Only they have Power to let out a third
 " Part for three Lives, to raise Portions for younger
 " Children. Every County has a Sheriff and four
 " Justices of the Peace. Every Planter pays 1 d. an
 " Acre Quit-Rent to the Proprietaries, unless he buys
 " it off. All the Inhabitants and Free-men, from 16
 " to 50 Years old, are bound to bear Arms, when com-
 " manded by the *Great Council*.

The Proprietaries enter'd into a Joint-Stock, and
 fitted out Ships on their own proper Charges,
 to transport People and Cattle thither, which Ex-
 pence amounted to 12000 *l.* besides as much or more
 disburs'd by single Proprietors to advance the Colo-
 ny; and all their Rents and Incomes have since the
 Beginning been laid out in Publick Services.

Many Dissenters of good Estates went over, and
 many other Persons, in hopes to mend their For-
 tunes. And if they could tell how to improve the
 Opportunities that were put into their Hands there
 they had seldom any Reason to repent of going thither.

Tho the Difficulties and Dangers they met with
 at first were a little discouraging, all free Persons
 who came over, were to have 50 Acres of Land for
 themselves, 50 more for each Man-Servant, and 50
 more for each Woman-Servant Marriageable; and no
 Marriageable, 40 Acres. Each Servant out of his
 or her Time was to have 50 Acres, paying the Quit-
 Rent of 1 d. an Acre.

The Proportion of Land was much greater by the
 first Instructions which the Proprietaries sent their
 Governours, but they afterwards thought fit to re-
 duce it to the present Allotment. Some Gentlemen
 who did not care to be liable to the yearly Quit-
 Rent of 1 d. an Acre, bought their Lands out-
 right.

The common Rate of purchasing now, is 20 *l.* for
 200 Acres, and 10 *s.* a Year Quit-Rent. The
 Proprietors, in all their Leases, never forget to ex-

cept all M
 precious S
 Things
 aries appo
 of their Pr
 Plantations
Albemarle
Cooper Riv
 Convenienc
 Reason that
 ited.

In 1671.
 Supply of
 and created
John Look
 The Conf
 some Cases,
 form of Go

A Gov

Council,
 consisting

An Admiral.
 Chamberla
 Chancellor.
 Chief-Justice
 Secretary.
 Surveyor.
 Treasurer.

All which
 respectively.
 the Govern
 ere to be F
 ere not In
 g to the F

consist of
 rietors, and
 holders; of
 rep

by the Sept all Mines, Minerals, and Quarries of Gems and
four Ba-precious Stones.
Things being thus establish'd, the Lords Proprie-
aries appointed Col. *William Sayle*, to be Governour *Col. Will.*
of any of their Province, about the Year 1670. The First *Sayle Go-*
at a third Plantations that came to any Perfection, were about *vernour.*
younger *Albemarle* and *Port-Royal* Rivers. But *Ashley* and
and four *Cooper* Rivers drew People that way, for the
s. i. d. an Convenience of Pasture and Tillage, for which
he buys Reason that Part of the Country became most inha-
from 1670.

hen com- In 1671. The Proprietaries sent Cap. *Halsted* with
a Supply of Provisions and Stores for the Colony,
rock, and and created *James Cartaret*, Sir *John Teomans*, and
Charges, *John Lock*, Elq; Landgraves.
which Ex- The Constitutions having been found deficient in
a or more some Cases, Temporary Laws were added, and the
the Colo- Form of Government settled thus.

A Governour nam'd by the Palatine.

over, and
their For-
prove the
ands there
going this
met with
ee Persons
f Land for
nt, and so
le; and no
out of his
g the Quir
ater by the
s sent their
ht fit to re
Gentlemen
early Quir
Lands out
is 20 l. for
Rent. The
forget to ex
cep

- 7 Deputies of the Proprietors.
7 Gentlemen, chosen by the Parli-
ament.
7 of the eldest Landgraves and
Cassiques.

High-Steward.
High-Constable.
Register of Births, Buri-
als, and Marriages.
Register of Writings.
Marshal of the Admi-
rality.

All which were nominated by the Proprietors
respectively. The *Quorum* of the Council were to be
the Governour and 6 Councillors, of whom 3 at least
were to be Proprietors Deputies; and because there
were not Inhabitants to make a Parliament, accord-
ing to the *Fundamental Constitutions*, 'twas order'd
to consist of the Governour, the Deputies of Pro-
rietors, and twenty Members chosen by the Free-
holders; of whom ten were to be elected by *Berk-*
ley-

ley's County, and ten by *Colliton* County ; which number was encreas'd, as more Counties were laid out, and more People came to settle in the Province.

The Temporary Laws were made in the Year William, 1671. At which time *William*, Earl of *Craven*, was Earl Cra- Palatine. On which Office he enter'd, after the Death of the Duke of *Albemarle* ; who, as has been said, was Palatine, when the *Fundamental Constitutions* were sign'd, but dy'd soon after. In the same Year Cap. *Halsted* was order'd to make Discoveries up *Abley* River, and a Model of a Town was sent, which it will be well, if the People of *Carolina* are able to build 100 Years hence ; but the Proprietaries, as appears by their Constitutions and Instructions to their Governours, thought 'twas almost as easy to build Towns, as to draw Schemes.

Sir John
Yeomans
Governour

The next Governour to Col. *Sayle* was Sir *John Yeomans*, Baronet ; in whose time many of the before-mention'd Transactions happen'd, but we have not been able to distinguish the Events in his Government from those in *Sayle's*.

Joseph
West Go-
vernour.

About the Year 1680. the Proprietaries made *Joseph West*, Esq; one of the first Planters, their Governour. He was a Man of Courage, Wisdom, Piety, and Moderation : And such an One was necessary in his time ; for tho many Dissenters had fled from the Rage of their Enemies in *England*, yet there were not wanting Men of other Principles, who by Factions disturb'd the Peace of the Infant Colony. Mr. *Archdale's* Word will, in this Case, be more acceptable to the Reader : " The most desperate Fortunes first ventur'd over to break the Ice, which being generally the ill Livers of the pretended Churchmen, tho the Proprietors commisionated one Col. *West* their Governour, a moderate, just, pious, and valiant Person ; yet having a Council of the loose principled Men, they grew very unruly, and had like to have ruin'd the Colony, by abusing the *Indians*, whom in Prudence they ought to have oblig'd in the highest degree, and so brought an *Indian* War on the Country, like that in the first planting of *Virginia*, in which several were cut off ; but the Governour, by his

manly

manly
tinguish
threatne
two Faction
of the Pla
England.
one Mr. S
land, wit
him, for
which he
upon hear
a disord
inhabitants
ed.

Col. *West*
A. D. 1682
ntify'd by
wen, Esq;
of the Propr
oppressing D
ervation of
itia.

'Twas in t
Nation of t
ny, and at
ment, as t
or repelling
lood shed,
the Charge
ences.

The Lords
Maurice Ma
am Fitz, Esq
s between t
charg'd wi
opposing the
Year 168
Governour
'Twas abo
the Popish
and, again
ight ; and
it than S
ory liv'd at

which
were laid
the Pro-

the Year
even, was
after the
has been
institutions
same Year
veries up
t, which it
e to build
s appears
their Go-
to build

Sir John
of the be-
nt we have
in his Go-

ries made
ters, their
Wisdom,
ne was ne-
ers had fled
England, yet
Principles,
the Infant-

this Case
the most de-
break the
vers of the
ors commis-
r, a mode-
yet having
they grew
d the Colo-
udence they
degree, and
country, like
in which
our, by hi-
" manly

manly Prudence at least in a great measure extinguish'd the Flame, which had a long time threatned the Dissolution of the Colony. The two Factions were that of the Proprietaries and that of the Planters, like Court and Country Party in England. This Division got to such a Head, that one Mr. John Culpeper was sent Prisoner to England, with a Charge of High-Treason against him, for raising a Rebellion in Carolina; for which he was try'd at Westminster-Hall, and upon hearing the Matter, it appear'd only to be a disorderly Quarrel among the Planters and inhabitants of the Province, so he was acquitted.

Col. West held a Parliament in Charles Town, A. D. 1682. In which several Acts were pass'd and ratify'd by him, (*Andrew Percivall, Esq; William Boon, Esq; and Maurice Matthews, Esq;* Deputies of the Proprietaries); as, *An Act for High-ways, for suppressing Drunkenness and prophane Swearing, for Observation of the Lord's Day, and for settling the Militia.*

'Twas in this Governour's Time, that the *Westoes*, Nation of the *Indians*, were troublesome to the Colony, and attempted the Subversion of this hopeful Settlement, as the Act of Parliament to raise Money for repelling them words it. There was not much blood shed, or Money spilt; for 4 or 500 l. paid the Charge of the War, and other publick Expenses.

The Lords Proprietaries erected a Commission for *Maurice Matthews, Esq; William Fuller, Esq; Jonathan Fitz, Esq; and John Boon, Esq;* to decide all Causes between the *English* and *Indians*. And Mr. West charg'd with dealing in *Indians*: For which, and opposing the Proprietaries Party, he was remov'd, in the Year 1683. and *Joseph Moreton, Esq;* appoint Governour in his stead.

'Twas about this time, that the Persecution rais'd the Popish Faction, and their Adherents, in England, against the Protestant Dissenters, was at the height; and no Part of this Kingdom suffer'd more of it than *Somerset-shire*. The Author of this History liv'd at that time with Mr. *Blake*, Brother to the

the famous General of that Name, being educated by his Son-in-law, who taught School in *Bridgwater*; and remembers, tho then very young, the Reasons old Mr. *Blake* us'd to give for leaving *England*: One of which was, That the Miseries they endur'd, meaning the Dissenters then, were nothing to what he foresaw would attend the Reign of a Popish Successor; wherefore he resolv'd to remove to *Carolina*: And he had so great an Interest among Persons of his Principles, I mean the Dissenters, that many honest substantial Persons engag'd to go over with him.

I must prevent all Prejudice to what I have said, by declaring, that this Book is written by one who is not himself a Dissenter, but verily believes, the true Church of *England* is the most Orthodox and the most Pure Church in the World. And by the true Church of *England*, he understands all those who live up to the Doctrine it professes; who by their Piety, Charity, and Moderation, are Ornaments of our Holy Religion, and who do not blindly espouse a Name out of Interest, or from the Impressions of Education; who pity, and not hate, such as dissent from them; who are loyal to their Prince, submissive to their Superiours, true to their Country, and charitable to all: Of such a Temper is every true Church-man; and may their Number daily encrease, till we are all of One Mind and One Religion, as we have but one God and One Saviour.

If the Reader will pardon this Digression, he shall have no more; and so much 'twas necessary to say, that he may not think, whatever is said of Mr. *Blake* or his Brethren, is out of Respect to his Profession but as a Christian: For tho I doubt not there may be many good Christians of the same Principles, should esteem them more, if they would be convinc'd and conform; that the Union so often recommended by our Gracious and Glorious Queen *Anne*, may be universal.

I say the more of Mr. *Blake*, because his Family is one of the most considerable in this Province; where he arriv'd in the Year 1683. with several other Families, the Followers of his Fortune. What E

state he ha
along with
Thousands
yet 'twas a
several Year
in a time
and the T
home.

By Mr.
Party, we
dale's Ill Li
to be disco
Gentleman
Carolina, w
General Bla
Carolina; n
of an heroi
sober inclin'd
travagant Sp
told, martyr
and by this
was so encro
till Mr. Collis

There bein
thems, and
Causes betw
were dischar
The Lords
Miles from
Protection.

The Count
was now laid
on the North
the South:

Squares of 12
Proprietaries
Mr. More
call'd a Parli
several Acts;
Publick Charg
Meyor General
Coin; for Tr
for Damage of
staining Publick
state

state he had in *England*, he sold, to carry the Effects along with him; and tho the Sum was not many Thousands, if it did at all deserve the plural Number; yet 'twas all that his Great Brother left him, tho for several Years he commanded the *British Fleet*; and in a time when our Naval Arms were victorious, and the Treasures of *New-Spain* seldom reach'd home.

By Mr. *Blake's* Presence in *Carolina*, the *Sober Party*, we call them so in opposition to Mr. *Archdale's Ill Livers*, began to take Heart, and the other to be discourag'd in their irregular Courses. The Gentleman I just mention'd, in his *Description of Carolina*, writes thus: *In Governour Moreton's Time, General Blake's Brother, with many Dissenters, came to Carolina; which Blake being a wise and prudent Person, of an heroic Temper of Spirit, strengthened the Hands of sober inclin'd People, and kept under the first loose and extravagant Spirit, &c.* The Governour, as we are told, marry'd Mrs. *Elizabeth Blake*, his Daughter; and by this Alliance, the Strength of their Party was so encreas'd, that we hear little of the other till Mr. *Collison's* Government.

There being some Complaints against Mr. *Mathews*, and the other Commissioners for deciding Causes between the *English* and the *Indians*, they were discharg'd, and the Commission abrogated. The Lords Proprietaries order'd the *Indians* 400 Miles from *Charles Town*, to be taken into their Protection.

The County of *Berkley*, between *Sono* and *Sewee*, was now laid out; and soon after *Craven* County, on the North of *Berkley*; and *Collison* County, on the South: All which Counties were divided into Squares of 12000 Acres, for the several Shares of the Proprietaries, Landgraves, and Cassiques.

Mr. *Moreton*, at his entering upon his Office, call'd a Parliament, which met in Form, and pass'd several Acts; as, *For raising 500 l. for defraying the Publick Charge of the Province*; for regulating the *Surveyor General's Fees*; for raising the *Value of Foreign Coin*; for *Trial of small and mean Causes under 40 s.* for *Damage of protested Bills of Exchange*; for *ascertaining Publick Officers Fees*; to suspend Prosecution

The History of Carolina.

for Foreign Debts; to inhibit the trading with Servants or Slaves; for laying out, and making good High-Ways; for preventing the taking away Boats and Canoes; for marking of all sorts of Cattle; to prevent unlicens'd Taverns and Punch-Houses, and ascertaining the Rates and Prices of Wine, and other Liquors; to prevent Runaways. All which Acts were sign'd by *Joseph Moreton*, Esq; Governour, *John Godfrey*, Esq; *John Boon*, Esq; *James Moor*, Esq; *Maurice Matthews*, Esq; *Andrew Percivall*, Esq; *Arthur Middleton*, Esq; Counsellors and Deputies; and *Mr. Joseph Oldys*, Clerk to the Parliament. At this time, *Robert Gibs*, Esq; was Treasurer of the Colony; *John Moor*, Esq; Secretary; *John Boon*, Esq; *Robert Daniel*, Esq; *Mr. Bernard Schinkingh*, *Mr. Peter Hearn*, and *Cap. Florence O Sullivan*, were appointed Commissioners for stating and passing the Publick Accounts. *Maurice Matthews*, Esq; was also Surveyor-General. The Trade of dealing in *Indians* continu'd, and several of the Proprietors Deputies were concern'd in it: Whether the Governour, *Mr. Moreton*, favour'd it or not, we cannot undertake to determine. 'Tis certain, he did not long enjoy his Office: For it appears by the Copies of the Original Instructions, sent by the Proprietaries to his Successor, that in the following Year the Pallatine made *Sir Richard Kyrle* Governour. He was a Gentleman of *Ireland*; and dying within the Year, *Joseph West*, Esq; was again cholen Governour by the Council; and being a Man of great Interest, the Proprietaries thought fit to confirm him in his Government: But they turn'd out *Maurice Matthews*, Esq; *James Moor*, Esq; and *Arthur Middleton*, Esq; from being Deputies and Councillors, for disobeying their Orders, and sending away *Indians*. They also displac'd their Secretary *John Moor*, Esq; and put *Rob. Quarry*, Esq; in his Place.

Sir Rich.
Kyrle Go-
vernour.
Joseph
West, Esq;
Gouverneur

Thus we see the latter has enjoy'd honourable Offices many Years in the *American Colonies*; with the Interest of which he must, by this means, be very well acquainted.

In *Mr. West's* second Government, the Right Honourable the Lord *Cardrosse* remov'd to *Carolina*, and, with ten *Scots* Familles, settled at *Port-Royal*, esteem'd

esteem'd
for Com
drosse ha
of the Pr
turn'd to
Scots, wh
This Lor
William's
chan.

Dissent
Parts of
in Numbe

James
Peter Coll
with the
in, and tr
where he
Cooper-Riv
being ma
call'd the
had as mu
Peter, we
our selves
his Behalf
Manner o

Moreton
'now fo
'they cho
'vernour

'settle th
'pended
'their fur
content th
the Tenur
Quit-Rent
dale's Gov

Mr. Col
This Affe
damental
ply the De
to examin
a new F
Articles f
Title of S

esteem'd the most convenient Place in this Province for Commerce, as being the best Port. The Lord *Car-drosse* having been disgusted with the Government of the Province, for some ill Usage he met with, return'd to *Scotland*, and the *Spaniards* dislodg'd the *Scots*, who had seated themselves on that fine River. This Lord was of the House of *Buchan*, and in King *William's* Reign enjoy'd the Title of Earl of *Buchan*.

Dissenters continuing to come hither from all Parts of *England*, the Colony thriv'd and encreas'd in Numbers and Riches.

James Colliton, Esq; of *Barbadoes*, Brother to Sir *Peter Colliton*, Baronet, a Proprietary, being honour'd with the Title of Landgrave, left the Island he liv'd in, and transported himself and Family to *Carolina*, where he seated himself at old *Charles Town*, on *Cooper-River*, built a handsome House there; and being made Governour, his Seat is to this Day James call'd the Governour's House. Had this Gentleman *Colliton*, had as much Honour and Capacity as his Brother Sir Esq; *Go-Peter*, we should have had no Occasion to excuse our selves for keeping to the Truth of History in his Behalf. One of his Successors writes in this Manner of his Government: 'The Party Governour *Mr. Arch-Moreton* had gone a great way in suppressing, grew dale's *De-* now so strong among the Common People, that *scrip-tion of* they chose Members to oppose whatsoever the Go-*Carolina.* vernour requested; inasmuch that they would not settle the Militia Act, tho their own Security depended on it, and that it would be Grounds of their further Strength. The Reason of the Discontent the People lay under, were Disputes about the Tenure of their Lands, and Payment of their Quit-Rents, which were not settled till Mr. *Arch-dale's* Government.

Mr. Colliton call'd a Parliament, *A. D. 1687*. This Assembly not liking the Proprietaries *Fundamental Constitutions*; and thinking they could supply the Deficiencies in them, appointed a Committee to examine them: And these Gentlemen drew up a new Form of Government, differing in many Articles from the former; to which they gave the Title of *Standing Laws*, and Temporary Laws. This

Committee were *James Colliton*, Esq; *Governour*, *Paul Grimbball*, Esq; and *William Dunlop*, Esq; Deputies; *Bernard Schinking*, *Thomas Smith*, *John Farr*, and *Joseph Blake*, Esqs; Commoners. But neither the Lords Proprietaries, nor the People of *Carolina* accepted of them; and thus the *Fundamental Constitutions* keep their Ground to this Day.

Mr. Colliton gave such Discontent in his Administration, that he was banish'd the Province; a Fate few Governours of Colonies were ever so unhappy as to meet with.

Thomas
Smith,
Esq; Go-
vernour.

Mr. Archdale tells us, *Mr. Smith* succeeded *Mr. Colliton*, and that he succeeded *Mr. Smith*; but then the latter must have been twice Governour: For we find several other Gentlemen, who had that Title and Office before the Year 1694. when *Mr. Archdale* says, Governour *Smith* wrote over to the Proprietaries, to advise them to send one of their Number to *Carolina*. For

Col. Rob.
Quarry
Governour

Col. Robert Quarry was Governour about the Year 1690. After him, *Mr. Southwell*. And in the Year 1692. *Col. Philip Ludwell* held this Government. In which 'tis certain, he was succeeded by the above-mention'd *Thomas Smith*, Esq; Landgrave of this Province.

Mr.
Southwell
Governour

Col. Philip
Ludwell
Governour
Thomas
Smith,
Esq; Go-
vernour.

We are not doubtful of any Error in this Order of the Governours, except in *Mr. Southwell's*; our Informations having been uncertain as to him.

' *Mr. Smith*, says *Mr. Archdale*, was a wise, sober, well-living Man; who grew so uneasy in the Government, by Reason he could not satisfy People in their Demands, that he wrote over, Anno 1694. ' *It was impossible to settle the Country, except a Proprietary himself was sent thither, with full Power to hear their Grievances.* The Proprietaries took Governour *Smith's* Letter into Consideration, and the Lord *Ashley* was pitch'd upon by all the Lords as a Person every way qualify'd for so good a Work; but he desir'd to be excus'd, on Account of his particular Affairs in England. Upon which *Mr. Archdale* was chosen by the Proprietaries, to be sent over with large and ample Powers. Which having receiv'd, he embark'd and sail'd to *Carolina*. When

he arriv'd
August, 1694.
sion, and
in hopes of
an Assembl
Parliament
Speaker;
the Gove
Divisions
Mr. Arch
ther his P
of Proprie
any Tem
Disorders

The Pa
the Gover
and all the
fees, an In
the Spani
lish, made
ther Indian
St. August
to sell th
had been u
of it, sent
him to br
he did. T
land and S
Governour
carry ther
Governour
the Powe
from a G
was then a
The Sp
turn'd *Mr*
after ano
Governou
done the
lish.

The Sp
whom the
three. T
and all o

he arriv'd, and enter'd upon the Government, in John
August, 1695. he found all Matters in great Confu- Archdale
 sion, and every Faction apply'd themselves to him, *Esq; Go-*
 in hopes of Relief. In order to which he summon'd *vernour,*
 an Assembly, and made a kind Speech to them. The
 Parliament chose *Jonathan Amary Esq;* to be their
 Speaker; and having presented a dutiful Address to
 the Governour, proceeded to do Business. But the
 Divisions among them were so great, that had not
 Mr. *Archdale* exercis'd a great deal of Patience, nei-
 ther his Power as Governour, nor his higher Title
 of Proprietary, could have brought that Assembly to
 any Temper; which he at last effected, and the
 Disorders of the Province were remedy'd.

The Parliament presented an Address of Thanks to
 the Governour, to be transmitted to the Proprietaries,
 and all things ended well. In his time the *Tamma-*
sees, an Indian Nation, who formerly liv'd under
 the Spanish Government, and now under the Eng-
 lish, made an Incurfion into the Territories of ano-
 ther Indian Nation, near *Sancta Maria*, not far from
St. Augustino, took several Prisoners, and intended
 to sell them for Slaves at *Barbadoes* or *Jamaica*, as
 had been usual among them. Mr. *Archdale* hearing
 of it, sent for the King of the *Tammasees*, and order'd
 him to bring those Indians to *Charles Town*, which
 he did. They were Papists; and the Kings of *Eng-*
land and *Spain* being at that time Confederates, the
 Governour gave the King of the *Tammasees* Orders to
 carry them to *St. Augustino*, with a Letter to the
 Governour; which may serve to give us an Idea of
 the Power of an Indian King, who receives Orders
 from a Governour of a small Province, as *Carolina*
 was then at least, whatever it is now.

The Spaniard who commanded in *St. Augustino*, re-
 turn'd Mr. *Archdale* a Letter of Thanks; and not long
 after another Indian King was sent by the Spanish
 Governour, with a Letter of Complaint, of wrong
 done the Spanish Indians by those ally'd to the Eng-
 lish.

The Spanish Indians were called *Churchcates*; of
 whom the *Apalachicoles*, English Indians, had kill'd
 three. The Governour commanded that Nation,
 and all others depending on the English, to forbear
 molest-

molesting those within the Spanish Jurisdiction; which had so good an Effect, that when Mr. *Robert Barrow*, Mr. *Edward Wardell*, and other-Englishmen, were afterward cast away to the Southward of *Augustino*, the barbarous Indians offer'd them no hurt; and when they arriv'd at that Town, the Governour supply'd them with all Necessaries.

Col. *Bull*, one of the Council, and a greater Trader with the Indians, engag'd that Nation which dwelt about Cape *Fear*, to submit to the English, who however were afraid to trust them; for a Vessel coming from *New-England* being shipwrack'd on that Coast, the Passengers, to the Number of 52, despair'd of their Lives from those Barbarians, but resolv'd to defend themselves as well as they could: Accordingly they entrench'd in their little Camp. The Indians came down, and by Signs of Friendship invited them to come forth; which they were afraid to do. At last, when their Provisions were almost all spent, some of them ventur'd out, were kindly receiv'd, and furnish'd by the Indians with Necessaries. The King invited them to his Town, treated them; and 4 or 5 of them travelling to *Charles Town*, gave the Governour notice of their Misfortunes; which hearing, he sent a Ship to fetch the rest; and they arriv'd safely at the Capital of *Carolina*.

In Mr. *Archdale's* Time, two Indians quarrelling in their Drinking, one of them presently kill'd the other; whose Wife being by, immediately dismember'd the Murderer, to revenge her Husband's Death, cutting off his Privities with a Knife. The Governour happening to be near the Place where the Murder was committed, order'd the Criminal to be pursu'd. He was taken in a Swamp about 16 Miles from the Town; to which he was sent under a Guard. The Nation to whom the slain Indian belong'd, hearing of his Death, their King came to Mr. *Archdale*, and desir'd Justice upon the Murderer. Some of whose Friends would have bought him off as usual; but nothing less than his Death would satisfy the injur'd Nation; and, according to the Custom of his own Country, the Governour order'd him to be shot by the Kinsman of the Deceas'd. As he was leading to Execution, his King came to him, and bid him

die like a
forewar'd
with whe
his Life fo

When
ty'd to it,
he shoots
down dea

This P
Nations
Indians in
lice, were
ease, whi
Coramines.
them cut a

In his
England,
on the Ri
the Event
vernment
no more t
may appe
ver the G
give them
of these t
in the beg
History fr

We can
a Colony
Factions
had been
rity.

Mr. A
England,
Esq; Son
become a
Person to
Office he
Country,
Moderat

In his
new Con
in as am
science, a

die like a Man, since he must die, adding, he had often forewarn'd him of Rum, the Liquor which he was drunk with when he kill'd the Man, and now he must loose his Life for not taking his Council.

When he came to the Tree, he desir'd not to be ty'd to it, but to stand loose, saying, *I will not stir when he shoots me.* So he was shot in the Head, and fell down dead.

This Piece of Justice hinder'd a War between the Nations to which these two Indians belong'd. The Indians inhabiting the Country about the River *Pemlico*, were almost all consum'd by a Pestilential Disease, while this Governour was in *Carolina*; and the *Coranines*, a bloody and barbarous People, were most of them cut off by a neighbouring Nation.

In his Time several Families remov'd from *New-England*, to settle at *Carolina*, and seated themselves on the River *Sewee*, in *North Carolina*. These are all the Events which happen'd during Mr. *Archdale's* Government, at least he has thought fit to communicate no more to the Publick; and as inconsiderable as they may appear to some Persons, who are us'd to turn over the Græcian and Roman Histories, if they will give themselves the Trouble to examine the Affairs of these two Empires, they will find them as trivial, in the beginning at least, if they can distinguish the *History* from the *Fable*.

We cannot expect much Business in the Infancy of a Colony; and yet *Carolina* is not so young, but Factions have been as rampant there, as if the People had been made wanton by many Ages of Prosperity.

Mr. *Archdale*, to use his own Phrase, *Return'd for England, being not sent for home.* And *Joseph Blake*, *Joseph Esq;* Son of the before-mention'd Mr. *Blake*, being become a Proprietary, was look'd upon as the fittest Person to succeed him in his Government; in which Office he behav'd himself to the Satisfaction of the Country, which he govern'd with equal Prudence and Moderation.

In his time Major *Daniel* brought from *England* new Constitutions, consisting of 41 Articles, wherein as ample Provision was made for Liberty of Conscience, as in the Fundamental Constitutions. These new

John Earl of Bath new Laws were call'd, the last *Fundamental Constitutions*, and sign'd by John Earl of Bath, Palatine; Anthony Lord Ashley, the Lord Craven, the Lord Carteret, the Earl of Bath, Sir John Colliton, William Thornburgh Merchant, Thomas Amy, and Wil. Thornburgh; but they were never confirm'd in Parliament at Carolina.

Mr. Blake, tho he was himself a Dissenter, finding there was no settled Maintenance for the Church of England Minister, procur'd an Act of Assembly (in which there were a great Number of Dissenters) for the settling a very convenient House, with a *Glebe*, two Servants, and 150 *l. per Annum* upon the Minister of Charles Town for ever. 'Twas by his Influence that Act pass'd, and he gave his Assent to it; he, as Governour, having a negative Voice to all Bills. His Lady also was one of the greatest Benefactors towards the Ornaments of the Church. And this Friendship deserv'd a more grateful Return than they met with from those who succeeded in the Government.

Mr. Blake dying about the Year 1700. after he had been Governour 4 or 5 Years, the Proprietaries Deputies met, according to their Instructions in such Cases, and proceeded to the Election of a new Governour; which Post is generally conferr'd on the eldest Landgrave, if there's no Objection to him, and no Person sent from England with that Character.

Joseph Moreton Esq; being the eldest Landgrave, was elected Governour by the Deputies: but Capt. James Moor, one of these Deputies, knowing the Party he had among them, objected against Mr. Moreton, as if he had made a Breach of the Trust repos'd in him by the true and absolute Lords and Proprietaries, by accepting of a Commission from King William, to be Judge of the Admiralty, when he had at the same time a Commission from the Lords Proprietaries for the same Office.

Tho this Objection was answer'd by Mr. Moreton's Friends; That it did not appear by the Charter, the Proprietaries can empower any one to try Persons for Facts committed out of their Dominions, which is necessary for such a Judge; and the Proprietaries could not grant it; yet such was Mr. Moor's Interest, that on this

his Objection
ponent Mr.
inform'd a
was never
From th
fortunes th
that have g
Trouble.

The Earl
Granville, I
Palatine.
Gentleman
tastical Co
his Averfion
aries in the
terness of h
to the Rep
that he wa
which is
Moderation
Union, and
Subjects of
Princes cou
before it.

In an ill
nance the
and the su
vours, to e
been rejecte
land by our
Mr. Moo
by the Pala
it, to enrich
he being in
tion of the
not deceive

Let us gi
may not b
all things
well, that
ty; and a
yet by writ
tealing wh
plausible A

his Objection Mr. *Moreton* was set aside, and his Opponent Mr. *Moor* chosen Governour. Mr. *Moreton* inform'd and complain'd to the Proprietaries, but was never redrest.

Col. James Moor Governour.

From this Election I date the Rise of all the Misfortunes that have since befallen this Colony, and that have given the Government of *England* so much Trouble.

The Earl of *Bath* was dead, and his Son *John Lord Granville*, lately advanc'd to the House of Peers, was Palatine. All the World knew how zealous that Gentleman had been for promoting a Bill against Occasional Conformists in *England*, and that he shew'd his Aversion to Dissenters even in the Court of *Star-chambers* in the *West*, while he was Warden. The Bitterness of his Spirit appear'd in the Speeches he made to the Representatives of that Court; and was such, that he was not long employ'd by a Government, which is founded on Principles of Justice and Moderation; which has in all things promoted Union, and which has united the Hearts of all the Subjects of the British Empire more than all the Princes could do since the *Conquest*, and many Ages before it.

John Lord Granville Palatine.

In an ill time therefore did this Palatine countenance the Divisions in *Carolina*, by encouraging this and the succeeding Governour in their vain Endeavours, to establish that for a Law there, which had been rejected with such Marks of Abhorrence in *England* by our *Illustrious Representatives*.

Mr. *Moor* was easily confirm'd in his new Dignity by the Palatine; and as he is said to have sought after it, to enrich himself, so he made use of it to that end, he being in mean Circumstances, if the Representation of the principal Inhabitants of the Colony does not deceive us.

Let us give the Reader the proper Words, that we may not be accus'd of Partiality, which we detest in all things that hurt the Truth. But we know very well, that Faction will often accuse Fact of Partiality; and an Historian may write Things true, and yet by writing the Truth only of one Side, and concealing what is to its Disadvantage, it may give a plausible Appearance to a bad Cause; wherefore we

Confirm-
ne; An-
rd Carta-
William
l. Thorn-
rliament

finding
Church of
mbly (in
ters) for
a Glebe,
the Mini-
his Influe-
nt to it;
nce to all
st Benefa-
ch. And
turn than
n the Go-

er he had
aries De-
s in such
w Gover-
the eldest
n, and no
er.

andgrave,
but Capt.
owing the
Mr. *More-*
st repos'd
Proprieta-
King *Willi-*
he had at
s Proprie-

Moreton's
arter, the
ns for Facts
ecessary for
not grant
at on this
his

we solemnly declare, that after a full Enquiry we have not been able to learn any thing that could excuse the Disorders we are about to relate, and vindicate the Administration in *Carolina*, while the Lord *Granville* was Palatine. Whether that Lord or his Governours ought to be blam'd most, let the World judge.

Case of
Diff. in
Car. p. 29,
30.

Mr. *Moor*, says the Author of the above-mention'd Representation, having thus boldly gotten the Government, resolv'd to make the best use of his Authority, and finding himself too poor, with the Countenance of his Office, to make any considerable Profit of the Indian Trade, he laid the Design of getting it wholly into his Power. He to that end procur'd a Bill to be brought into the Assembly, then sitting, for regulating the Indian Trade: Which Bill was so drawn, that had it pass'd, he would have engross'd all that beneficial Commerce. But Mr. *Robert Stephens*, and Mr. *Nicholas Trott* (who had not then forsaken the Country Interest) and some others, so plainly shew'd the ill Aim of that Act, that 'twas thrown out of the Assembly: Which Mr. *Moor* dissolv'd, perceiving they would not answer his Ends.

We do not think our selves oblig'd to keep to the Words of this Representation, which are too rough in some Places; but we keep religiously to the Sense; and having refer'd the Reader in the Margin to our Authority, he cannot suppose we endeavour to impose on him.

The Governour call'd a new Assembly about the latter end of the Year 1701. At the choosing of which, tho the Right of Electing be in the Freeholders only, he so influenc'd the Sheriff, that Strangers, Servants, Aliens; nay, Malatoes and Negroes were poll'd, and return'd.

Such as at the Place of Election oppos'd these Practices, were abus'd, and some assaulted by Mr. *Moor*'s Favourites. By this means having got several into the Assembly, Men of no Sense and Credit, who would vote as he wou'd have them; he there kept them from being thrown out, on the Petition of those who were unjustly excluded.

Colliton County sent a Representation against him to the Palatine, containing in Substance the same, as that

that we have
suspect the Tr

When the
bers he was su
out, on Petiti
when at last th
the Sheriff of
sted, by settin
sing Forces to
to the Spania
any Member

against it, and
at that time to
presently look
an Enemy an
dingly revil'd
the Expedition
County tells u
Slaves of India
have had this
before the W
Assembly carr

Before we
serve what pa
Ass, one of t
Fundamental C
over, confirm
and Mr. How

This Mr. T
vidence, and
was complain
Trott and H
lous; and the
Condition.

There's on
is very extra
Moor did gr
Robert Mack
kill, destroy,
could; the P
were turn'd t
takings, unjust
Probability dr

that we have spoken of before ; therefore we cannot suspect the Truth of it.

When the Governour was afraid any of the Mem- Ibid. p. 34.
bers he was sure was in his Interest would be turn'd out, on Petitions, he prorogu'd the Assembly : And when at last they were suffer'd to sit, the Inquiry into the Sheriff of Berkley County's Return was obstructed, by setting on foot an ill contriv'd Design of raising Forces to attack St. *Augustino*, a Fort belonging to the Spaniards, to the Southward of *Carolina*. If any Member of the Assembly undertook to speak against it, and to shew how unable the Province was at that time to undertake such an Expedition, he was presently look'd upon by him, and his Adherents, as an Enemy and Traitor to his Country ; and accordingly revil'd and affronted ; tho the true Design of the Expedition, as the Representation from *Colliston* County tells us, was *no other than catching and making Slaves of Indians, for private Advantage*. He would have had this Military Enterprize been undertaken before the War with *Spain* was proclaim'd ; but the Assembly carry'd that in the Negative.

Before we treat of this Expedition, we must observe what pass'd further in the Assembly. Mr. *John Ash*, one of the Members, propos'd to have the last Fundamental Constitutions, which Mr. *Daniel* brought over, confirm'd ; but he was oppos'd by Mr. *Trott* Ibid. and Mr. *How*, the Governour's Creatures.

This Mr. *Trott* had himself been Governour of *Providence*, and behav'd himself so arbitrarily, that he was complain'd of to King *William* some Years before. *Trott* and *How* expos'd the Constitutions as ridiculous ; and the Country was thus left in an unsettled Condition.

There's one Article in this Representation which is very extraordinary : That the said late Governour *Moor* did grant Commissions to *Anthony Dodsworth*, *Robert Mackoone*, and others, to set upon, assault, Coll Coun- kill, destroy, and take as many Indians as they possibly by Repr. could ; the Profit and Produce of which Indian Slaves Article 5. were turn'd to his private Use. Whereas such Undertakings, unjust and barbarous in themselves, will in all Probability draw upon us an Indian War.

We

We have said enough to give an Idea of the Condition the People of *Carolina* were in under such a Government, and have taken it all from Memorials presented by their Agents to the Lords Proprietaries. The next thing that comes in our way is the War of *Augustino*.

Two thousand Pounds were rais'd by an Act of the Assembly, to defray the Charge of this Expedition. The Governour prest as many Merchant Ships as were necessary to transport the Troops he intended to embark; who were order'd to rendezvous at *Port Royal*.

The Number of Men which were list'd for this Enterprize were 1200, 600 English, and 600 Indians. Col. *Moor* took the Command on himself, as General of all the Forces that should be rais'd within the Limits of his Government.

Col. *Rob. Daniel*, a very brave Man, commanded a Party who were to go up the River in *Periagds*, and come upon *Augustino* on the Land side, while the Governour sail'd thither and attack'd it by Sea. They both set out in *August*, 1702. Col. *Daniel* in his Way took *St. John's*, a small Spanish Settlement; as also *St. Mary's*, another little Village, belonging to the Spaniards. After which he proceeded to *Augustino*, came before the Town, enter'd and took it; Col. *Moor* not being yet arriv'd with the Fleet.

The Inhabitants having notice of the Approach of the English had pack'd up their best Effects, and retir'd with them into the Castle, which was surrounded by a very deep and broad Moat.

They had laid up Provisions there for 4 Months, and resolv'd to defend themselves to the last Extremity. However Col. *Daniel* found a considerable Booty in the Town. The next Day the Governour arriv'd, and a Council of War was immediately call'd, in which 'twas resolv'd to land.

Accordingly the Governour came ashore, and his Troops following him, they entrench'd, posted their Guards in the Church, and block'd up the Castle. The English held the Possession of the Town a whole Month, but finding they could do nothing for want of Mortars and Bombs, they dispatch'd away a Sloop for *Jamaica*; but the Commander of the Sloop, in-

stead of go-
or Treach-
stead, he p-
had lain so

The Gov-
of *Augustin*
Sloop: W
Daniel, wh
on the sam

This Ge-
cur'd a Su-
Augustino. B

the *Offing*,
of War, th
and aband

Stores, Am
Upon whic
of *Augustino*
say he burn

lost to the
Town over
two Men

prov'd to b
other of 16

When C
was chas'd,
with no gr
lay at St.

and so to C
in the whol
the *Tanios*

treated to t
upon his C
Unconcern.

Alarm, and
did not like
Flight; an

more Haste
vernour lea
all my Me

The First
State of *Aff*
terly on Co

suspect the

stead

stead of going thither, came to *Carolina*; out of Fear or Treachery. Finding others offer'd to go in his stead, he proceeded in the Voyage himself, after he had lain some time at *Charles-Town*.

The Governour all this while lay before the Castle of *Augustino*, in Expectation of the Return of the Sloop: Which hearing nothing of, he sent Col. *Daniel*, who was the Life of the Action, to *Jamaica*, on the same Errand.

This Gentleman being hearty in the Design, procur'd a Supply of Bombs, and return'd towards *Augustino*. But in the mean time two Ships appear'd in the *Offing*, which being taken to be very large Men of War, the Governour thought fit to raise the Siege, and abandon his Ships, with a great Quantity of Stores, Ammunition, and Provision, to the Enemy. Upon which the two Men of War enter'd the Port of *Augustino*, and took the Governour's Ships. Some say he burnt them himself. Certain it is, they were lost to the English, and that he return'd to *Charles-Town* over Land, 300 Miles from *Augustino*. The two Men of War that were thought to be so large, prov'd to be two small Frigats, one of 22, and the other of 16 Guns.

When Col. *Daniel* came back to *Augustino*, he was chas'd, but got away; and Col. *Moor* retreated with no great Honour homewards. The *Periagas* lay at St. *John's*, whether the Governour retir'd, and so to *Charles Town*, having lost but two Men in the whole Expedition. *Arratommakaw*, King of the *Taniosseaves*, who commanded the *Indians*, retreated to the *Periagas* with the rest, and there slept upon his Oars, with a great deal of Bravery and Unconcern. The Governour's Soldiers taking a false Alarm, and thinking the *Spaniards* were coming, did not like this slow Pace of the *Indian King* in his Flight; and to quicken him in it, bad him make more Haste: But he reply'd, No; tho your Governour leaves you, I will not stir till I have seen all my Men before me.

The First Representation, call'd also, *The present State of Affairs in Carolina*, reflects a little too bitterly on Col. *Moor* on this Head; and one would suspect the Truth of what it contains, if it was not con-

confirm'd by the second. We are told there, *They sent Plunder to Jamaica by their trusty Officers, under Colour of seeking Supplies, and sending for Bombs and Mortars.* Which is a malicious Turn given by Col. *Moor's* Enemies to Col. *Daniel's* going to *Jamaica*, who by the Dispatch he made there shew'd he went really for Mortars; and had the Governour staid till he had return'd, the Castle of *Augustino* had perhaps now been in *English* Hands; for the *Spaniards* had not above 200 Men aboard the two *Figats*. This Expedition, as unfortunate as it was in it self, was much more so in the Consequence of it; for it brought a Debt of 6000 *L.* on the Province. The Assembly had been under a Prorogation during the Governour's Absence, and when he return'd they met. The first thing they went upon, was to raise Money to pay off the Debt above-mention'd, and then they took into Consideration the Danger of the Country, as it lay expos'd to the Southward. But while these Bills were passing, another for the better regulating Elections, pass'd the Lower House twice, and was sent up to the Governour and Council, by whom 'twas reject'd without so much as a Conference. Upon which several of the Members, jealous of their Privileges, and being so order'd by those that sent them, enter'd their Protestation, and left the House; but return'd the next Day, offering to sit longer if the rest of the Assembly would join with them, in asserting their Right. The whole Assembly consists of but 30 Members, and 15 of them protested against the irregular Proceedings of the Governour. Instead of tempering Matters, when they return'd to the House, they were abus'd and treated with the most scandalous Reflections, unbecoming an Assembly that represented a whole Province. And as they were insulted within Doors, they were assaulted without; for a Day or two after Lieut. Col. *George Dearsby* drew his Sword upon *Thomas Smith*, Esq; a Landgrave, and once Governour of the Colony, threatening his Life. *John Ash*, Esq; a Member of the Assembly, was not only abus'd in the Streets by a Company of Drunken Fellows, but forc'd aboard a Ship belonging to Cap. *Rhett*, and threatned to be hang'd, or sent to *Jamaica*, or left on

See the
Representation
of
the Mem-
bers of
Colliton
County.

on some
who was
rolina, to
morial, ca
and the
were *Geor*
and others
ton County
immediatel
pressions to
greatest En
them, *The*
on their He
After the R
Witness, h
withdrew h
4 or 5 Day
grave, and
it, was call'd
Rhett can'd
Rioters ass
deputed by
mention'd
tine and Lo
ger and Fear
The same th
rest complai
Satisfaction,
on himself,
of the Prov
Question I d
'twas a Justic
The Riote
John Smith,
open the D
Child, and o
a dead Chil
These Instan
Temper of t
the same th
we must spea
follow'd upo
which I ha
Words, 'A

on some Desert-Island. This Mr. *Ash* is the Man who was employ'd as Agent for the People of Carolina, to represent their Grievances in the first Memorial, call'd, *The present State of Affairs in Carolina*; and the Persons who thus barbarously treated him, were *George Dearsby, Nicholas Nary, Thomas Dalton*, and others, whom, says the Representation of *Colliton County*, Article XI. the Governour had treated immediately before the Riot began, and us'd such Expressions to them, as gave them, next their Drink, the greatest Encouragements for what they ask'd; telling them, The protesting Members would bring the People on their Heads for neglecting to pay the Countrys Debts. After the Riot began, of Part of which he was an Eye-Witness, having first drunk with some of them, he withdrew himself out of the way. This Riot continu'd 4 or 5 Days; and *Edmund Bellinger, Esq;* a Landgrave, and Justice of Peace, attempting to suppress it, was call'd opprobrious Names by the Rioters, and *Rhett* can'd him for a considerable time. The Rioters assaulted Mr. *Joseph Boon*, a Merchant, deputed by *Colliton County*, to present the above-mention'd Second Representation to the Palatine and Lords Proprietaries, and put him in Danger and Fear of his Life, without any Provocation. The same they did by Mr. *James Byres*, who with the rest complain'd to the Governour; and receiving no Satisfaction, they ask'd him, whether he did not look on himself, as Governour, oblig'd to keep the Peace of the Province: The Governour reply'd, *That's a Question I am not oblig'd to answer*. He told them, 'twas a Justice of Peace's Business.

The Rioters went one Night to the House of one *John Smith*, a Butcher in *Charles-Town*, and forcing open the Door, threw down a Woman big with Child, and otherwise misusing her; she brought forth a dead Child, with the Back and Skull broken. These Instances are enough to shew any Man the Temper of this Governour and his Party; who were the same that stickled so much for the unhappy Bill we must speak of in the Sequel of this History. What follow'd upon this Riot, is told us in a late Tract, which I shall make use of in the Author's own Words, 'As this Riot was rais'd, encourag'd, and

Case of
Dis. in
Car. 19.

Sir Nath.
Johnson
Governor.

countenanc'd by the said Governour and Council ; And as no Assistance could be obtain'd to quell it, so all Methods to enquire into, and punish it, have been render'd ineffectual, and the Course of Justice intirely stop'd. For Sir Nathaniel Johnson was made Governour in the Room of the said Moor. The said Governor Moor was presently made Attorney General; and Mr. Trott, another of the chief Abettors of the Riot, the Chief Justice of the Common Pleas; who in this Province is sole Judge. Sir Nathaniel Johnson was General of the *Leward Islands*, in the Reign of the late King James; but he quitted his Government upon the Revolution, and retir'd to *Carolina*, where he liv'd privately till the Death of the late King James. Upon which he first took the Oaths to the Government; and some time after was made Governour of the Province. And he has since his being Governour appointed such Sheriffs, as prevent all Prosecutions of this Riot at their Assizes or Quarter Sessions (which are the only Courts of Justice in this Province) where Crimes of this Nature can be try'd; and where the said Mr. Trott is sole Judge, by returning such Jurors as were known Abettors of the said Riot: So that there is a total Failure of Justice, and nothing but Corruption in the whole Frame and Administration of Government.

Collison-County Representation tells us particularly, that Mr. Bullinger did what in him lay to have the said Riot inquir'd into. He gave in the Record of it to the Bench; and some of the Grand Jury urg'd to have it presented; but to no purpose. The first Representation informs us, that the Grand Jury presented it to the Court as a great Grievance, that the Riot was not look'd into, and the Rioters prosecuted; yet no Justice against them could be obtain'd: the Judge giving for Answer, 'Twas before the Council, his Superiors: The present Governour, That it was an Action done before his coming to the Government; that he thought the time of Prosecution laps'd, but would take care the like should be no more.

This A
Moderat
an Affem
tors, as m
lament m
fore when
cording i
they resolv
of the san
illegal Pra
Elections
Effect; an
now'd, as
The fir
informs u
ven Count
deber illeg
and openly
Friends.

The sec
Sailors, Sa
in Heaven
their Votes
for, more r
The Aff
be their Sp
to oppress
Bill contra
stitutions
Right of
the Act for
verment,
choseu Aden
fit in the s
Worship in
England,
Supper acc
Church.

Every D
by virtue o
ted of the
Person who
should be
pos'd the D

This

This Answer had in the last part of it a Face of Moderation; and such an Air was necessary, because an Assembly was about being elected. *The Conspirators*; as my Author terms them, saw that a new Parliament might set all things to rights again, and therefore when the time of a new Election came, which, according to their Constitution, is once in two Years; they resolv'd to procure a Commons House of Assembly of the same Complexion with the former, and by more illegal Practices. If those they had w'd in the former Elections would not do their Business, their Designs took Effect; and such a Commons House of Assembly was return'd, as fully answer'd their Expectations.

The first Representation brought over by Mr. Ash, informs us, That at the Election for Berkley and Craven County, the Violence in Mr. Moor's Time, and all other illegal Practices, were with more Violence repeated, and openly avow'd by the present Governour, and his Friends.

The second Representation adds, Jews, Strangers, Sailors, Servants, Negroes, and almost every Frenchman in Craven and Berkley Counties, came down to elect, and their Votes were taken, and the Persons by them voted for, were return'd by the Sheriffs.

The Assembly meeting, chose *Jab How*, Esq; to be their Speaker, and this was that Parliament, who, to oppress the Protestant Dissenters, brought in a Bill contrary to the first and last Fundamental Constitutions to the true Interest of the Colony, and the Right of every Freetholder there. 'Twas entitl'd, *An Act for the mere effectual Preservation of the Government*, by requiring all Persons that shall hereafter be chosen Members of the Commons House of Assembly, and sit in the same, &c. and to conform to the religious Worship in this Province, according to the Church of England, and to receive the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper according to the Rights and Usage of the said Church.

Every Dissenter that was turn'd out of the House, by virtue of this Act, made room for the most bigoted of the Faction to get in; for it provided, that the Person who had the most Votes next to such Dissenter, should be admitted in his Place; and those that oppos'd the Dissenters being generally, according to the

before-mention'd Author, Men of violent and persecuting Principles, the Faction secur'd the Power in their own Hands.

There were 12 Members for this Bill, and 11 against it, in the Lower House; and in the Upper, *Joseph Moreton*, Esq; a Landgrave, and one of the Proprietary's Deputies, was deny'd the Liberty of entering his Protest against it. The Bill pass'd the 6th of May, A. D. 1704. and was sign'd by Sir *Nathaniel Johnson*, Col. *Thomas Broughton*, Col. *James Moor*, *Robert Gibbs*, Esq; *Henry Noble*, Esq; *Nicholas Trott*, Esq;

Case of
Diff. Part
2. p. 57.

The Governour and Proprietaries Deputies, upon passing this Act, alarm'd all the Dissenters, who according to the Orthodox Minister of *Charles Town*; the Reverend Mr. *Marston's* Letter to the Reverend Dr. *Stanhope*, are the soberest, most numerous, and richest People of this Province; and this Assembly was compos'd of many Men of very loose and corrupt Morals.

We have shewn in the Beginning of the History of *Carolina*, that by the Fundamentals of the Province, the Dissenters could not be justly excluded from any Rights of the Members of it; we have shewn here what a sort of Convention, and by what Government countenanc'd, this Assembly was; and there's no need of exaggerating Matters, to make the thing look black; wherefore we shall proceed in our History.

It cannot be imagin'd, that a People who had been us'd so ill, wou'd sit still, and tamely bear such barbarous Usage; especially considering those that were concern'd in the Riot were some of the worst, and those that suffer'd by it, some of the best Men in the Province.

Col. *Joseph Moreton*, and *Edmund Bellinger*, Esq; Landgraves, and Deputies of the Lords Proprietaries, all the other Members of *Colliton* County, and several of the greatest Worth and Reputation in *Berkley* County, prevail'd with Mr. *Joseph Ash* to come for *England*, to represent the miserable State of the Province to the Proprietaries.

The Faction being apprehensive of their Danger in such a Proceeding, did their utmost to prevent Mr.

Mr. *Ash's* test Diffic
ginia, wh
vey'd to h
bitants ab
Coming
Lord *Gra*
But findin
prevailing
the Griev
He therefo
cited in th
tended to
could finis
betray'd in
How th
suppose; a
Dissenters i
telling us,
and insulte
Landgrave
ters which
Virginia a
the Papers b
Mr. *Ash*
much Part
says of him
Person suid
not that he
What S
appears also
son, by a C
or turn'd t
troverfy; a
led High C
Dissenters o
cipally tha
Grounds ar
Rino Expedi
The Party
vember an
nour, and
An-Act for
since, accor

Mr *Ash's* Voyage ; and 'twas not without the greatest Difficulty that he got away from *Carolina* to *Virginia*, where his Powers and Instructions were convey'd to him, as Agent for the Gentlemen and Inhabitants above-nam'd.

Coming to *England*, he apply'd himself to the Lord *Granville*, then Proprietary of the Province ; But finding he was entirely in the Interests of the prevailing Party in *Carolina*, he despair'd of seeing the Grievances he came to complain of, redress'd : He therefore drew up the first Representation, often cited in this Treatise, printed a Sheet of it, and intended to go through with it ; but dy'd before he could finish it ; and his Papers, after his Death, were betray'd into his Enemies Hands.

How this Agency was lik'd in *Carolina*, we may suppose ; and that the Author of, *The Case of the Dissenters in Carolina*, does not impose upon us, in telling us, *The Governour and his Agents prosecuted, and insulted several of the Inhabitants, and particularly Landgrave Smith, on the account of some private Letters which they sent to the said Ash, while he was in Virginia and England, and which were found among the Papers betray'd to the Governour's Agents.*

Mr. *Ash* may probably represent Things with too much Partiality, especially if what Mr. *Archdale* says of him be true ; *Their first Agent seem'd not a Person suitably qualify'd to represent their State here, not that he wanted Wis, but Temper.*

*Desc. of
Car. p. 254*

What Share the Governour had in this Business, appears also in the same Tract. Sir *Nathaniel Johnson*, by a Chymical Wit, Zeal, and Art, transmuted or turn'd this Civil Difference into a religious Controversy ; and so setting up a Standard for those call'd High Church, ventur'd at all to exclude all the Dissenters out of the Assembly, as being those principally that were for a strict Examination into the Grounds and Causes of the Miscarriage of the *Augustino* Expedition.

P: 23.

The Party did not stop here ; for on the 4th of November an Act pass'd, and was sign'd by the Governour, and the Deputies above-nam'd ; entitl'd, *An-Act for establishing Religious Worship in this Province, according to the Church of England ; and for*

P. 24.

the erecting of Churches for the Publick Worship of God, and also for the Maintenance of Ministers, and the building convenient Houses for them.

Which Act Mr. Archdale acquaints us, notwithstanding its splendid Gloss, favour'd of a persecuting Spirit, and of a haughty Dominion over the Clergy it self; for they set up a High Commission Court, giving them Power to place and displace Ministers, and act much in the Nature of the High Commission Court erected by King James II. in England. These Commissioners were Sir Nathaniel Johnson, Thomas Broughton, Esq; Col. James Adair, Nicholas Trout, Esq; Col. Robert Gibbes, Job How, Esq; Ralph Itard, Esq; Col. James Risbee, Col. George Logan, Lieut. Colonel William Rhett, William Smith, Esq; Mr. John Stroude, Mr. Thomas Hubbard, Richard Beresford, Esq; Mr. Robert Seabrook, Mr. Hugh Hicks, John Alby, Esq; Capt. John Godfrey, James Serurier, alias Smith, Esq; and Mr. Thomas Barton.

It will not be improper to give a Character of this James Serurier, who has been mightily employ'd by the present Government in Carolina; and we cannot do it better, than in using the same Words Mrs. Blake, Mother of the Proprietary Joseph Blake, Esq; writes to the Lords Proprietaries. Towards the Satisfaction of the Augustino Debt, an Act was contriv'd, for forcing the Currency of Bills of Credit to the Value of 6000 l. These Bills were declar'd current in all Payments, and the Refuser of them sueable in double the Value of the Sum refus'd; whereby the boldest Stroke has been given to the Property of the Settlers in this Province, that ever was known in any Country not govern'd by Arbitrary Power. And the bad Consequences of this forc'd Currency, in relation to Trade with Strangers, are so great, that they can scarcely be express'd. But there has nothing of this been weigh'd by your Lordship's Deputies here, or by the pack'd Members of our Commons House of Assembly. Besides all this, the People are not satisfy'd how many Bills are truly sent abroad; and the great Concern Mr. James Smith, alias Serurier (who cheated the Scots Company of a considerable Sum of Money, and with his Keeper made his Escape from London hither) had in this Contrivance, gives a Jealousy of

indi-

indirect P
what Inc
brought up
were Pro
But to the
nothing les
ment of Re
Reverend
Church in
three Passa
two of whi
and that wh
the Clergy
They depriv
of Parliame
Act of Affen
visited Mr.
of a Messen
House, and l

Of this
They made so
have occasion
in his Repr
Most of the
want Absent
Wonder they
Act, &c.
and Service
Provisions sho
and profligate
Laws, who n
Act. And c
ven of the T
crament of th
And that
the Church
wrest the Ec
of the Righ
Bishop of L
Col. Risbee's
ly be should
belov'd ther
adds further
by a Vote of

indirect Practices. By this the Reader understands what Inconveniences the *Augustino* Expedition brought upon the Colony, and what sort of Persons were Promoters of this Occasional Bill in *America*. But to shew that this Faction in the Assembly had nothing less in their View, than the real Advancement of Religion, and the Church of *England*; the Reverend Mr. *Edward Marston*, Minister of that Church in *Charles Town*, was censur'd by them, for three Passages of a Sermon preach'd there by him; two of which Passages were not in the said Sermon; and that which was amounted to no more, than that the Clergy had a Divine Right to a Maintenance. They depriv'd him of his Salary settl'd on him by Act of Parliament, and of 10 L. besides due to him by an Act of Assembly: Tho the chief Reason was his having visited Mr. Landgrave *Smith*, when he was in Custody of a Messenger, being committed by the Commons House, and living friendly with the Dissenters.

Case of
Diff. Car.
p. 231

Of this Assembly the same Reverend Divine says, *They made some very odd and unjustifiable Laws, which have occasion'd great Feuds and Animosities here.* And in his Representation to the Lords Proprietaries; *Most of the late Members of Assembly have been constant Absenters from the Holy Sacrament: So 'tis no Wonder they have inserted an absurd Oath in a late Act, &c. I cannot think it will be much for the Credit and Service of the Church of England here, that such Provisions should be made, for admitting the most loose and profligate Persons to sit and vote in the making of our Laws, who will but take the Oath appointed by the late Act.* And of the High Commissioners the said, *Eleven of the Twenty were never known to receive the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.*

See his
Letter to
Dr. Stan-
hope, Part
2. p. 57.

p. 62.

p. 63.

And that this furious Faction were no Friends to the Church of *England* is plain, by their Delign to wrest the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction out of the Hands of the Right Reverend Father in God, *Henry Lord Bishop of London*. Mr. *Marston* being threaten'd in Col. *Risbee's* House, That at the next Sessions of Assembly he should see the Bishop of London's Jurisdiction abolished there. And of this Carolina Parliament he adds farther, *Our Lower House of Assembly imprison'd the Fore of the House, fine die, and bid Defiance to the*

p. 67.

P. 60.

P. 58.

the Habeas Corpus Act, tho made in Force there by an Act of Assembly. The Governour was very cholerick with the Minister, because he had made Landgrave Smith a Visit, at the House of the Messenger; and a Bully lask'd him causelessly with his Whip, and tore his Gown from his Back. His Creatures also in the Assembly were the occasion of his Sufferings.

Part I. p.
28.

If I am accus'd of being partial in representing this Matter, I answer, that besides the Memorials publish'd by the Agent of Carolina, Mr. Archdale's Tract and others, I have diligently inquir'd into the Truth of the Fact, and have not been able to learn the least hint that makes against it, or vindicates the Party that is complain'd of, and were powerfully protected by the Lord Granville; notwithstanding it was made out to him, that the Assembly in passing the Occasional Bill in Carolina, were guilty of the most notorious ill Practices, and were Men of corrupt Principles and Manners. That Bill was brought into the House the 4th of May, and carry'd so precipitately, that it past the 6th, four Days before the time to which they were prorogu'd. There never were above 23 Members present, from the 26th of April to the 6th of May. There was but one more for it than against it; and of the latter many were Members of the Church of England.

There's one thing very remarkable in the Act, which is the Stile: *Be it enacted, by his Excellency John Lord Granville, and the rest of the true and absolute Lords and Proprietors of Carolina, &c.* A Stile never assum'd by them till very lately. From whence we may observe how pleas'd that Faction is every where with the Despotick and Absolute Power, inso-much as to usurp the Name, when they cannot obtain any thing more. *The Case of the Dissenters in Carolina*, is so full of Irregularities in the Course of this Affair, that we must refer the Reader to it. We have taken the most material, and now are to see what was done in *England* relating to this Matter.

The principal Merchants in *London* trading to *Carolina*, drew up a Petition to the Lord Granville against passing this Act, or to order its Repeal. Which Petition they lodg'd with Mr. Boone, the Agent

gent of
Weeks b
Proprieta

Mr. A
the ratify
Board, an
zing to fir
all of 'em
nother; a
Controver
that I will

What
been Sulta
be heard
Business ha
and I will
Bill, and
ded, Car s

As all M
were inef
same were
buses he n
ville was
what that
seen their
ded, is too
here.

The Bil
Carolina,
the Dissen
to be above
sobereft a
Evidence,
suffer then
out seekin
the Bill, a
repeal it,
in the Upp
dignation,
of the Un
pagating
meeting in
Establishin
deration,

gent of Carolina, who solicited the Palatine seven Weeks before he could prevail to have a Board of Proprietaries call'd.

Mr. Archdale, one of the Proprietaries, oppos'd the ratifying the Bill against the Dissenters at the Board, and with such solid Reasons, that 'tis amazing to find the Palatine make this short Answer to all of 'em : *Sir, you are of one Opinion, and I am of another ; and our Lives may not be long enough to end the Controversy : I am for this Bill, and this is the Party that I will head and countenance.*

What other Tone could he have talk'd in had he been Sultan of Carolina ? Mr. Boon pray'd he might be heard by Council. The Palatine reply'd, *What Business has Council here ? It is a prudential Act in me ; and I will do as I see fit. I see no harm at all in this Bill, and am resolv'd to pass it.* He should have added, *Car tel est notre Plaisir.*

As all Methods to procure Justice from this Board were ineffectual, in the Case of the Dissenters, the same were they in Mr. Marston's Case, and the Abuses he met with from the Party, the Lord Granville was resolv'd to head and countenance. And what that Party was in England, and how they have seen their unreasonable Attempts baffl'd and exploded, is too well known, to need any Remembrance here.

The Bill which occasion'd all the Complaints in Carolina, having past thus illegally and arbitrarily, the Dissenters in this Province being notoriously known P. 12. to be above two thirds of the People, and the richest and soberest among them, according to Mr. Marston's Evidence, 'twas not likely that they would suffer themselves to be insulted and persecuted without seeking Redress. The very Assembly who past the Bill, about half a Year afterwards past another to repeal it, when the House was full ; but it was lost in the Upper House ; and the Governour, in great Indignation, dissolv'd the Commons House, by the Name of the Unsteady Assembly. The Society for propagating the Gospel in America and elsewhere, meeting in St. Paul's Church, taking the Act for the Establishing of Religious Worship, &c. into Consideration, resolv'd not to send or support any Missionaries P. 41.

naries in that Province, till the said Act, or the Clause relating to the Lay Commissioners, was annul'd.

There being no Hopes of any Redress of the Grievances the Inhabitants of this Colony suffer'd in Carolina, nor from the Lords Proprietaries in England, they resolv'd to bring the Matter before the House of Lords in England, not doubting but to have entire Justice done them by that august Assembly; where the Language of their Palatine was never heard from the Throne, at least in this Reign, or the last; but in which are the Glory of the British Annals.

Mr. Boon was not only empower'd by the principal Inhabitants of Carolina to act as their Agent, but he was assisted in his Agency by several eminent Merchants of London, who sign'd the Petition to the House of Lords; as Mr. Micaiah Perry, Mr. Joseph Paice, Mr. Peter Renet, Mr. Christopher Fowler, and others.

The Effect of which was, after a full hearing of the Cause at the Lord's Bar, that most Honourable House, who have done such great Things for the Liberties of England, voted an Address to the Queen, in behalf of the Province of Carolina. But the Reader cannot be better satisfy'd, than to have it in their own Words; by which the State of the Case will be best seen.

The Humble Address of the Right Honourable the Lords Spiritual and Temporal in Parliament assembled, Die Martii 12, 1705.

The House having fully and maturely weigh'd the Nature of these two Acts, found themselves oblig'd in Duty to Your Majesty, and in Justice to your Subjects in Carolina (who by the Express Words of the Charter of Your Royal Uncle King Charles II. granted to the Proprietors, are declared to be the Liege People of the Crown of England, and to have Right to all the Liberties, Franchises, and Privileges of Englishmen, as if they were born within this Kingdom: And who by the Words of the same Charter, are to be subject to no Laws, but such as are consonant to Reason, and as near as may be to the Laws and Customs of England) to come to the following Resolution.

First,

First, That the Act of the said Palatine, and the Lords Proprietaries, in satisfying it, religious Worshipping of Church of for the publick Tenance of for them. establishing Rectors or warranted tors of that son, repug destructive to land.

Secondly, That the Act for An Act for Government of that shall be House of Oaths, and Act, and Province, Church, lat John Lord Lord Crav by Sir John Province, ed upon the Laws granted to Encourage tive to ruining th

First, That it is the Opinion of this House, that the Act of the Assembly of Carolina, lately pass'd there, and since sign'd and seal'd by John Lord Granville, Palatine, for himself, and for the Lord Cartaret, and the Lord Craven, and Sir John Colliton, four of the Proprietors of that Province, in order to the ratifying it, entitled, *An Act for the establishing Religious Worship in this Province, according to the Church of England, and for the erecting of Churches for the publick Worship of God, and also for the Maintenance of Ministers, and building convenient Houses for them.* So far forth as the same relates to the establishing a Commission for the displacing the Rectors or Ministers of the Churches there, is not warranted by the Charter granted to the Proprietors of that Colony, as being not consonant to Reason, repugnant to the Laws of this Realm, and destructive to the Constitution of the Church of England.

Secondly, That it is the Opinion of this House, That the Act of the Assembly of Carolina, entitled, *An Act for the more effectual Preservation of the Government of this Province, by requiring all Persons that shall hereafter be chosen Members of the Commons House of Assembly, and sit in the same, to take the Oaths, and subscribe the Declaration appointed by this Act, and to conform to the Religious Worship in this Province, according to the Rites and Usage of the said Church,* lately pass'd there, and sign'd and seal'd by John Lord Granville, Palatine, for himself, and the Lord Craven, and also for the Lord Cartaret, and by Sir John Colliton, four of the Proprietors of that Province, in order to the ratifying of it, is founded upon Falshy in Matter of Fact, is repugnant to the Laws of England, contrary to the Charter granted to the Proprietors of that Colony, is an Encouragement to Atheism and Irreligion, destructive to Trade, and tends to the depopulating and ruining the said Province.

May

First,

May it please your Majesty;

We your Majesty's most dutiful Subjects, having thus humbly presented our Opinion of these Acts, we beseech your Majesty to use the most effectual Methods to deliver the said Province from the arbitrary Oppressions, under which it now lies; and to order the Authors thereof to be prosecuted according to Law.

To which Her Majesty was graciously pleas'd to answer :

I thank the House, for laying these Matters so plainly before me; I am very sensible of what great Consequence the Plantations are to England, and will do all that is in my Power to relieve my Subjects.

It appear'd to the House, that some of the Proprietors absolutely refus'd to join in these Acts. This Matter being referr'd to the Lords of the Committee of Trade, they examin'd into it; and finding all the Fact charg'd upon the Promoters of these Bills, true; represented to Her Majesty, the 24th of May, 1706. That the making such Laws is an Abuse of the Power granted to the Proprietors by their Charter, and will be a Forfeiture of such Power. They further humbly offer'd to her Majesty, That she would be pleas'd to give Directions for re-assuming the same into her Majesty's Hands by *Scire Facias*, in her Majesty's Court of *Queen's-Bench*. Which Representation was sign'd by the Right Honourable the Lord Dartmouth, the Honourable Robert Cecil, Esq; Sir Philip Meadows, William Blathwayte, Esq; Matthew Prior, Esq; and John Pollexfen, Esq;

On the 10th of June, her Majesty was pleas'd to approve of the said Representation; and accordingly having declar'd the Laws mention'd therein to be NULL and VOID, did Order, That for the more effectual Proceeding against the said Charter, by way of *Quo Warranto*, Mr. Attorney, and Mr. Solicitor General do inform themselves fully concerning what may be most necessary for effecting the same.

Thus

Thus did Cry of the Justice on the try can put a nor no Diff kept within vent her fa her utmost t God has ma pire, in a di

The Asser rable Acts w a new one su the Election streightned l 20 Men to re a Dissenter, Nineteen of chosen, and tereft of the mer. The for them, t being set up Masters of S the Harbour was made in An Assembl Church-Act, ning if they ly be too ho

In Collison qualify them appear'd, an that appear'd for 14 Cand had the Maj

On Jan. 2 ough to ma Stephens, one Governour's Before Nigh on the Gover to choose a S too late, but

Thus did our most Gracious Sovereign hear the Cry of the Oppress'd, right the Innocent, and do Justice on the Oppressor. For no Distance of Country can put any of her Subjects out of her Protection; nor no Difference of Opinion (provided they are kept within the Bounds of Duty and Religion) prevent her favouring alike all her People; and doing her utmost to make them all happy, as the infinite God has made her Reign to her self, and her Empire, in a distinguish'd manner.

The Assembly which pass'd these two memorable Acts were dissolv'd in the following Year, and a new one summon'd to meet at *Charles Town*. At the Election, *Craven* and *Berkley* Counties were so streightned by the Qualifying Act, that they had not 20 Men to represent them, unless they would choose a Dissenter, or a Man not fit to sit in the Assembly. Nineteen of the Party against the *Occasional Bill* were chosen, and one Mr. *Job How* was elected by the Interest of the *Goosecreek* Faction, a Branch of the former. The *French*, who were Free-holders, voted for them, being induc'd to it, by a *Frenchman's* being set up for a Candidate. They also procur'd Masters of Ships, particularly Cap. *Cole*, who lay in the Harbour, to vote on their Side. This Election was made in the Town, and the Faction gave out, An Assembly was chosen, who would repeal the Church-Act, and not pay the *Augustino* Debt, threatening if they did, the House and Town should quickly be too hot to hold them.

In *Collison* County, there were but 14 Men would qualify themselves: Therefore none of the Dissenters appear'd, and there were but 10 Votes out of 200 that appear'd at the Election. The 10 Electors voted for 14 Candidates, and the Sheriff return'd 10 that had the Majority of Votes.

On Jan. 2. 1705. the Members met, but not enough to make a House, and choose a Speaker. Mr. *Stephens*, one of the Members, ask'd Mr. *How*, in the Governour's Presence, to attend; but he refus'd. Before Night the House was compleat, and waited on the Governour, and ask'd if he would direct them to choose a Speaker? He answer'd, he thought 'twas too late, but if they would venture they must do it with

Thus

with speed, for he was not well, and 'twould endanger his Health to sit up. So they presently chose Mr. *Sandbrook*, and presented him to the Governour; who approv'd of the Choice.

The next Day the House met, the Speaker in the Chair, and the Members were call'd upon to qualify themselves: Six did, and three more were ready to do it, and Debates arising about Qualifying, the House adjourn'd.

The House meeting again, a Report was, as 'tis said, industriously spread, that the Members had forfeited 50 l. a Man for adjourning before they were qualify'd. Mr. *How* and Mr. *Wiggington* attended in their Places, and offer'd to qualify themselves; but Mr. *Bornwell* coming with a Message, the House waited on the Governour; who spoke to this Purpose:

GENTLEMEN,

You are building on a wrong Foundation, and then the Superstructure will never stand; for you have dissolved yourselves by adjourning, before there was a competent Number of Members to adjourn, and I cannot dissolve you if I would, you not being a House. All this I know very well, as being my self many Years a Member of the House of Commons in England; and therefore as I am Head, I would advise you to go back no more to the House, but go every Man about his own Business: For if you should persist in settling and making Laws, besides the incurring the Penalties of the Act, the Laws would be of no Force, &c.

The Speaker refus'd to return to the Chair, and the Members dispers'd. The Governour and Council disowning the Assembly, Mr. *Wiggington* declar'd, 'Twas his Opinion the House was dissolv'd. But their Dissolution was aggravated, by the Pleasure the Governour took in making them *Felo de se*, their own Murderers.

Then another Assembly was call'd, the Choice of which was carry'd on with greater Violence than the former. *Job How*, Esq; was chosen Speaker, and the Members for the most Part qualify'd them-

selves

selves acc
had not t
in Englan
clusion.

they wer
and the o
their Con
present G

The Reas

Church of
among the

now, the

subverted,

be it enat

Assembly,

was chose

done in th

neral, tha

the Party

have entir

etaries are

dind.; wh

the Provin

may than

late Palat

foregoing

How th

to be forese

Persons we

Faction is

to let any

do things

ours in En

'Tis not

Province, t

'Tis suppos

Lord Gran

Duke of B

selves according to the Qualifying Act. The Faction had not then heard of the Proceedings against them in England, which indeed were not come to a Conclusion. They continu'd their Irregularities as if they were the most innocent Men in the Province, and the only true Patriots. They pass'd an Act for their Continuance two Years after the Death of the present Governour, or the Succession of a new one: The Reason is told us in the Preamble, *Whereas the Church of England has of late been so happily establish'd among them, fearing by the Succession of a new Governour, the Church may be either undermin'd, or wholly subverted, to prevent that Calamity befalling them, be it enacted, &c.* Mr. Job How, Speaker of the Assembly, dying some time after, Col. William Rhett was chosen in his Place. But what has been since done in these Affairs, we know not more than in general, that the two Acts have been repeal'd, and the Party who drove things on with such Fury, have entirely lost their Credit, and that the Proprietaries are oblig'd to them for the Cause now depending; wherein if they are cast, the Government of the Province will be forfeited to the Crown. They may thank themselves for it, or at least their late Palatine the Lord Granville: for since the foregoing Pages were written, that Lord dy'd.

How things may be manag'd now, is not difficult to be foreseen, from the good Intelligence between the Persons we have just mention'd; and the Fall of this Faction is a terrible Example to all Colonies, not to let any Prejudice or Passion hurry them on to do things which they cannot answer to their Superiours in England.

'Tis not yet known who will be Palatine of this Province, there being some Disputes in the Succession. 'Tis suppos'd the Lord Granville will succeed the late Lord Granville, who assign'd his Propriety to the Duke of Beaufort.

CHAP. II.

Containing a Geographical Description of Carolina; as also an Account of the Climate, Soil, Product, Trade, First Inhabitants, &c.

TIS very well known, that the Province of Carolina has been a long time divided into two separate Governments, the one call'd *North Carolina*, and the other *South Carolina*; but the latter being the more populous, goes generally under the Denomination of *Carolina*, and as such we have treated of it in the foregoing Pages. The Proprietaries of *North Carolina* are the Proprietaries of *South Carolina*; tho the Governours are different, in other things they are exactly the same And we shall put them together in the Geographical Description; as also in our Account of the Climate, Soil, Product, Trade, first Inhabitants, &c.

Carolina, as has been said, contains all the Coast of *North America*, between 31 and 36 Degrees of Northern Latitude. Its Breadth is not to be computed, King *Charles II.* having granted the Proprietors all the Land Westward in a direct Line from the above-mention'd Degrees to the South Seas. 'Tis in Length three hundred Miles. Its Situation is most convenient for Trade, the Coast pleasant and safe, not stormy, or frozen in the Winter.

As to the Climate, Mr. *Archdale* says of it, *Carolina is the Northern Part of Florida, viz. from 29 Degrees to 36 1/2, and is indeed the very Center of the habitable Part of the Northern Hemisphere; for taking it to be habitable from the Equinoctial to 64 Degrees, the Center of Carolina lies in about 32. which is about the middle of 64, lying Parallel with the Land of Canaan, and may be called the temperate Zone comparatively, as not being pester'd with the violent Heats of the more Southern Colonies, or the Extremes and violent Colds of the more Northern Settlements. Its Production answers the Title of Florida, quia Regio est Florida. Carolina North and*

Def. of
Car. p. 6.

and South
are in N
four in S
Counties

The f
dering or
ver; and
Roanoke,
whom Sir
This Com
New Eng
Grant.
was more
and confir
tations up
much, tha
ther. Th
it, which
but they d
Point, it d
and *Notaw*
dian Natio
bemarle is
Hattoras,
Next to it
Nation, in
our.

Next to
is the famo
Mouth of
River. Here
settled. Th
kon'd the
The next R
about 25 Le
pable of rec
Royal, nor
River betwe
River, and
Name of *Ch*
'tis not wor
South Carolin
River. The

and South is divided into 6 Counties; of which two are in *North Carolina*, *Albemarle* and *Clarendon*; and four in *South*, *Craven*, *Berkley*, *Colliton*, and *Cartaret* Counties.

The first is *Albemarle* County, to the North, bordering on *Virginia*. 'Tis water'd by *Albemarle* River; and in this Part of the Country lies the Island *Roanoke*, where *Philip Amidas* and *Arthur Barlow*, whom Sir *Walter Rawleigh* sent to *Virginia*, landed. This County may be said to belong to *Virginia*, as *New England*, &c. did, which justifies King *Charles's* Grant. When *Carolina* was first settled, *Albemarle* was more planted than any of the other Counties, and consisted of near 300 Families. But the Plantations upon *Ashley* River in time grew upon it so much, that most of the Planters here remov'd thither. This River is full of Creeks on both Sides of it, which for Breadth deserve the Name of Rivers, but they do not run far into the Country. At *Sandy Point*, it divides it self into two Branches, *Noratoke* and *Notaway*; and in the North Point lives an *Indian* Nation, call'd the *Mataromogs*. Next to *Albemarle* is *Pantegoe* River; between them is *Cape Hattoras*, mention'd in the History of *Virginia*. Next to it is *Neuse* River. The *Coranines*, an *Indian* Nation, inhabit the Country about *Cape Lookout*.

Next to *Albemarle* is *Clarendon* County; in which is the famous Promontary, call'd *Cape Fear*, at the Mouth of *Clarendon* River, call'd also *Cape Fear* River. Hereabouts a Colony from *Barbadoes* formerly settled. The *Indians* in this Neighbourhood are reckon'd the most barbarous of any in the Province. The next River is nam'd *Waterey* River, or *Winyann*, about 25 Leagues distant from *Ashley* River: 'Tis capable of receiving large Ships, but inferior to *Port Royal*, nor is yet inhabited. There's another small River between this and *Clarendon* River call'd *Wingoe* River, and a little Settlement honour'd with the Name of *Charles Town*, but so thinly inhabited, that 'tis not worth taking Notice of. We come now to *South Carolina*, which is parted from *North* by *Zantee* River. The adjacent Country is call'd,

The History of Carolina,

Craven County; it is pretty well inhabited by *English* and *French*; of the latter there's a Settlement on *Zantee River*, and they were very instrumental in the irregular Election of the *Unsteady Assembly*. The next River to *Zantee* is *Sewee River*; where some Families from *New England* settled: And in the Year 1706. the *French* landing there, they were vigorously oppos'd by this little Colony; who beat off the Invaders, having forc'd them to leave many of their Companions dead behind them. This County sends 10 Members to the Assembly. We now enter

Berkley County, passing still from North to South. The Northern Parts of this Shire are not planted, but the Southern are thick of Plantations, on Account of the two great Rivers, *Cooper* and *Ashley*. On the North Coast, there's a little River call'd *Bowal River*; which, with a Creek, forms an Islands, and off of the Coasts are several Isles, nam'd the *Humming-Islands*, and *Sillivants Isle*. Between the latter and *Bowal River*, is a Ridge of Hills; which, from the Nature of the Soil, is call'd the *Sand-Hills*. The River *Wando* waters the North-West Parts of this County, and has several good Plantations upon it, as Col. *Daniel's* on the South Side, and Col. *Dearsby's* lower down on the North. It runs into *Cooper River* near the latter, and they both unite their Streams with *Ashley River* at *Charles Town*. The late Assembly enacted, That a Church should be built on the South-East of *Wando River*, and another upon the Neck of Land, lying on the North-West of *Wando*, but we do not see that this Act was obey'd.

Charles Town, the Capital of this Province, is built on a Neck of Land between *Ashley* and *Cooper Rivers*, but lying most on *Cooper River*, having a Creek on the North Side, and another on the South. It lies in 32 Deg. 40 Min. N. Lat. 2 Leagues from the Sea. This the only free Port in the Province, which is a great Discouragement to it, and a vast Injury to Trade: 'Tis fortify'd more for Beauty than Strength. It has 6 Bastions, and a Line all round it. Towards *Cooper River* are *Blake's Bastion*, *Granville Bastion*, a Half Moon, and *Craven Bastion*. On the South Creek

are the P
a Line;
stion, Jo
bridge in
Cartarets
are well
Reason w
fy the To
the whole
Sale. Neit
near 1000
unhappy
Tuns. It
try about
extremely
which for
Walk, so
believe
so please
veral fail
some Build
the Key, v
Col. *Rhett*
Loggan's, M
deserve to
ces, the Ch
stately eno
the *Anglica*
begn to v
is dedicated
pointed the
That *Charles*
Ashley River
Gent. on Co
forth shall
St. Philip's
Cæmetry t
Parish Chu
Charles Tow
England M
since Mr.
say no more
him. The
first establi

are the Pallisades, and *Ashley* Bastion; on the North a Line; and facing *Ashley* River are *Colliton* Bastion, *Johnson's* Cover'd Half-Moon, with a Draw-bridge in the Line, and another in the Half-Moon. *Carteret's* Bastion is next to it. If all these Works are well made, and can be well mann'd, we see no Reason why they should not defend as well as beautify the Town; which is a Market Town, and thither the whole Product of the Province is brought for Sale. Neither is its Trade inconsiderable; for it deals near 1000 Miles into the Continent: However, 'tis unhappy in a Bar, that admits no Ships above 200 Tuns. Its Situation is very inviting, and the Country about it agreeable and fruitful: The High-ways extremely delightful, especially that call'd *Broad-way*, which for three or four Miles make a Road and Walk, *so pleasantly green, that, says my Author, I Archd. believe no Prince in Europe, by all his Art, can make p. 9.* so pleasant sight for the whole Year. There are several fair Streets in the Town, and some very handsome Buildings; as Mr. Landgrave *Smith's* House on the Key, with a Draw-bridge and Wharf before it; Col. *Rhett's* on the Key; also Mr. *Boon's*, Mr. *Loggan's*, Mr. *Schinking's*, and 10 or 12 more, which deserve to be taken Notice of. As for publick Edifices, the Church is most remarkable: 'Tis large and stately enough; but the Number of the Professors of the *Anglican* Worship encreasing daily, the Auditory begin to want Room, and another Church. This is dedicated to *St. Philip*; and by the Act, which appointed the High Commission Court, 'twas enacted, *That Charles Town, and the Neck between Cooper and Ashley River, as far up as the Plantation of John Bird, Gent. on Cooper River, inclusive, is, and from henceforth shall for ever be a distinct Parish, by the Name of St. Philip's in Charles Town;* and the Church and Cametry then in this Town were enacted to be the Parish Church and Church-Yard of *St. Philip's* in Charles Town. Mr. *Williams* was the first Church of England Minister in Carolina: A Person, of whom since Mr. *Marston* has said so much, we shall say no more. One Mr. *Warmel* was sent over after him. The Reverend Mr. *Samuel Marshal* was the first establish'd Minister at Charles Town; and his

Successor was Mr. *Edward Marston*, the present Rector of *St. Philips*; he came over seven Years ago. Mr. *Kendal*, Minister of *Bermudas*, was invited to this Colony; and Mr. *Corbin*, an Acquaintance of Mr. *Marston's*, coming by chance, he got him settl'd in this Province.

See Mr.
Marston's
Letter to
Dr. Stan-
hope, Part
2. of Case
of Dissent.
P. 58.

The Society for propagating the Gospel sent over one Mr. *Thomas*, to convert the Roman Catholick Indians; but he did not obey his Mission. On the contrary, 'twas by his Influence on some Men of Interest here, that Mr. *Kendal* was displac'd: Upon which he went distracted.

Mr. *Warmell* was also us'd so ill by him, that he also dy'd distracted; and Mr. *Corbin* was forc'd to leave the Colony, by the causeless Quarrels of the Inhabitants; in which the Dissenters had the least Hand. 'Twas by their Procurement that the 150 l. a Year, &c. was settl'd on the Orthodox Minister of this Church. The Church stands near the cover'd Half Moon.

There's a Publick Library in this Town, and a Free-School has been long talk'd of: Whether founded or not, we have not learn'd. The Library is kept by the Minister for the time being. It owes its Rise to Dr. *Thomas Bray*; as do most of the American Libraries, for which he zealously solicited Contributions in England.

Not far off, by *Cartaretts Bastion*, is the Presbyteri-an Meeting-house; of which Mr. *Archibald Stobo* is Minister. Between *Colliton* and *Ashley* Bastion is the Anabaptist Meeting-house, Mr. *William Screven* Minister. The French Church is in the Chief Street: Besides which there is a Quakers Meeting-house, in the Suburbs of it, properly so call'd, on the other Side of the Draw-bridge, in the Half Moon, toward *Ashley* River.

To the Southward is the Watch-house; and the most noted Plantations in the Neighbourhood of *Charles Town*, are *Ferguson's*, *Underwood's*, *Gilbertson* and *Garnett's*.

We may see by this Description that the Town is full of Dissenters, and would flourish more, were not the Inhabitants uneasy under the Government there. For one may imagine they who fled from

Eng-

England
to meet
tick, to
Relation
sings of a

There
of which
10 or 12

ting to a

In Cha

the Assen

the Publi

Province

The N

vers is ab

these are

Cooper R

key's, Gri

on Turkey

Mouth of

ted. Her

and had a

and one c

Assembly

spoken of

Mr. Th

fore-ment

Col. Moon

and the Re

Mr. M

Stanhope,

of the ill

ted. He

cation, lay

this young

Tears at on

learn the P

England,

am afraid

Sir John

ger's Plant

Schinking's

and Back

Plantation

England, to avoid Persecution, cannot be well pleas'd to meet with it in *America*; nor to cross the *Atlantic*, to live under Oppression abroad, while their Relations, and Friends at home enjoy all the Blessings of a peaceful and gentle Administration.

There are at least 250 Families in this Town, most of which are numerous, and many of them have 10 or 12 Children in each; in the whole amounting to about 3000 Souls.

In *Charles Town* the Governour generally resides, the Assembly sit, the Courts of Judicature are held, the Publick Offices kept, and the Business of the Province is transacted.

The Neck of Land between *Cooper* and *Ashley* Rivers is about 4 Miles over; and the Banks of both of these are well planted. The chief Settlements on *Cooper River* are *Mathew's*, *Green's*, *Gray's*, *Starkey's*, *Grimboll's*, *Dickeson's*, and *Izard's*; the latter on *Turkey Creek*. About a Mile from thence is the Mouth of *Goose-Creek*, which is also very well planted. Here Mr. *William Corbin* above-mention'd liv'd, and had a Congregation of Church of *England* Men; and one of the Churches propos'd to be built by the Assembly which pass'd the two fatal Acts we have spoken of, was to be erected.

Mr. *Thomas*, a Missionary sent by the Society before-mention'd, settled here, by Capt. *How's* and Col. *Moor's* Sollicitations; as did Mr. *Stackhouse*, and the Reverend Dr. *Lejau*.

Mr. *Mayston* in his Letter to the Reverend Dr. *Stanhope*, accuses Mr. *Thomas* of being the Occasion of the ill Usage that made Mr. *Kendal* run distracted. He complains he never had University Education, laying, *That the best Service your Society can do this young Man, Mr. Thomas, is, to maintain him a few Years at one of our Universities, where he may better learn the Principles and Government of the Church of England, &c. and some other useful Learning, which I am afraid he wants.*

Sir *John Teaman's*, and Mr. *Landgrave Rellenger's* Plantations are here; as also Col. *Gibbs's*, Mr. *Schinking's*, and *Colliton's* Company. Between this and *Back River* are Col. *Moor's* and Col. *Quarry's* Plantations.

The History of Carolina.

Back River falls into *Cooper River*, about 2 Miles above *Gooscerck*, and its Western Branch a little higher. Here another Church was propos'd to be built. The most noted Plantations are *Capt. Comming's*, and *Sir Nathaniel Johnson's*, bordering on the Barony of *Mr. Thomas Colliton*.

We must now take a View of *Ashley River*, where we first meet with *Mr. Landgrave West's* Plantation on one side, and *Col. Gibbs's* on the other. *Mr. Baden's* over against *Col. Godfrey's*; *Mr. Simond's* opposite to *Dr. Trevillian's*; and *Mr. Pendarvis's* to *Mr. West's*, *Mr. Colliton's* to *Mr. Marshal's*, and others, almost contiguous.

This Part of the Country belongs to the Lord *Shaftsbury*. On the South-West of *Ashley River* is the great *Savana*. One of the Churches intended to be erected in this County, was to have been built on *Ashley River*.

Dorchester is in this Shire, bordering on *Colliton* County. 'Tis a small Town, containing about 350 Souls. There's a Meeting-House belonging to the Independants, the Pastor of which is *Mr. John Lord*. Next to it is *Stono River*, which divides *Berkley* from *Colliton* County. To which we must now proceed, observing only that *Berkley* County sends ten Members to the Assembly. The same does,

Colliton County; which *Stono River* waters, and is join'd by a Cut, near *Mr. Blake's* Plantation, to *Wadmoolaw River*. The 'North-East Parts of this Division of the Province is full of Indian Settlements; and the *Stono*, and other Rivers, form an Island, call'd *Boones Island*, a little below *Charles Town*, which is well planted and inhabited. The two chief Rivers in this County are *North Edistow*, and *South Edistow*. At the Mouth of the latter is *Col. Paul Grimball's* Plantation; and for two or three Miles up the River, the Plantations are thick on both sides, as they continue for three or four Miles higher on the North-side, and branching there, the River meets with the *North Edistow*.

Two Miles higher is *Wilton*, by some call'd *New London*, a little Town, consisting of about 80 Houses. Landgrave *Moreton*, *Mr. Blake*, *Mr.*

Boon,

Boon, La
ters, hav
is *Sir Joh*

A Chu
of the S
taken effe
vote in
Orthodo
Williams

Cartare
nerally e
fant Part
are distin
Southwara
joining w
Island *Ed*

The C
by the *W*
There's a
first Engli
hereabout
trary, bec
finest in *F*
ards to di

The Sc
but were
as has be
20 Leagu
Degrees,
Entrance,
Harbour
ping, and
ble to the
by various
Port is no
a great Cu
tlement is

Next to
120; whic
Florida, a

The Air
ful, of a
ten times
a vast Qua

Boon, Landgrave *Axtel*, and other considerable Planters, have Settlements in this Neighbourhood, which is Sir *John Colliton's* Precinct.

A Church was to have been built on the South-side of the *Stono*, had that Project gone on, and the Act taken effect. This County has 200 Freeholders, that vote in Election for Parliament Men. There's an Orthodox Church in this Precinct, of which Mr. *Williams* is Minister.

Cartaret County is not yet inhabited, but is generally esteem'd to be the most fruitful and pleasant Part of the Province; this and *Colliton* County are distinguish'd from the other by the Name of the *Southward*. In it is the great River *Cabbage*, which joining with the River *May*, forms with the Sea *Island Edelano*.

The Country upon the River *May* was inhabited by the *Westoe*, an Indian Nation already mention'd. There's a pleasant Lake and Valley in it; and the first English that came to *Carolina*, thought of settling hereabouts; but the Indians advis'd them to the contrary, because the Harbour of *Port Royal* was the finest in *Florida*, and would have tempted the Spaniards to disturb them.

The Scots settled here, under the Lord *Cardross*, but were soon forc'd to abandon their Settlements, as has been elsewhere hinted. *Port Royal* River lies 20 Leagues from *Ashley* River, to the South, in 31 Degrees, 45 Minutes, North Latitude. It has a bold Entrance, 17 Foot low Water on the Bar. The Harbour is large, commodious, and safe for Shipping, and runs into a fine fruitful Country, preferable to the other Parts of *Carolina*. It spends its self, by various Branches, into other large Rivers. This Port is not 200 Miles from *Augustino*, and would be a great Curb to the Spaniards there, where their Settlement is not very considerable.

Next to it is the River of *May*, and then *San Matteo*; which is the last of any Note in the English *Florida*, a Name this Province highly deserves.

The Air of this Country is healthy, and Soil fruitful, of a sandy Mould, which near the Sea appears ten times more barren than it proves to be. There's a vast Quantity of Vines in many Parts on the Coasts, bearing

bearing abundance of Grapes, where one would wonder they should get Nourishment. Within Land the Soil is more mix'd with a blackish Mould, and its Foundation generally Clay, good for Bricks.

Its Products are the chief Trade of the Inhabitants, who send it abroad, according as the Market offers; and 'tis in demand in *America* or *Europe*. But the chief Commerce from hence is to *Jamaica*, *Barbadoes*, and the *Leward* Islands. Yet their Trade to *England* is very much encreas'd; for notwithstanding all the Discouragements the People lie under, seventeen Ships came last Year, laden from *Carolina*, with Rice, Skins, Pitch, and Tar, in the *Virginia* Fleet, besides stragling Ships.

Its principal Commodities are Provisions, as Beef, Pork, Corn, Pease, Butter, Tallow, Hides, Tann'd Leather, Hogshead and Barrel Staves, Hoops, Cotton, Silk; besides what they send for *England*. Their Timber Trees, Fruit Trees, Plants, and Animals, are much the same with those in *Virginia*; in which History may be seen a large Account of them: But since Mr. *Archdale* has been a little particular in his, and has added a short Description of the Natives, &c. we will communicate what he says to the Reader.

P. 9.

'Tis beautify'd with odoriferous Woods, green all the Year; as Pine, Cedar, and Cypress. 'Tis naturally fertile, and easy to manure. Were the Inhabitants industrious, Riches would flow in upon them; for I am satisfy'd, a Person with 500 *l.* discreetly laid out in *England*, and again prudently manag'd in *Carolina*, shall in a few Years live in as much Plenty, as a Man of 300 *l.* a Year in *England*; and if he continues careful, not covetous, shall increase to great Riches, as many there are already. Witness, and many more might have been, if Luxury and Intemperance had not ended their Days.

As to the Air, 'tis always serene, and agreeable to any Constitutions, as the first Planters experienc'd. There's seldom any raging Sicknes, but what is brought from the Southern Colonies; as the late Sicknes was, which rag'd, *A. D.* 1706. and carry'd off

' off abund
' Places.
' Intemp
' What ma
' is, to hav
' vers in J
' It has a
I was there
had no Sin
Cold; and
were gener
temperance
' Every
' in any p
' sorts of F
' rines, &c
' the watr
' such Plen
' Hogs. I
' be bearin
' All for
' Barley,
' Wheat-E
' the best l
' Commod
' Buck, D
' so good a
' It has a
' a great m
' There are
' and the S
' makes Pr
' Winter
' Fodder,
' Commo
' The R
' was at fir
' triv'd, no
' Ashley ar
' bold as th
' been dish
' Settlemen
' The r
' over the

' off abundance of People in *Charles Town*, and other
' Places.

' Intemperance also has occasion'd some Distempers.
' What may properly be said to belong to the Country
' is, to have some gentle Touches of Agues and Fe-
' vers in *July* and *August*, especially to new Comers. Ibid.
' It has a Winter-Season, to beget a new Spring.
I was there, adds my Author, at twice, five Years, and P. 7.
had no Sickness, but what I got by a careless violent
Cold; and indeed I perceiv'd that the Fevers and Agues
were generally gotten by Carelesness in Cloathing, or In-
temperance:

' Every thing generally grows there that will grow
' in any part of *Europe*, there being already many
' sorts of Fruits, as Apples, Pears, Apricocks, Necta-
' rines, &c. They that once tast of them, will despise
' the watry washy Tast of those in *England*. There's
' such Plenty of them, that they are given to the
' Hogs. In 4 or 5 Years they come from a Stone to
' be bearing Trees.

' All sorts of Grain thrive in *Carolina*, as Wheat,
' Barley, Peas, &c. And I have measur'd some
' Wheat-Ears 7 or 8 of our Inches long. It produces
' the best Rice in the known World, which is a good
' Commodity for Returns home; as is also Pitch, Tar,
' Buck, Doe, Bear Skins, and Furs, tho the last not
' so good as the Northern Colonies.

' It has already such Plenty of Provisions, that it in
' a great measure furnishes *Barbadoes*, *Jamaica*, &c.
' There are vast Numbers of wild Ducks, Geese, Teal;
' and the Sea and Rivers abound in Fish. That which
' makes Provisions so cheap, is the Shortness of the
' Winter : For having no need to mow for Winter
' Fodder, they can apply their Hands in raising other
' Commodities.

' The Rivers are found to be more navigable than
' was at first believ'd; and 'twas then prudently con-
' triv'd, not to settle on the most navigable; but on
' *Ashley* and *Cooper* River, those Entrances are not so
' bold as the others; so that Enemies and Pirates have
' been dishearten'd in their Designs to disturb that
' Settlement.

' The new Settlers have now great Advantages
' over the first Planters, since they can be sup-
ply'd

ply'd with Stocks of Cattle and Corn at reasonable Rates.

I shall conclude this Account of *Carolina*, with an Extract of a Letter from thence, from a Person of Credit; in whose Words I communicate it to the Publick: He speaks of the *Southward*.

' The many Lakes we have up and down breed a
' Multitude of Geese, and other Water-Fowl. All
' along *Port Royal* River, and in all this part of *Carolina*,
' the Air is so temperate, and the Seasons of
' the Year so regular, that there's no Excess of Heat
' or Cold, nor any troublesome Variety of Weather:
' For tho there is every Year a kind of Winter, yet it is
' both shorter and milder than at *Asheley* or *Cooper* River;
' and passes over insensibly, as if there was no Winter at all.
' This sweet Temperature of Air, causes the Banks of this River to
' be cover'd with various Kinds of lovely Trees; which being
' perpetually green, present a thousand Landships to the Eye,
' so fine, and so diversify'd, that the Sight is entirely charm'd
' with them. The Ground is very low in most Places near the River;
' but rises gradually, at a distance, with little Hills, adjoining
' to fruitful Plains, all cover'd with Flowers, without so much
' as a Tree to interrupt the Prospect. Beyond these are beautiful
' Vales, cloath'd with green Herbs, and a continual Verdure,
' caus'd by the refreshing Rivulets that run through them.
' There are a great many Thickets, which produce abundance
' of Simples. The Indians make use of them for the Cure of their
' Diseases. There are also Sarsaparilla, Cassia Trees, Gumms,
' and Rosin, very good for Wounds and Bruises; and such a
' prodigious Quantity of Honey, which the Bees make every
' where, that the Store of it is not to be exhausted. Of this they
' make excellent Spirits, and Mead as good as *Melaga* Sack.
' The Bees swarm five or six times. There's a kind of Tree,
' from which there runs an Oil of extraordinary Virtue,
' for Curing Wounds. And another Tree, which yields a Balm,
' thought to be scarce inferiour to that of *Mecca*.

Silk is come to a great Improvement here, some Families

Families
Plantations
Children
And we
to own
Improve
yearly;

But 't
since G
make so
we not f

To w
think the
Culture,
would n
king goo
and thou

They
make Dr
up a Lin
made her

A Fren
ty, taugh
the Flute
it seems
same Extr
and Fidle

Tho w
who are
since we
cular, let

' Provi
' to mak
' potent
' broke o
' lish arr
' themsel
' of them
' vince;
' and use
' God all
' as the
' North
' lence;

Families making 40 or 50 Pound a Year, and their Plantation Work not neglected, their little Negro Children being serviceable in feeding the Silk-Worms. And we must do Sir *Nathaniel Johnson* the Justice, to own he has been the principal Promoter of this Improvement, as also of Vineyards. He makes yearly 3 or 400 *l.* in Silk only.

But 'tis objected, Since the Climate is so proper, since Grapes are so plentiful, and the Wine they make so good, why is there not more of it? Why do we not see some of it?

To which I answer, That the Inhabitants either think they can turn their Hands to a more profitable Culture, or impose upon us in their Reports; for I would not think them so weak, as to neglect making good Wine, and enough of it, if they could, and thought it worth their while.

They manufacture their Silk with Wool, and make Druggets. The French Protestants have set up a Linnen Manufacture; and good Romalls are made here.

A French Dancing-Master settling in *Craven* County, taught the Indians Country-Dances, to play on the Flute and Hautbois, and got a good Estate; for it seems the Barbarians encourag'd him with the same Extravagance, as we do the Dancers, Singers, and Fiddlers, his Countrymen.

Tho we have said enough of the *Virginian* Indians, who are much the same with the *Carolinian*; yet since we find Mr. *Archdale* speaks of them in particular, let the Reader see what he has said of 'em.

Providence was visible in thinning the Indians, to make Room for the English. There were two potent Nations, the *Westoes* and *Savannas*, who broke out into an usual Civil War before the English arriv'd; and from many Thousands reduc'd themselves to a small Number. The most cruel of them, the *Westoes*, were driven out of the Province; and the *Savannas* continu'd good Friends, and useful Neighbours to the English. It pleas'd God also to send unusual Sicknesses among them; as the Small-Pox, &c. The *Pemlico* Indians in P. 2, 3. North Carolina, were lately swept away by a Pestilence; and the *Caramine*, by War. The Natives are

The History of Carolina.

'are somewhat tawny, occasion'd chiefly by oiling
'their Skins, and by the naked Rays of the Sun. They
'are generally streight body'd, comely in Person,
'quick of Apprehension, and great Hunters; by which
'they are not only very serviceable; by killing Deer,
'to procure Skins for Trade with us; but those that
'live in Country-Plantations procure of them the
'whole Deer's Flesh, and they will bring it many Miles
'for the Value of about 6 d. and a wild Turkey of
'40 Pound, for the Value of 2 d.

They have learn'd one of their worst Vices of the
English, which is, Drinking; and that occasions
Quarrels among them, one of which we have menti-
on'd in the time of Mr. Archdale's Government. To
what he would excite us, to their Conversion to
Christianity, 'tis a Project which, like a great many
other very good ones, we rather wish than hope to
see effected.

Mr. Thomas was sent to instruct the *Yammoses* in
the Christian Religion, and had an Allowance of 50 l.
a Year from the before-mention'd Society, besides other
Allowances: But finding it an improper Season, his
Mission is respit; the Reason is, those Indians re-
volted to the English from the Spaniards; and not be-
ing willing to embrace Christianity, 'tis fear'd they
would return to their old Confederates, if any means
were made use of to that purpose.

This Country is in a very flourishing Condition;
the Families are very large, in some are 10 or 12 Chil-
dren; and the Number of Souls in all is computed to
be 12000. The Children are set to Work at 8 Years old.
The ordinary Women take care of Cows, Hogs, and
other small Cattle, make Butter and Cheese, spin
Cotton and Flax, help to sow and reap Corn, wind
Silk from the Worms, gather Fruit, and look after
the House. 'Tis pity this People should not be easy
in their Government; for all their Industry, all
the Advantages of the Climate, Soil, and Situation
for Trade, will be useless to them, if they live under
Oppression; and *Pensylvania* will have no occasion
to complain, that she tempts away her Inhabitants;
being a new Beauty, a fairer, and consequently a
powerful Rival.

We

We sh
Carolina,
and chief

William
Henry D
The H
Able
the l

John Lo
Sir John
Joseph E
John Ar
Nichola

Sir Nath.

Col. Ja
Col. Tho
Col. Rob
Mr. Ni
Mr. ---
Mr. He

Speaker of
The Secret
a Year.
The Chief
The Judge
Moor, 4
Surveyor
Attorney
Receiver
Naval Offi
Collector
Agent for

The History of Carolina.

381

We shall conclude this History and Account of *Carolina*, with a List of the present Proprietaries, and chief Officers of this Colony.

<i>William Lord Craven,</i>	}	Proprietaries.
<i>Henry Duke of Beaufort,</i>		
<i>The Honourable Maurice Ashley, Esq; Brother to the Earl of Shaftsbury,</i>		
<i>John Lord Cartaret,</i>		
<i>Sir John Colliton, Baronet,</i>		
<i>Joseph Blake, Esq;</i>		
<i>John Archdale, Esq;</i>		
<i>Nicholas Trott, Esq;</i>		

Sir Nath. Johnson, Governour, Sallary 200 l. a Year.

<i>Col. James Moor,</i>	}	Counsellors.
<i>Col. Thomas Broughton,</i>		
<i>Col. Rob. Gibbs,</i>		
<i>Mr. Nich. Trott,</i>		
<i>Mr. ----- Ward,</i>		
<i>Mr. Hen. Noble,</i>		

Speaker of the Assembly, *William Rhett, Esq;*
The Secretary, *----- Ward, Esq;* His Salary 60 l. a Year.

The Chief Justice, *Mr. Trott, 60 l.*

The Judge of the Admiralty-Court, *Col. James Moor, 40 l.*

Surveyor General, *----- How, Esq; 40 l.*

Attorney General, *Col. James Moor, 60 l.*

Receiver General, the same, 60 l.

Naval Officer, *Mr. Trott, 40 l.*

Collector of the Customs, *Col. Thomas Broughton.*

Agent for the Colony in England, *Mr. Joseph Boone.*

T H E

We

THE
HISTORY
OF
HUDSON'S-BAY.

CONTAINING

An Account of its Discovery and Settlement, the Progress of it, and the present State ; of the *Indians*, Trade, and every thing else relating to it.

T WAS in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, that all the *English* Dominions on the Continent of *America* were discover'd, except *Hudson's* Straights ; which being the most Northerly, should have been treated of first, and put at the Head of the other Settlements ; but the *French* have a large Dominion between the *English* at *Hudson's Bay*, and those at *New England* : And besides there being no Towns nor Plantations in this Country, but two or three poor Forts to defend the Factories, we thought we were at Liberty to place it where we pleas'd, and were loath to let our History open with the Description of so miserable a Wilderness, and so wretched a Colony. For as rich as the Trade to these Parts have been or may be, the way of Living is such, that we cannot reckon any Man happy, whose Lot is cast upon this Bay.

In

In the
first Voy
and *Cath*
June he
3 Minu
by his M
England
time on
Streight
Natives
themselv
study'd
here till
England
Year, a
Six Y
sail'd fro
into the
ceeded t
ing, he
Southwa
Degrees
which he
for ; bu
turn'd to
the same

After
way, til
discover
Mention
as the V
digiousl
by the S
nothing
set out
mer Dis
A. D.
out the
farther
could n
finding
In the S
very, he
the rest

The History of Hudson's-Bay.

383

In the Year 1576. Cap. *Martin Frobisher* made his first Voyage for the Discovery of a Passage to *China* and *Cathay* by the North-West; and on the 12th of June he discover'd *Tierra de Labrador*, in 63 Degrees 3 Minutes, and enter'd a Streight, which is call'd by his Name. On the 1st of October he return'd to *England*. In the following Year, he went a second time on the same Discovery, came to the same Streight, and us'd all possible Means to bring the Natives to Trade, or give him some Account of themselves; but they were so wild, that they only study'd to destroy the *English*. Cap. *Frobisher* stay'd here till Winter drew on, and then he return'd to *England*. He made the same Voyage the following Year, and with the like Success.

Six Years afterwards, *A. D. 1585. John David* sail'd from *Dartmouth* on the same Adventure, came into the Latitude of 64 Degrees 15 Minutes, and proceeded to 66 Degrees 40 Minutes. In the Year ensuing, he ran to 66 Degrees 20 Minutes, and coasted Southward again to 56 Degrees. Sailing thence in 54 Degrees, he found an open Sea tending Westward, which he hop'd might be the Passage so long sought for; but the Weather proving tempestuous, he return'd to *England*. In October, the next Year, he did the same.

After which there were no more Adventures this way, till the Year 1607. when Cap. *Henry Hudson* discover'd as far as 80 Degrees 23 Minutes: At the Mention of which, the Reader will almost freeze as the Writer does; for that Country is so prodigiously cold, that Nature is never impregnated by the Sun; or rather, her barren Womb produces nothing for the Subsistence of Man. In 1608. he set out again; and, having added little to his former Discoveries, return'd. Two Years after which, *A. D. 1610.* he again undertook a Voyage to find out the North-West Passage, proceeded 100 Leagues farther than any Man had done before him, till he could not go forward for Ice and Shoal Water; and finding himself imbay'd, he resolv'd to winter there. In the Spring, *A. D. 1611.* pursuing a further Discovery, he and seven more of his Company were seiz'd, the rest of his Men put into an open Boat, and committed

The History of Hudson's Bay.

mitted to the Mercy of the Waves and Savages. By one or the other of which he perish'd, dearly purchasing the Honour of having this large Streight and Bay call'd after his Name.

We know 'tis pretended, that a *Dane* made the Discovery of this Streight, and that he call'd it *Christiana*, from the King of *Denmark*, *Christiern* the IVth. then reigning. But *Cap. Hudson* was the Man who discover'd it to the *English*, and who indeed first sail'd so near the Bottom of the Bay, as he did within a Degree or two.

The same Year that he dy'd, *Sir Thomas Button*, at the Instigation of Prince *Henry*, pursu'd the same Discovery. He pass'd *Hudson's* Streights, and leaving *Hudson's Bay* to the South, settled above 200 Leagues to the South-West, and discover'd a great Continent, by him call'd *New-Wales*. He winter'd at the Place afterwards call'd *Port Nelson*, carefully search'd all the Bay, from him call'd *Button's Bay*, and return'd to *Digg's Island*.

In 1516. *Mr. Baffin* enter'd *Sir Thomas Smith's Bay*, in 78 Degrees, and return'd despairing to find any Passage that way.

Thus we see all the Adventures made to the North West, were in Hopes of passing to *China*; but that is a Discovery as latent as the Philosophers Stone, the perpetual Motion, or the Longitude.

In 1631. *Cap. James* sail'd to the North-West, and roving up and down in those Seas, arriv'd at *Charlton Island*, where he winter'd in 52 Degrees, much beyond *Hudson*, *Button*, and *Baffin*. *Cap. Fox* went out this Year on the same Account, but proceeded no further than *Port Nelson*.

The Civil Wars in *England* put Discoveries out of Mens Heads; the Bold had other Work cut out for them; and we hear of no more such Adventures till the Year 1667. when *Zachariah Gillam*, in the *Nonfuch Ketch*, pass'd thro *Hudson's* Streights, and then into *Baffin's Bay* to 75 Degrees; and thence Southward into 51 Degrees; where in a River, afterwards call'd *Prince Rupert's River*, he had a friendly Correspondence with the Natives, built a Fort, nam'd it *Charles Fort*, and return'd with Success.

The

The
Radison
meeting
in Cana
by Lane
had not
conduct
it. Th
the sam
Capital
Mercha
Project
in hopes
after pre
great de
as they h
upon as
sador at
made, in
vice, in
already P
to go for
Reception
and other
a New En
and Goose
tom of th
ready.

When
in fitting
the Ild. fo
their Succ
the Streig
bears Date
King's Re

The fir
son's-Bay C

Prince Ru
Sir James
Mr. Willia
Mr. Gerar

The Occasion of *Gillam's* going was this: Monsieur *Radisson* and Monsieur *Gooselier*, two French-men, meeting with some Savages in the Lake of *Assimponals*, in *Canada*, they learnt of them that they might go by Land to the Bottom of the Bay, where the *English* had not yet been. Upon which they desir'd them to conduct them thither, and the Savages accordingly did it. The two French-men return'd to the upper Lake the same way they came, and thence to *Quebec*, the Capital of *Canada*; where they offer'd the principal Merchants to carry Ships to *Hudson's-Bay*, but their Project was rejected. Thence they went to *France*, in hopes of a more favourable Hearing at Court; but after presenting several Memorials, and spending a great deal of Time and Money, they were answer'd as they had been at *Quebec*, and their Project look'd upon as Chimerical. The King of *England's* Ambassador at *Paris*, hearing what Proposals they had made, imagin'd he should do his Country good Service, in engaging them to serve the *English*, who had already Pretences to the Bay: So he perswaded them to go for *London*; where they met with a favourable Reception from some Men of Quality, Merchants, and others, who employ'd *Gillam* before-mention'd, a *New England* Captain, in the Voyage; and *Radisson* and *Gooselier* accompanying, they arriv'd at the Bottom of the Bay, and succeeded as we have hinted already.

When *Gillam* return'd, the Adventurers concern'd in fitting him out, apply'd themselves to King *Charles* the 11d. for a Patent; who granted one to them and their Successors, for the Bay call'd *Hudson's-Bay*, and the Streights call'd *Hudson's-Streights*. The Patent bears Date the 2d. of *May*, in the 22d. Year of that King's Reign, *A. D.* 1670.

The first Proprietors or Company, call'd the *Hudson's-Bay Company*, were,

Prince *Rupert*.
Sir *James Hay*.
Mr. *William Young*.
Mr. *Gerard Weymans*.

Mr. *Richard Cradock*.
Mr. *John Letton*.
Christopher *Wrenn*, Esq;
Mr. *Nicholas Hayward*.

The History of Hudson's Bay.

The Bay lies from 54 Degrees North Latitude to 51 Degrees, and is 10 Degrees, or 600 Miles in Length.

Before we proceed any further in the History, it will not be improper to give an Account of the Country, Climate, Product, Trade, and Inhabitants.

The Mouth of the Streights, which is in about 61 Degrees North Latitude, is 8 Leagues over. At the Mouth is an Island, call'd *Resolution*. *Charles* Island, *Salisbury* Island, and *Nottingham*, are in the Streights, and *Mansfield* Island in the Mouth of the Bay.

Hudson's Streights, which lead to the Bay, are about 120 Leagues in Length; the Land on both Sides inhabited by Savages, of whom we have little or no Knowledge. The South Coast is known by the Name of the *Tierra Labrador*, the North by as many Names as Men of several Nations have been there, and pretended to the Discovery of it. On the West Side of the Bay, the *English* made a Settlement, built a Fort at Port *Nelson*, and all that Country goes by the Name of *New South Wales*. The Bay here is call'd *Button's*; and *Hudson's Bay*, which is broadest in this Place, may be near 130 Leagues broad.

On the other Shoar, or the Coast of *Labrador* lie several Islands, call'd the *Sleepers Isles*, and the *Baker's Dozen*. The Bottom of the Bay, by which we understand all that Part of it from Cape *Henrietta Maria*, in *New South Wales*, to *Redonda*, below Prince *Rupert's* River, is about 80 Leagues long, and much of one Breadth all the way, being between 40 and 50 Leagues over.

Here are several Islands, to which the first Adventurers gave the Names of some Great Men in England, or some that employ'd them; as Lord *Weston's* Island, Sir *Thomas Roe's* Island, *Charlton* Island, and others. The two opposite Shores are call'd the *East Main* and *West Main*. The former is *Labrador*, and the latter *New South Wales*. The Continent at the Bottom of the Bay is by the *French* pretended to be Part of *New-France*; and indeed to cross the Country from St. *Margaret's* River, which runs

runs in the Bay 10 Miles.

At Fort, any Town will.

or Hudson but to they are the for

The

West

meer

Brush-

to over

which

Isle is

3 Miles

lies a day

Water.

Charl

with a v

tho not

spect to

Voyage

in the V

Ice, wh

which,

Pieces a

indeed r

by the V

To see

the Mou

ing like

behold

Branches

is a Sun

sure after

Voyage.

The A

the Latit

but in 51

other the

Wind.

runs into the River of *Canada*, to *Rupert's River*; at the Bottom of *Hudson's Bay*, is not above 150 Miles.

At *Rupert's River*, the *English* built their first Fort, which they call *Charles Fort*. They never had any Towns or Plantations here, and probably never will. They live within their Forts in little Houses, or Huts, wherein the Builders consider nothing but to defend them from the Cold and Rains, tho they are not so much disturb'd by the latter as by the former.

There's an Island about 5 or 6 Leagues from the *West Main*, call'd the *Little Rocky Isle*, it being a meer Heap of Rocks and Stones, with some small Brush-Wood growing upon it. 'Tis suppos'd to overflow with great North-West Winds, which make a High-Tide all over the Bay. In this Isle is plenty of Gulls and Sea Swallows. About 3 Miles from the South South-East Part of the Island, lies a dangerous Reaf of Sand, which is dry at Low-Water.

Charlton Island is a light white Sand, cover'd over with a white Moss, full of Trees, Juniper and Spruce, tho not very large. This Isle affords a beautiful Prospect to such as make it in the Spring, after a long Voyage of 3 or 4 Months, in the most dangerous Seas in the World, occasion'd by the vast Mountains of Ice, which drive in the Bay and Streights; against which, if Ships happen to strike, they are dash'd in Pieces as certainly as if they ran against Rocks: For indeed they are Rocks congeal'd, or rather petrify'd by the Violence of the continual Frosts.

To see one Day the Shoar on the *West Main* bare, the Mountains cover'd with Snow, and Nature looking like a Carcass frozen to Death; and the next to behold *Charlton Island* spread with Trees, and the Branches making as it were a green Tuft of the whole, is a Surprise, that must give the greatest Pleasure after the Fatigues of an intollerable Winter Voyage.

The Air even at the Bottom of the Bay, tho by the Latitude 'tis nearer the Sun than *London*, being but in 51 Degrees, is excessive cold for 9 Months, tho other three Months very hot, but on a North-West Wind.

The History of Hudson's Bay.

The Soil on the *East Main*, as well as the West, bears no manner of Grain. Some Fruits, Gooseberries, Strawberries, and Dew Otter-berries, grow about *Prince Rupert's River*.

The Commodities for Trade here, are Guns, Powder, Shot, Cloth, Hatchets, Kettles, Tobacco, &c. which the *English* exchange with the *Indians* for Furs, Beavers, Martin, Fox, Moose, and other Peltry; and the Curious, who have any Taste of Commerce, will not think it a Digression to insert a Standard of Trade, which the *Hudson's Bay Company* fix'd about 23 Years ago; and by which may be seen what Advantage they made of this Traffick. This Paper being put into my Hands, among others relating to the Affairs of the Company, is as follows.

The STANDARD how the Company's Goods must be barter'd in the Southern Part of the Bay.

Guns.	One with the other 10 good Skins; that is, Winter Beaver; 12 Skins for the biggest sort, 10 for the mean, and 8 for the smallest.
Powder.	A Beaver for half a Pound.
Shot.	A Beaver for four Pounds.
Hatchets.	A Beaver for a great and little Hatchet.
Knives.	A Beaver for 6 great Knives, or 8 Jack Knives.
Beads.	A Beaver for half a Pound of Beads.
Lac'd Coats.	Six Beavers for one good Lac'd Coat.
Plain Coats.	Five Beaver Skins for one Red Plain Coat.
Coats.	For Women, Lac'd, 2 Yards, 6 Beavers.
Coats.	For Women, Plain, 3 Beavers.
Tobacco.	A Beaver for one Pound.
Powder- Horns.	} A Beaver for a large Powder-Horn and two small ones.
Kettles.	
Looking-Glasses and Combs.	Two Skins.

'Tis plain by this Standard the Company got prodigiously, and had they traded much, their Auctions might have been now 300 per Cent. as they were once; but their Returns were small, and their Charges great:

great
one of
other

As
guage
with
very n
and m
where
pire.

The
in the
have h
They
quarrel
Nodwa
of Hu
ties ma
ving kn
umph.

The
bounde
Okimab
is an O
Experie
think f
their S
their o
Spring
Quarter
ry Fam
they sel
in their
Family

Thei
They sa
sends al
all the
Dances
that ha
or fam
they se
near th
they co

great : Ten thousand Beavers in all their Factories was one of the best Years of Trade they ever had, besides other Peltry.

As to the *Indians*, their Manners, Customs, Language, Government, and Religion, they are the same with the *Canadians*; and *La Hontan* has describ'd them very naturally, excepting that he has rais'd Nature, and made her too polite in this barbarous Clime, where Barbarity her self is in the Height of her Empire.

The *Indians* about *Rupert's River*, and other Places in the Bay, are more simple than the *Canadians*, who have had longer Commerce with the Europeans. They are generally peaceable, and not given to quarrel either with themselves or others, except the *Nodways*, a wild barbarous People on the Borders of *Hudson's Streights*; who sometimes in slight Parties make Incursions on the other *Indians*, and, having knock'd 8 or 10 on the Head, return in Triumph.

The *Indians* of certain Districhs, which are bounded by such and such Rivers, have each an *Okimah*, as they call him, or Captain over them, who is an Old Man, consider'd only for his Prudence and Experience. He has no Authority but what they think fit to give him upon certain Occasions. He is their Speech-maker to the *English*; as also in their own grave Debates, when they meet every Spring and Fall, to settle the Disposition of their Quarters for Hunting, Fowling, and Fishing. Every Family have their Boundaries adjusted, which they seldom quit, unless they have not Success there in their Hunting, and then they join in with some Family who have succeeded.

Their Notions of Religion are but very slender. They say, there are two *Manetoes* or Spirits, the one sends all the Good things they have, and the other all the bad. Their Worship consists in Songs and Dances at their Feasts, in Honour of the *Manetoes* that have favour'd them : But if they are sick or famish'd, they hang some little Bawble, which they set a Value upon, on the Top of a Pole, near their Tent, to pacify the Spirit offended, as they conceive,

Let the Learned say all the fine Things that Wit, Eloquence, and Art, can inspire them with, of the Simplicity of pure Nature, the Beauty and Innocence; these Wretches are an Instance, that this Innocence is downright Stupidity, and this pretended Beauty a Deformity, which puts Man, the Lord of the Creation, on an equal Foot with the Beasts of the Forrest.

The History of *Hudson's Bay* will not afford us much Matter. The Settlements are too inconsiderable, to deserve much Pains to be taken about them. What we know of them is as follows.

Charles
Baily, Esq; Baily, Esq; Governour: With whom went Mr.
Governour Radisson, the Frenchman before-mention'd, and 10
or 20 Men, who were to stay on the Place; his Residence being at *Rupert River*, where a mean Fort has been built.

Mr. Baily appointed Mr. *Thomas Gorst* to be his Secretary, and order'd him to keep a Journal of their Proceedings there, which is now in my Custody; but the Events it contains are too trivial to be remember'd: what are most curious I shall report; and the Reader must excuse me, if they are of no more Importance: They serve to give him an Idea of an Infant Colony, in one of the rudest Parts of the World.

The chief Indian near the Fort had the Name of Prince given him. Two other Indians were call'd *Peter* and the *Chancellour*; who with their Wives and Families came to the Governour, to beg Subsistence, declaring they could kill nothing, and were almost starv'd. For if these Barbarians could meet with no Game, they had no Meat.

Thus we see in what a miserable Condition these English there were like to be, Supplies did not come regularly from *England*. Mr. Baily having fed the Prince, the Chancellour, his *Cocamish*, or Wife, and the rest of them, sent them up the Falls a fishing, and follow'd them in his *Canoo*, to hunt up in the Country; but could meet with no Game, except 2 Moose, and no People to trade with. These Moose are but indifferent Meat; however the Air is sharp, to make it relish as well

as. Ven
come.

Some
Prince
and his
Part of
there's
the Beg
ple must
for a lon

The B
and no
was at
Captain
search'd
He saw
and sup
saw also
one of
piece of
piece of
Years.

This
River, b
Draught

About
way to t
European
hard We
Wood fo

Now
ing up t
and they
sent a Sl
and Cha
their La
Nights b

About
geal on t
after tha
ral Indian
others, c
was a Fo
ver was

as Venison, and 'twas accordingly very well-come.

Some Days afterwards the Indians return'd. The Prince brought a young Deer: The Chancelour and his Wife some Fish and Moose. The greatest Part of the Autumn Fowl here, are Geese, of which there's then Plenty, and they begin to come about the Beginning of September, a sure sign that the People must take their Leave of Summer, and prepare for a long Winter of near forty Weeks.

The English had now worse Hurts than afterwards, and no Covering for them but Moose Skins. There was at this time a Factory at Port Nelson, where Captain *Gooselier* arriv'd in August, 1673. He search'd the River for Indians, but met with none. He saw several *Wigwams*, where they had lately been, and suppos'd them to be gone up the Country. He saw also the Relicks of Sir *Thomas Button's* Ship; and one of his Company, Mr. *Cole*, brought home a piece of Shot, a piece of her Bulk-head, and a small piece of Cable, which had lain there about 60 Years.

This Captain was order'd to search for *Severn* River, but could not find it, tho 'twas in the old Draughts of this Bay.

About the Beginning of *October* the Geese fly away to the Southward; a terrible Sight to the poor Europeans in the Bay; for by that they know the hard Weather is approaching, and begin to provide Wood for Winter before the Snow falls.

Now Mr. *Baily* and his little Colony fell to patching up their Cabbins, and prepare for the Enemy; and they had nothing to fear but the Season. He sent a Sloop to *Point Comfort*, between *Rupert* River and *Charlton* Island, to kill Seals, to make Oil for their Lamps, they having no Candles, and the Nights being long.

About the 10th of *October* the Ice begins to congeal on the Shores; but often warm Weather comes after that, and thaws it. The 23d of *October* several Indians came to the Fort to trade; and among others, one from *Quebec*. In one Night the Snow was a Foot deep, and by the 6th of *November* the River was frozen over.

The History of Hudson's Bay.

About the middle of the Month Partridges come, of which they kill'd 5, as white as Snow. The English that were there, diverted themselves, while the Weather permitted, with killing Partridges; but truly there seems not to have been much Plenty of them, for four Men, in a Weeks time, kill'd but 36. They Fowl'd for them about *Peter's River*, and *Frenchmans River*; the one above, and the other below *Rupert's*. But in *December* and *January* the Frosts were so severe, they could not stay out. The Governour's Boys Feet and Face were spoil'd by the Frost, in catching of Partridges.

The Snows in the Woods, when at the deepest, are 7 or 8 Foot; sometimes they do not exceed 4 Foot, as in the Year 1673. and then least Moose is to be had. The 23th of *January*, 3 Indians brought Beaver to the Fort, and a little fresh Meat. They reported, that as they past *Moose River*, about 10 Days Journey from *Rupert's*, they saw some dead Bodies of Indians, which they suppos'd to be *Onachanoes*, most of that Nation being destroy'd by the *Nodwayses*, who were then about *Moose River*; and, as they threaten'd, intended to visit the English in the Spring; they were accordingly as good as their Words. The 1st of *February* there was such a Change of Weather, that it rather thaw'd than froze. The English with living on Salt-Meats, were all down with the Scurvy in this Month: For tho they continu'd to catch Partridges, there were so few caught; they went but a very little way among them.

Several Indians came in *March*, and built their *Wigwams* at the East End of the Fort, intending to stay there all Winter, that they might be ready for Trade in the Spring. The Nation that took up their Quarters near the Fort were the *Cuscididahs*; and the King sent Mr. *Baily* word, he would come to him speedily. The Governour on the 23d of *March*, accompany'd by *John Abraham*, and others, travell'd on the Ice to *Point Comfort*, where were some Indian Tents, to buy what fresh dry'd Meat he could; the Store at the Fort being almost spent.

About the 20th of *March* it began to thaw; and the *Nodwayses* still threatning the English with War, the Governour prepar'd every thing necessary in the Fort

Fort for
Men, a
to notif
Fort new
bled tha
Retinue
having
The
Mr. Col
sence;
31st of
small
the Ge
return
caught.
All th
wams,
They w
Indians,
gainst t
The Fr
tives tr
great R
to lower
dwelt a
the grea
The
Natives,
Days Jo
the Eng
ther the
Rupert's
being in
On th
pal Perk
the Gov
were pr
Governor
gainst it,
thither i
longing
and the
priz'd.

Fort for his Defence. On the 25th of *March*, 6 Men, as Ambassadors, came from King *Cuscudidah*, to notify his Approach, and that he would be at the Fort next Day; which he made good, and was troubled that the Governour was absent. He brought a Retinue with him, but little Beaver, the Indians having sent their best to *Canada*.

The English at the Fort stood on their Guard, and Mr. *Cole* commanded them in the Governour's Absence; for whom the King sent 2 Indians. And the 31st of *March*, the Governour return'd, with a small Supply of *Moose* Flesh. On the 1st of *April*, the Geese, the Promise of the Spring, begin to return again, and prodigious Quantities were caught.

All this while the Indian King stay'd at the *Wigwams*, near the Fort; and the reason of it was, They were apprehensive of being attack'd by some Indians, whom the French Jesuits had animated against the English, and all that dealt with them. The French us'd many Artifices to hinder the Natives trading with the English; they gave them great Rates for their Goods, and oblig'd Mr. *Baily* to lower the Prices of his, to oblige the Indians, who dwelt about *Moose* River, with whom they drove the greatest Trade.

The French, to ruin their Commerce with the Natives, came and made a Settlement, not above 8 Days Journey up that River, from the Place where the English traded. 'Twas therefore debated, whether the Company's Agents should not remove from *Rupert's* to *Moose* River, to prevent their Traffick being intercepted by the French.

On the 3d of *April*, 1674. a Council of the principal Persons in the Fort was held, where Mr. *Baily*, the Governour, Capt. *Gooselier*, and Capt. *Cole*, were present, and gave their several Opinions. The Governour inclin'd to remove. Capt. *Cole* was against it, as dangerous; and Capt. *Gooselier* for going thither in their Bark to trade, when the Indians belonging to King *Cuscudidah* were gone a hunting, and there was no fear of the Fort's being surpriz'd.

The Indians went to building their *Wauskebeigin*, or Fort, near the Fort, and rais'd their *Wauskebeigin*, or Fort, near the English, that the Palisadoes join'd. One of those Barbarians being jealous of his Wife, and finding her in the Fort, pull'd out a Hatchet, which he had hidden under his Coat, and gave her a desperate Wound in the Head; but she did not die of it. The Indian fearing the Governour wou'd punish him for striking in the Fort, fled to the Woods. Upon which Mr. *Baily* order'd that no Indian, but King *Cuscudidah*, and his chief Courtiers, should be admitted into the Fort, and a Watch was set upon the Gate.

As the Ice grow rotten and melted, the Indians who ventur'd on the Rivers fell frequently in; but they all swam like Ducks, and seldom or never were any of them drown'd. The great Thaw began about the 20th of *April*, and then all the English having spent their Beer, and Winter-Liquor, return'd to drinking of Water.

Geese and Swans were now to be had, and that supply'd in some measure their Want of Provision. The Governour having been cheated by the Indians at *Point Comfort*, in his *Moose Flesh*, went thither, and oblig'd them to make Satisfaction.

On the 20th of *May*, 12 Indians, Subjects to King *Cuscudidah*, came in seven Canoes, and the King meeting them, conducted them to the Fort, where they told him, there would be few or no *Upland* Indians come to trade that Season, the French having perswaded them to come to *Canada*: However Mr. *Baily* order'd the Sloop to be got ready, and resolv'd to go up the River.

Upon the Arrival of this new Company, among whom was the King's Brother, a Feast was made; the Manner of which was this; They all sat down together, and one Man, a Kinsman of the King's, broke the Meat and Fat in small Pieces, according to the Number of Men there. After a short Speech made by the King, the Substance of which was, for them to take Courage against their Enemies, and other Stories. The Company shouted, and then the Man who broke, distributed the Meat about to them, they crying, *Oh! Ho!* as much as to say, *thank*

thank you
of fat B
gether w
which th
Piece of
fell to S
fing, and
put over
nue this
home, ca
being ver
their Fear

On the
wams, ne
juring; v
with *Wye*
open; b
that none
that *Pow*
it, and in
which in
any Stran
at the tim
or their C
down upo
upon their
English.

They *A*
If it happe
Maneto is
out to the
good. *W*
White and
Black and
they celebr
monly two
tion, and
cut Wood.
Men only
fetch the
serve the

The nex
and Indian
Bay, to *Fr*
but could n

thank you. 'Tis incredible, to tell the Abundance of fat Beaver, Moose Flesh, and Fat, they eat together with the Broath, and Fat as black as Ink, which they drink. Then every Man had a small Piece of Tobacco distributed to him, and they all fell to Smoaking. Some afterwards danc'd, some sung, and a Man beat a Drum, which was a Skin put over a Kettle, and lac'd a-thwart. They continue this commonly all Night, and when they go home, carry what Meat is left to their Sqwaws, it being very rare for them to admit the Women to their Feasts.

On the 22d of May, the Indians at their Wigwams, near the Fort, had a *Powwow*, or sort of Conjur'ing; which is thus, There's a small Tower built, with Wyth Sticks, about 8 Foot high, the Top being open; but the rest cover'd very close with Skins, that none may see into it. In the Night, the Man that *Powwows* goes into the Tower; the rest sit nigh it, and in their Places ask him several Questions, which in a manner they know already; as, When any Strangers will be here? The *Powwower* guesses at the time, and answers accordingly. The *Maneto*, or their God, told them, the *Nodways* would come down upon them e're long, and advis'd them to be upon their Guard, as also against the *Mistigooses*, or English.

They *Powwow* often, and upon several Occasions. If it happens not as they expected it would, then the *Maneto* is *Muchocauwan*, or very bad; and if it falls out to their Desires, then *Maneto* is *Moruckfice*, or good. When they kill a Moose, their *Maneto* is *White* and *Good*. When they kill none, then he is *Black* and *Naught*. They *Powwow* very much when they celebrate any Marriages. Every Man has commonly two Wives, whom they keep in great Subjection, and make 'em do all Slavery; as draw *Sleds*, cut Wood, make Fires, and dress Moose Hides. The Men only hunt, and kill the Game: The Women fetch the Beast that is kill'd, and take Care to preserve the Flesh.

The next Day the Governour, and some English and Indians arm'd, went down to the Bottom of the Bay, to *Frenchmens* River, to seek for the *Nodways*, but could meet with none.

At

The History of Hudson's Bay.

At the latter end of *May* the Geese go to the Northward, to breed. On the 27th, about 50 Men, Women and Children, came in 22 Canoes, to trade, but brought little or no Beaver with them. They were of the Nation call'd *Pishhapocanoes*, near a-kin to the *Eskeimoes*, and both alike a poor beggarly People: By which we may perceive the French ran away with the best of the Trade.

The Governour having got every thing ready for a Voyage to *Moose River*, sent Capt. *Gooselier*, Capt. *Cole*, Mr. *Gorst*, my Author, and other English Indians, to trade there. They got about 250 Skins; and the Captain of the *Tabitsee* Indians inform'd them, the French Jesuits had not brib'd the Indians, not to deal with the English, but to live in Friendship with the Indian Nations in League with the French. He blam'd the English for trading with such pitiful Nations, as the *Cuscudidahs* and *Pishhapocanoes*, advising them to settle at *Moose Sebee*, and the Upland Indians would come down and trade with them. The Reason they got no more Peltry now, was, because the Indians thought *Gooselier* was too hard for them, and few would come down to deal with him.

My Author, in this Voyage, past by *Robinson Island*, *Willow Island*, and saw several *White Whales*. The Musketoos are extreemly troublesome in *May* and *June*, especially after Rains. The *Nodways* coming down within a Quarter of a Mile of the Fort, the Alarm was given the English and Indians; but the Enemy were afraid to come farther; and Mr. *Baily* with a Party of both, pursu'd them in their Retreat, but could not come near enough to do any Execution.

This Fright being over, Mr. *Baily* sail'd himself for *Moose Sebee*, and brought home 1500 Skins; the *Shechittawams*, 50 Leagues from that River, having come to trade with him. By the 24th of *June* all the Indians had left their Wigwams near the Fort, and were gone abroad to hunt and trade, some with the English, and some by themselves.

The Governour undertook a Voyage to discover *Shechittawam River*; and thence intended to coast along to *Port Nelson*, where as yet was no Fort. In the mean time Mr. *Gorst*, who was left Deputy at the Fort, sent a Yaul, and four Men well arm'd,

up the N
go for th
Islands an

By the
main'd a
ons, thei
mortal du
and Plov
their Live

After a
and gave
On the
and arriv
no Engli
till the 2
Beaver.

'Tis a
N. W. in
and his S
Ship and t
they assur
ver, and b

The 21
and saw a
E. distant
Shechittaw
ney in C
account
Island.

The 23
sailing alo
stood in f
This Poin
took the
ver, call'd
it; where
on the Gr
among th
want of F
Wildernes
for the wr

On the
had like
Shahoe, or

up the *Nodways* River; which, as high as they could go for the *Falls*, was 3 Miles broad, full of small Islands and Rocks; in which Geese breed.

By the Beginning of *August*, the English that remain'd at the Fort had almost spent all their Provisions, their Powder and Shot, and began to be in mortal dread of starving. They kill'd Ducks, Teal, and Plover, and some of them were always out, for their Lives depended upon it.

After about 2 Months Voyage, Mr. *Baily* return'd, and gave this Account of his Voyage in the Sloop. On the 15th of *July* he sail'd from *Moose River*, and arriv'd at *Schettawam* River on the 18th, where no Englishman had been before. He stay'd there till the 21st, but could meet with little or no Beaver.

'Tis a fine River, and a good Channel, to the N. W. in 52 Deg. N. L. He treated with the King, and his Son made them a Promise to come with a Ship and trade with them the next Year. In return, they assur'd him, they would provide Store of Beaver, and bring the *Upland* Indians down.

The 21st he set sail towards *Cape Henrietta Maria*, and saw a great Island, stretching N. N. W. and S. S. E. distant about 14 Leagues from the Mouth of *Shechittawam* River. The Island being two Days Journey in Circumference, Indian Paddling, which they account to be 30 Leagues; 'twas nam'd *Vinc's* Island.

The 23d, upon a Point, as he and his Crew were sailing along Shore, they spy'd a great Smoak; they stood in for it, and found 7 distress'd Indians there. This Point lay in 52 Deg. 40 Min. The Governour took them in, and gave them Passage to a small River, call'd *Equon*, 100 Leagues to the Southward of it; where they saw the Bodies of some Indians dead on the Ground. There had been a great Mortality among them, and several were starv'd to Death for want of Food; this Country being such a miserable Wilderness, that it affords not sufficient Sustenance for the wretched Inhabitants.

On the 27th of *July*, the Sloop ran upon Ice, and had like to have founder'd. Their Pilot was a *Wasishahoe*, or *New Severn* Indian, and 'twas reported, that

The History of Hudson's Bay.

that he had two Rows of Teeth; but he hated so much to see the Compass, that he was very troublesome to the Crew; so the Governour order'd him to be put ashore.

The Indians on *New Severn River* are as poor as the *Eiskemoes*; and indeed all the Northward Indians are more beggarly and brutal than the Southward. The Governour understanding by some *Washtakoe* Indians, there was no Beaver to be had, and that the Sea beyond the Cape was full of Ice, resolv'd to return, neither he nor his Company having eaten any thing in two Days, but a few sodden Pease and Oat-Meal.

In their Return they were forc'd a-shore upon *Charlton Island*, where they lay 2-or 3 Days in Distress, and at last got off, with the loss of several Necessaries. After he had return'd to the Fort, on the 30th of *August*, a Canoe arriv'd at *Rupert's River*, with a Missionary Jesuit, a Frenchman, born of English Parents, attended by one of *Cusquidiah's* Family, a young Indian. The Frier brought a Letter to Mr. *Baily* from the Governour of *Quebec*, dated the 8th of *October*, 1673. For the Priest should have been at *Rupert's River* several Months before, but that he was stop'd by the Indians. The Governour of *Quebec* desir'd Mr. *Baily* to treat the Jesuit civilly, on account of the great Amity between the two Crowns; and Mr. *Baily* resolv'd to keep the Jesuit till Ships came from *England*.

He brought a Letter also for Capt. *Gooselier*, which gave Jealousy to the English of his corresponding with the French; his Son-in-law liv'd at *Quebec*, and had accompany'd the Priest part of his Way, with 3 other Frenchmen, who being afraid to venture far among strange Indians, return'd.

The *Tabitsee* Indians being within the *Hudson's Bay* Company's Patent, 'twas an Encroachment for the French to trade with them; the Jesuit confess'd they did it. Mr. *Baily* cloath'd him, the Indians having rob'd him; and entertain'd him with great Kindness. The Priest resolving to return to *Europe* in an English Ship, did not like another Journey of 400 Miles Length, thro' many barbarous Nations, over Land, and a Country almost impassable.

The

The E
of Incur
dians, w
too dear
priz'd, o
board a
fish and
and thei
'Twas n
these poo
rious Be
Their Pa
declar'd,
time, he
mention'

On th
Comfort,
the best
than the
All the
make abo
good Pea
Bark wi
little Po
killing m

In this
Jesuit, C
downwar
7 great C
Transport
and assur
3 great
tho they
Uncertain

Next
that he
yem, or
Point, a
the News

One n
waited.
come, w
the Even
having no

The English were frequently alarm'd with Reports of Incurfions from the *Nodways* and *Moose River* Indians, whose Quarrel with him, was their selling too dear. The Governour, to prevent being surpriz'd, order'd all their Merchandize to be put aboard a Bark that was left with them, and went to fish and fowl at *Peter's River*; but got little Fowl, and their Fishing-Tackle began to want Supplies. 'Twas now the 11th of *September*, and so long had these poor Men liv'd in this Desert, holding a precarious Being by their Guns and Fishing Tackle. Their Patience was at last spent, and the Governour declar'd, if he did not hear from *England* in 3 Days time, he would return home aboard the before-mention'd Bark.

On the 17th they were all to depart for *Point Comfort*, to stay there till the 22d, and then make the best of their Way for *England*. For later than the 22d of *September*, no Ships had ever arriv'd: All the Flower and Bread they had left, did not make above 300 Pound. They had but 2 Barrels of good Pease, and 30 Geese in Pickle, to victual their Bark with for their Voyage; and having but a very little Powder in the Store-house, they despair'd of killing much more Game.

In this deplorable Condition were they, when the Jesuit, Capt. *Gooselier*, and another Papist, walking downwards to the Sea-side, at their Devotion, heard 7 great Guns fire distinctly. They came home in a Transport of Joy, told their Companions the News, and assur'd them 'twas true. Upon which they fir'd 3 great Guns from the Fort, to return the Salute, tho they could ill spare the Powder upon such an Uncertainty.

Next Day an Indian came, and gave them notice, that he had heard great Guns last Night at *Attisaw-yem*, or *Point Comfort*. Their Sloop was then at the Point, and they expected every Minute to have the News confirm'd.

One may imagine with what Impatience they waited. The Day was well nigh spent, and no Sloop come, which threw them all into Despair. In the Evening the Sloop appear'd in the River, but having no Ensign out, they concluded they were all lost

lost Men; and in this Extremity of Sorrow, they were soon reviv'd by the Sight of 3 Englishmen, whom they had not seen before, and from whom they understood, the *Prince Rupert*, Capt. *Gillam* Commander, was arriv'd; with the new Governour, *William Lyddal*, Esq;

Will. Lyddal Esq; The next Day the old Governour, and Mr. *Gorst*, sail'd for *Point Comfort*, where the *Shaftsbury*, Capt. *Shepherd* Commander, arriv'd also from *England*. And the new Governour's Commission and Instructions being read, all Hands set to work, to refit and load the Ships home as soon as possible.

On the 18th of *September* Mr. *Lyddal* landed, and took Possession of the Fort, the Colours flying, and Guns firing, to salute him. Mr. *Baily* deliver'd him the Patent, and after that he was no more call'd Governour. Mr. *Lyddal* finding the Season would be so far spent, before the Ships could be unloaden and loaden again, that it would be impracticable to return; after several Councils, 'twas resolv'd, they should Winter at *Rupert's River*; and Capt. *Gillam*, and Capt. *Shepherd's* Ships Crews were employ'd to cut Timber, to build Houses for them, as also a Brew-house and Bake-house in the Fort.

The Provisions they brought, fell very short of the Complement of Men that were to be fed by them. They had 30 Men to feed in the Fort, and in the Houses; and but 10 Months Bread for them, at 3 Pound of Flower a Head weekly, which was not enough to last them all the Winter at Land, and victual their Ships too. Mr. *Gorst*, who was their Store-keeper, soon brought them to short Allowance, to husband their Store, but the Men murmur'd; and Mr. *Lyddal* order'd they should have full Allowance, laying, *If we starve, we'll starve altogether*.

By this means they were reduc'd to great Streights, and forc'd to pinch harder than they needed have done, had they been good Husbands of their Bread at first.

Such was the State of this Infant Settlement, and it has not mended much since; for Want and Cold have every Year endanger'd the Lives of all that have been there.

Be-

Befo
munica
Langua
which i
but thi

Arakan
Astam,
Affinne,
Apit, a
Arremi
A Noter
Chickah
Eskon,
Manitow
Coat.
Metu,
Mokema
Mickedy
Pickow,
Mekish,
Moustoda
No mun-
not un
Owma, t

Tho, w
good Me
present t
Mr. Ba
returning
of their A
tation, so
Trade an
to ast un
stories, a
tled.

Port N
made, an
the Char
Company
Maria, w
East Ma

Before we proceed in our History, we shall communicate to the Reader a small Dictionary of the Language of the *Indians* at the Bottom of the Bay, which is like the rest distinguish'd by several Dialects, but this is the *Cuscudidah's*.

Arakana, Bread.
Astam, Come hither.
Affinne, Shot.
Apit, a Fire-Steel.
Arremitogisy, to speak.
A Nosh, presently.
Chickahigon, a Hatchet.
Eskon, a Chissel.
Manitowhigin, a Red-Coat.
Metuw, Stockings.
Mokeman, Knives,
Mickedey, or } Powder.
Pickow,
Mekish, Beads.
Moustodawbish, a Flint.
No mun-nish e to ta, I do not understand you.
Onma, this.

Pishshish, a little thing.
Pastofigon, a Gun.
Pistofigon a hish, a Pistol.
Pihickeman, a Jack-Knife.
Petta a shum. e. give me a Piece.
Pe quish a con Gau Mowon, I eat some Pudding.
Spog. m., a Pipe.
Stenna, i, Tobacco.
Soth. im. m. Red-Lead.
Shekaboon, a Comb.
Taney, Where.
Tinesonec. iso, what do you call this?
Tequan, What do you say?
Tapoy, that true.

Tho, with this, I must leave my Journal; from other good *Memoirs*, I shall continue the History to the present time.

Mr. Baily, who had very well discharg'd his Trust, returning to *England*, inform'd the Company fully of their Affairs; and now as they advanc'd in Reputation, so they were industrious to encrease their Trade and Settlements. They appointed a *Trader* to act under the Governour and Chiefs of the *Factories*, at other Rivers, according as they were settled.

Port Nelson was the next Settlement which they made, and thither they sent *John Bridger*, Esq; with the Character of Governour for the *Hudson's-Bay* Company of the *West Main*, from *Cape Henrietta Maria*, which was included in the Governour of the *East Main's* Patent.

D d

Mr.

Be-

John
Nixon,
Esq; Go-
vernour.

Mr. Lyddal was succeeded by John Nixon, Esq; in whose time the Company thought of removing their chief Factory from *Rupert's River* to *Chickewan River*, as the Place most resorted to by the *Indians*.

Charlton Island was now frequented by the Ships bound to *Hudson's Bay*, and made the Place of Rendezvous for all the Factors to bring their Merchandise to, and load it there aboard the Company's Ship.

John
Bridger,
Esq; Go-
vernour of
Port Nel-
son.

In the Year 1682. Mr. Bridger embark'd for Port Nelson, where a Factory was to be establish'd, and a Fort built; but before he arriv'd, Cap. Benjamin Gillam, Master of a *New-England Ship*, and Son of Cap. Gillam, Commander of the *Prince Rupert*, then in the Company's Service, settled at that Factory; but had not been there above 14 Days, before Mr. Radisson and Cap. Gooselier, who had deserted the *English*, arriv'd from *Canada*.

The Company having dismiss'd them their Service, these two *French-men* in Revenge procur'd some Merchants of *Canada* to undertake a Settlement there. Gillam was not strong enough to repel them, but he remain'd at Port Nelson; where 10 Days after Radisson and Gooselier's Arrival, came Mr. Bridger. The *French* no sooner perceiv'd he was come, but they sent aboard his Ship immediately, and commanded him to be gone, for that Mr. Radisson and Cap. Gooselier had taken Possession of the Place for the *French King* their Master.

Mr. Bridger, being warranted so to do by the Company's Commission, unloaded some of his Goods, and with all Hands went to Work, in order to make a Settlement.

Radisson continu'd at Port Nelson; and Mr. Bridger and he became very intimate: Which Intimacy lasted from October, 1682. to the February following, when Radisson seiz'd Bridger and Gillam, with all their People and Effects.

Having kept them some Months in a sort of Imprisonment, about August the *French* put several of the Company's and Gillam's People aboard a rotten Bark, and they were taken up by an *English Ship* near *Cape Henrietta Maria*. Bridger and Gillam they carry'd with

with
ran f
their
At
Fran
woul
empl
certa
till h
they
facti
ingl
he to
befor
with
was
verno
In
Ruper
Esq; n
find t
Moose
been c
Factor
of his
Rupert
as soo
and b
for th
thence
that th
son Isl
The
son's-B
very
Parts,
was no
The
Hay's
This l
bany b
Factor
their B

with them to *Canada*, where *Raddison* and *Gooselier* ran some of their Cargo ashore, intending to defraud their Employers.

After which they made their Escape, and got into *France*. The Company having Notice of it, writ to *John*, and he to the Company, promising, if they would forgive the Injury he had done them, and employ him again, at such a Sallery, he would undertake to deliver the *French*, whom he had left there till he came again, to them, and seize all the Furs they had traded for, which would make them Satisfaction for the Wrongs he had done them. Accordingly they forgave him, employ'd him again, and he took Port *Nelson* from his Country-men. But before his Arrival Cap. *John Abraham* had been there with Supplies of Stores; and finding Mr. *Bridger* was gone, he stay'd himself, and was continu'd Governour by the Company, in 1684.

John Abraham, Esq; Governour of Port Nelson.
Henry Sergeant, Esq; Governour of Albany River.

In the preceding Year, Mr. *Nixon*, Governour of *Port Nelson*, was recall'd, and *Henry Sergeant*, Esq; made Governour. By whose Instructions we find the chief Factory was remov'd from *Rupert's* to *Moose-Sebec*, or *Chickewan* River, which has ever since been call'd *Albany* River; where a Fort was built, a Factory settled, and the Governour made it the Place of his Residence. 'Tis at the Bottom of the Bay, below *Rupert's* River. He was order'd to come every Spring, as soon as the Trade was over, to *Charlton* Island, and bring what Goods he had with him, to wait for the Arrival of the Company's Ships: From thence he was to visit the other Factories, and see that their Merchandise was sent in due time to *Charlton* Island, to attend the Ships Arrival.

The Governour of *Canada* having given the *Hudson's-Bay* Company to understand, the *French* were very much offended at their Discoveries in these Parts, Mr. *Sergeant* was order'd to be careful that he was not surpriz'd by them.

There is an Island in the Bottom of the Bay, call'd *Hay's* Island, where a Factory had been settled. This Isle and *Rupert's* River were near the *French*, *Albany* being more to the Southward; and of these Factories the Company were most apprehensive that their Enemies would endeavour to dispossess them.

The History of Hudson's Bay.

We perceive by these Instructions, that their Servants in the Bay had been very unfaithful to them, and Interlopers invaded their Privileges. They appointed Mr. *Hugh Verner* to be chief at *Rupert's River*, and Mr. *George Geyer* and Mr. *Thomas Savage* to be chief Managers at the *Isinglass River*, which had been lately discover'd; and there were great Expectations of a mighty Advantage to the Company by that Discovery, but it came to nothing, tho there was a Factory settled there, in order to promote it.

The Company intended to plant a Colony at *Charlton Island*, and order'd Mr. *Sergeant* to build a Fort there, and always keep some Men upon it. Warehouses were also built to receive the Furs that were brought thither from the Factories, and Conveniences were made for the Reception of such as were oblig'd to winter there. The Company always enjoy'd their Governours to endeavour to save the great Charge they were at in sending constant Supplies of Provisions, by planting Corn and other Grain there. But alas! Tho the Climate by its Distance from the Sun, should be as warm as ours; yet for Reasons, which the Naturalists will easily give us, 'tis so cold and frosty, that it kills almost all sorts of Roots in the Ground which are sown there; and those Plantations, so often recommended by the Company, were chimerical and impracticable.

Orders were also given to dismiss Cap. *Gillam* their Service, for his Sons Offences; and Cap. *Sandford* had the same Usage, on Account of his Relation to the *Gillam's*; for there's nothing so terrible to a Monopolizer, as an Interloper. Cap. *William Bond*, who had been under Mr. *Baily*, was sent for home; and other Regulations made in the Management of Affairs: But all could not hinder the Ruin of them all by the Enemy.

The Company, by their Governours and Agents, made such Compacts with the Captains or Kings of the Rivers and Territories where they had Settlements, for the Freedom of Trade there, exclusive of all others, that the *Indians* could not pretend they had encroach'd upon them. These Compacts were render'd as firm as the *Indians* could make them, by such

such Cer
among

Now
tlements
River, I
at each o
ver they
Mr. Serg
merce ex
be afraid
down to
thing w
England
break w
to drive
tom of th
the Fort
Canada p
under th
from Qu
mitted th

'Tis w
Opinion
all lawfu
enlarge t
selves; w
have the
have been
worth ke

The s
came bef
Governor
dians had
Forts at
brought
Places.

Two H
their Gu
Upon w
clar'd, th
might be
John Ga
Names,

such Ceremonies as were most sacred and obligatory among them.

Now were the Company in Possession of five Settlements, viz. *Albany River*, *Hayes Island*, *Rupert River*, *Port Nelson*, and *New Severn*. Their Trade at each of them was considerable. From *Albany River* they had generally 3500 Beavers a Year; and by Mr. *Sergeant's* great Care and Fidelity, their Commerce encreas'd so much, that the *French* began to be afraid all the *Upland Indians* might be drawn down to the Bay. They knew they could do any thing with King *James II.* who then reign'd in *England*, and that no Affront would make that Prince break with *Lewis* the XIVth. Wherefore they resolv'd to drive the *English* out of all their Places in the Bottom of the Bay. First, they took *Hayes Island*, and then the Fort on *Rupert's River*. The *French* Company at *Canada* procur'd a Detachment of Soldiers to be sent under the Chevalier *de Troyes*; who came over Land from *Quebec*, and in a time of profound Peace committed these Acts of Hostility.

'Tis worth observing that the *French* have so good an Opinion of their *American Colonies*, as to take not only all lawful, but even unlawful Means to preserve and enlarge them, as contemptible as they are in themselves; whereas the *English*, who, next the *Spaniards*, have the richest Plantations in that Part of the World, have been as negligent of them as if they were not worth keeping.

The 8th of *July*, 1686. the Chevalier *de Troyes* came before the Fort at *Albany River*; where the Governour, Mr. *Sergeant*, then resided. Two *Indians* had inform'd him of their having surpriz'd the Forts at *Hayes Island*, and *Rupert River*, and had brought with them the great Guns from those Places.

Two Hours after, the *English* heard them discharge their Guns, and saw some of them at a Distance. Upon which part of the Company's Servants declar'd, they would not venture their Lives unless they might be assur'd of Pay, and sent *John Parsons* and *John Garret*, two of their Number, in all their Names, to the Governour, to tell him their Re-

so-

The History of Hudson's Bay.

solutions. Mr. *Sergeant*, by Promises, and giving them Cloaths, and other Necessaries, prevail'd with them to return to their Charge. But in a Day or two they mutiny'd again, and *Elias Turner* the Gunner, possess'd the People with an Apprehension, that it was impossible to hold out the Place; declaring, that for his Part he would throw himself on the *French*. Accordingly he went to the Governour, and desir'd Leave so to do; but being threatned to be shot to Death, in case he attempted it, he was at last perswaded to return to his Post.

The *English* shot at the *French* as long as they appear'd in the *Brushes*, and forc'd them to retire under the Banks, where the Guns from the Fort could not hit them. The *French* shot only at the *English* with small Shot, as any of them appear'd upon the *Flankers*. When they had retir'd under the Banks, they set to work to entrench themselves, and cast up a great Bank of Earth, which cover'd them so, that the *English* could do no Execution upon them.

The Governour all this while imagin'd, the Enemy was only raising a Bank to secure themselves from the Shot of the Fort: But afterwards he perceiv'd they were preparing a Battery; and then he commanded the Guns of the Fort to fire upon them incessantly, which however did them no hurt.

Frederic Johnson, who officiated as Gunner, on *Turner's* refusing to act, advis'd Mr. *Sergeant* not to shoot away the Remainder of the great Shot in the Fort, there being not above a Round more; and he suppos'd the *French* must have brought their Guns by Water; if so, he hop'd to sink their Boats; which would have done more Service, than firing upon their Entrenchments. But the *French* had found a Way to bring their great Guns thro' the Woods, and had planted them on their Battery before the *English* saw them.

The Governour sent out *Francis Cave* and *John Michem*, to see if they could observe the Posture of their Enemies; and the Spies brought Word, that they had finish'd their Battery, and mounted their Guns, which they saw them load. This

This
themse
confide
and in
Term
ingly
William
and oth
would
vain to
added,
Arm, o
ther the
Wives,
burn; v
late.

In th
kers; an
manded
He refus
would r

The
Flankers
on whic
said, Th
not hope
should be
Mr. Br
them, a
Outlaw
was hur
and is a

This so disheartned the People, that assembling themselves together, they agreed to depute the most considerable among them to go to the Governour, and in all their Names press him to make the best Terms he could, and surrender the Fort. Accordingly *Edward Coles, Philip Scovell, Hugh Mitchel, William Arrington, William Holder, John Stephens,* and others, came to Mr. Sergeant, and declar'd, they would stand by him no longer; alledging, 'twas in vain to think they should be able to hold out. They added, If any of them should loose a Leg or an Arm, or be kill'd, they had Reason to doubt, whether the Company would take Care of them, their Wives, or Children, instancing the Case of one *Coleburn*; wherefore they demanded of him to capitulate.

In the mean time the *French* fir'd upon the *Flankers*; and the *English*, whatever the Governour commanded them to the contrary, abandon'd their Posts. He refus'd to beat a Parley, and threatned those that would not do their Duty.

The Enemy's Shot had made a Breach in the *Flankers*; and damag'd the Houses in the Fort. Upon which, and the repeated Desires of the Men, who said, *The Year would be so far spent, that they could not hope to get home, but must be starv'd if the Factory should be taken*, the Governour consented to a Parley; Mr. Bridger assuring him the Enemy were *Mining* them, and they should certainly be blown up: Cap. *Outlaw* also agreed to capitulate, and the white Flag was hung out. After which a Treaty was concluded, and is as follows.



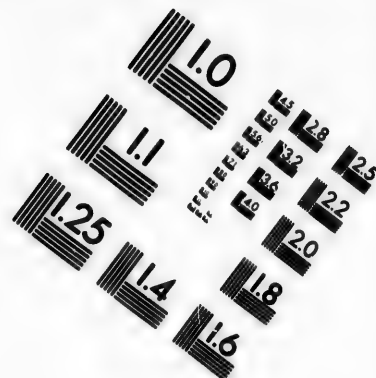
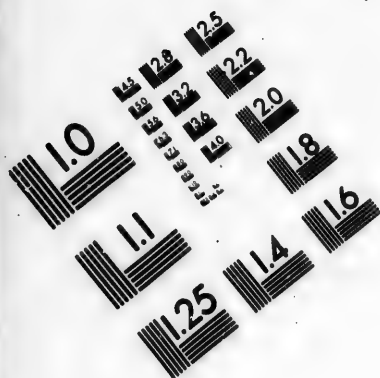
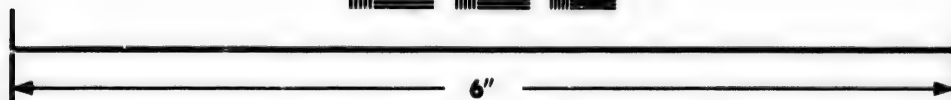
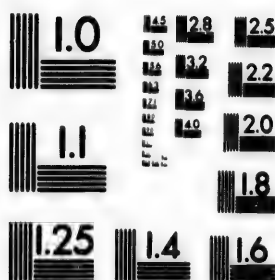


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

28
25
22
20
18

10
01

ARTICLES agreed upon between the Chevalier de Troyes, Commander in Chief of the Detachment of the North-West, for the French Company at Canada; and Henry Sergeant, Esq; Governour for the English Company of Hudson's Bay, July 16. 1686.

Imprimis. *IT is agreed upon to deliver up the Fort, together with all the Goods belonging to the said Company, which are to be schedul'd for the mutual clearing of us the fore-said, and Satisfaction of all Parties.*

II. *That all the Company's Servants at Albany River shall enjoy all Wearing Apparel belonging to themselves.*

III. *That the afore-said Henry Sergeant, Esq; Governour, shall enjoy and possess all that belongs to himself; and that his Minister, his three Men Servants and Maid Servant, shall constantly be permitted to remain with him, and attend him.*

IV. *That the Chevalier de Troyes shall convey all the Company's Servants to Charlton Island, there to expect English Ships for their Transportation; and if English Ships should not arrive, then the afore-said Chevalier de Troyes is to assist them with what Vessels the Country affords, for their Conveyance into England.*

V. *That the said Chevalier de Troyes shall deliver to the said Henry Sergeant, Esq; Governour, or to his Store-house-Keeper, such Provisions as shall be*

be the
land,
time
them.

VI
Keys
seam
bezz
Artic

La
Serva
delive
the G
Arms

Acc
made
they
Serge
mily
with
tion.

The
plain
sworn
ery,
the F
barba
his M
vice,
duct.

At
nour
by th
Alba
Jame
and a
cepte
Willia
King
ding
ries

The History of Hudson's Bay.

be thought fitting and necessary to carry them for England, if no Ships come from thence, and in the mean time give them such Sustainance as shall be sufficient for them.

VI. That all the Store-houses shall be lock'd up, and the Keys deliver'd to the said Chevalier de Troyes; Lieutenant; that nothing may be in the said Store-houses embezzled, till the Account be taken, according to the First Article.

Lastly, That the Governour and all the Company's Servants at Albany River, shall come out of the Fort, and deliver it up to the said Chevalier de Troyes; all Men, the Governour and his Son excepted, being without Arms, which is to be forthwith.

Accordingly the Fort was surrender'd, but the French made no Scruple to break so much of the Articles as they could get any thing by; for they plunder'd Mr. Sergeant of all his Goods, and sent him and his Family away in a very ordinary Bark, ill supply'd with Provisions: Such is the Honour of that Nation.

The Company, notwithstanding it appears very plain by the above-mention'd Account, which was sworn to before Samuel Keck, Esq; a Master in Chancery, that the Governour did all he could to defend the Fort, us'd him at his Return to England as barbarously almost as the French had done; but his Majesty was pleas'd to take him into his Service, which was the best Justification of his Conduct.

At this time, Thomas Phips, Esq; was Governour of Port Nelson, which was not then taken by the French; and the Company expected Fort Albany would have been restor'd to them in King James's time, but all their Sollicitations were in vain, and all the Settlements they had, Port Nelson excepted, were abandon'd to the French. King William, in his Declaration of War against the French King, takes this particular Notice of de Troyes's invading Hudson's Bay, and destroying the English Factories there, as the French had done in other Places.

Thomas Phips, Esq; Governour of Port Nelson.

But that the French King should invade our Chippewee Islands, and possess himself of our Territories of the Province of New-York, and Hudson's Bay, in a hostile manner, seizing our Forts, burning our Subjects Ships, and enriching his People with the Spoil of their Goods and Merchandizes, detaining some of our Subjects under the Hardship of Imprisonment, sending others to be inhumanly kill'd, and driving the rest to Sea in a small Vessel, are Actions not becoming even an Enemy; and yet he was so far from declaring himself so, that at that very time he was negotiating here in England by his Ministers a Treaty of Neutrality and good Correspondence in America. Such was King William's Judgment of his Fraud and Violence, which his Predecessor, with an unparallel'd Complacency, excus'd.

The War breaking out, as has been said, between the two Nations, the Hudson's Bay Company solicited for Soldiers to be sent thither to recover their Settlements; and in the Year 1693. they retook all the Forts and Factories, which the French had taken from them in time of Peace.

John
Knight,
Esq; Go-
vernour of
Fort Al-
bany.

In which Expedition they met with no more Difficulties than the Chevalier de Troyes had met with. Cap. Ormington was the Person employ'd for this Service; and John Knight, Esq; was appointed Governour of Fort Albany: But his Government was of no long Continuance; for in a little time the French sent such a Power against the English, that they again drove them from all their Settlements in the Bottom of the Bay.

The French Company made Monsieur de La Fores Governour of Fort Albany, and garrison'd all the Forts they had taken; which made it necessary for the Government to send a stronger Power than the Company could raise to recover them.

The King of England, to protect their Trade, assign'd them two Men of War for their Service, in the Year 1696. as the *Bonaventure*, Cap. Allen Commander, and the *Seaford*.

Cap. Allen, coming into the River Hayes, sent to summon all the Forts to surrender; and the French Governour finding he could not defend them

and
then
had o
certa
all th
one
bade
by v
thing
our
Mato
carry
France
and
thing
there
them
mitte
the sa
Cond
but no
Cap
his M
board
Man,
In
then
in the
Oppos
As t
of All
vernme
Govern
Mr. S
and w
In
Owner
were
Indeed
Comm
is run
gainst
Sea,
tain,
rishi'd.

them against the English, capitulated, and on the 2d of August, 1696. surrendr'd Albany Fort, upon certain Articles; the Chief of which were, That all those in the Fort, as well French as Indians, and one Englishman, the Governour's Servant, should save their Lives and Liberties, and that no Harm or Violence should be done to their Persons, or any thing that belong'd to them; That they should march out with their Arms, Drums beating, Colours flying, Match lighted at both ends, Ball in Mouth, and carry with them the two Guns they brought from France; That they should all embark with their Cloaths and Goods, without being visited or pillag'd in any thing; and if they met with any French Vessels, there should be a Truce between the English and them; and the said French Vessels should be permitted to take aboard the Persons that came out of the said Fort, with all that belong'd to them. These Conditions were a little too honourable to grant, but not to be comply'd with.

Cap. Allen took the Governour, and some of his Men, aboard his own Ship; some he put aboard the *Seaford*, and the rest aboard a Merchant-Man, call'd the *Dering*.

In his Return, he fought the *Mary Rose* Frigate, then a French Privateer of 50 Guns, and was kill'd in the Engagement, which gave the Frenchman an Opportunity to bear away.

As to the other two Forts, they follow'd the Fate of Albany, and Mr. Knight was restor'd to his Government. At which time, John Geyer, Esq; was Governour of Port Nelson. Mr. Knight had serv'd Mr. Sergeant while he was Governour of Fort Albany, and was well acquainted with the Trade.

John Geyer, Esq; Governour of Port Nelson.

In the Year 1697. the *Hampshire* Frigate, and Owners *Love* Fire-ship, two of the King's Ships, were lost in this Bay, and all the Men drown'd. Indeed the Ice renders it so dangerous, that the Commerce seems not to be worth the Risk that is run for it. Whether those two Ships ran against those frozen Mountains that float in that Sea, or founder'd, is not known; but 'tis certain, they were lost, and that all the Men perish'd.

The

The History of Hudson's Bay

The Trade to this Bay has decreased, ever since the use of Beavers has fallen off in England. Peltry is not now the Commodity it was, and this Company of Consequence does not make the Figure they did 13 or 14 Years ago.

In the present War, they lost Port Nelson to the French; and have either given up, or deserted all their Settlements, except Fort Albany; where Mr. Knight manag'd their Affairs, till the Year 1706. when he was succeeded by

John Fullerton, Esq; the present Governour at Albany River.

The End of the First Volume.

